

67  
6

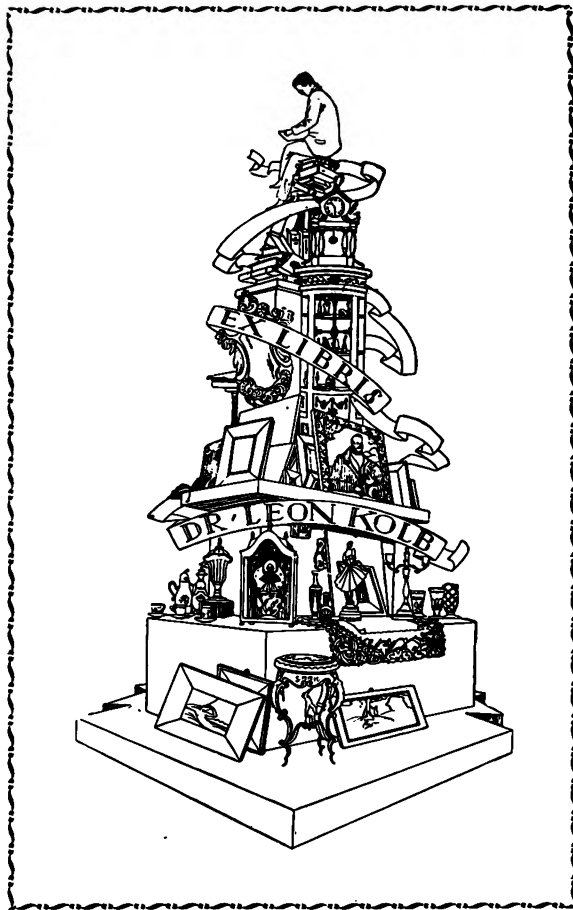


~ Panzhanger. ~

הספריה הלאומית  
S 2= 76 C 5831  
La Mottraye, Aubry de,  
The voyages and travels of A. De La



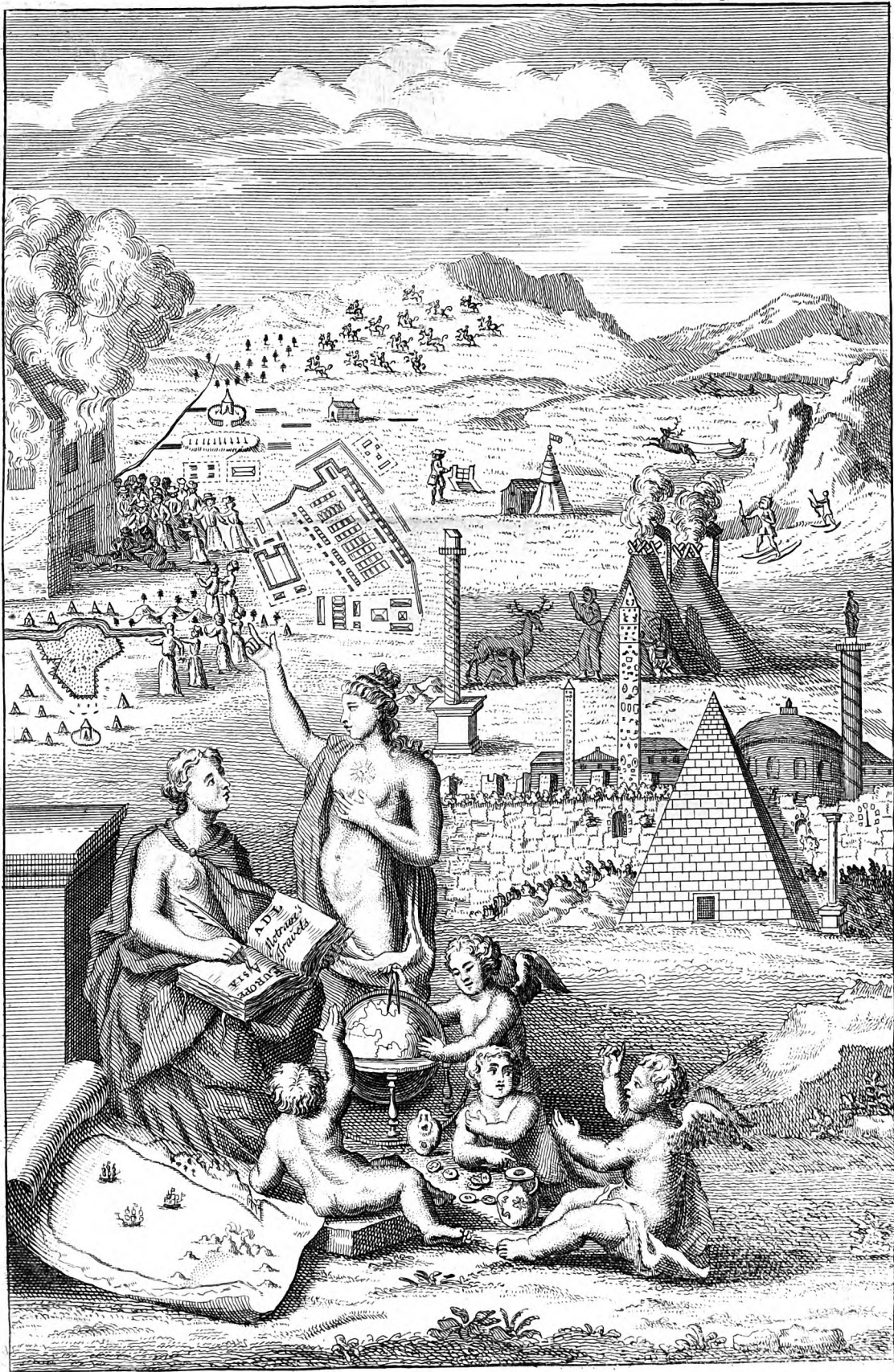
2935077-10











THE  
VOYAGES and TRAVELS

O F

*A. De La M O T R A T E,*

---

V O L. III.

---

I N

Several Provinces and Places of the Kingdoms and  
Dukedoms of

PRUSSIA, RUSSIA, POLAND, &c.

C O N T A I N I N G,

A Treatise of the divers Orders of Knighthood ; many  
curious Particulars concerning the Infurrection of THORN ; of the  
Diet of GRODNO ; of the Life of PETER *the First*, Emperour of  
RUSSIA ; and of CATHERINE, his Empress ; as also of General  
LE FORT, and Prince MENZIKOFF.

W I T H

REMARKS GEOGRAPHICAL, TOPOGRAPHICAL,  
HISTORICAL and POLITICAL, on the Provinces and other  
Countries through which the AUTHOR travelled ;

A S,

MECKLEMBOURG, POMERANIA, COURLAND, LIVONIA,  
ESTONIA, the Principalities of PLESKOW and NOVOGROD,  
the Lake LADOGA, the Dutchies of CARELIE, INGRRIA,  
SILESIA, BRANDENBOURG, &c. over some Parts of  
FRANCE, of FLANDERS, of ENGLAND, and of IRELAND.

D R A W N

Not only from his own Observations, but also from  
the Memoirs that have been communicated to him by Persons of  
Honour and Credit ; and the Whole embellished with PLANS and  
CUTS, curiously engraved on COPPER-PLATES,

---

*Translated from the FRENCH.*

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for E. SYMON, in Cornhill ; J. NEWTON, and J. OSWALD,  
in Little-Britain ; L. GILLIVER, over-against S. Dunstan's  
Church in Fleet-street ; J. NOURSE, without Temple-Bar ; and  
T. PAYNE, in Pater-Noster-Row, 1732.



REPORT OF THE SECRETARY

OF THE

NAVY

1

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).

OF THE

NAVY

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).

S2°76C 5831

914

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).

The report of the Secretary of the Navy is hereby published in accordance with the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438), and the Act of March 3, 1879, (20 Stat. 438).



THE  
AUTHORS DEDICATION.

To His EXCELLENCY

PHILIP,

Earl of CHESTERFIELD, Knight of the most  
noble Order of the GARTER, Lord CHAM-  
BERLAIN of the KING's Household, Em-  
bassadour Extraordinary, and Plenipotentiary  
to their HIGH MIGHTINESSES, &c.

My LORD,



HE Liberty I take of dedicating to your  
Excellency, a Work so little worthy  
your Attention, would be equally pre-  
sumptuous and bold, if your Goodness  
had not given me Leave. I remember,  
with the utmost Acknowledgment, that  
his MAJESTY, at whose Feet I presumed to lay my first  
Work, thought so well of it, that he honoured the  
same so far with his Royal Protection, as to defend it  
against some Persons, who openly attacked it in his  
Presence. I beseech, my Lord, the same Favour of your  
Excellency in the Behalf of this. It cannot appear under  
a Protection more happy and natural than your Lord-  
ship's, because it was first printed in a Country, which

## The DEDICATION.

you have served no less advantageously than your own; the freshest roof of which, is the last Treaty concluded with the Court of *Vienna*; a Treaty! which more advanced the Settlement of the Affairs of *Europe* in a few Months, than the Congresses and BRITANNICK FLEETS have done in these several Years past; which maintains the Ballance, and re-establishes the Tranquillity of *Europe* in the good Harmony, between the Powers, whose Interest and Security it is to be always united; a Treaty! which rectifies all the foregoing, and procures the Accomplishment of that of *Seville* and all others, without any Acts of Hostility.

Dedications are Encomiums often dictated by Interest and Flattery; mine would be entirely free from both, if it were permitted me, or indeed, were I capable of praising your Excellency in a Manner answerable to the high Talents, which you have so advantageously cultivated by Study; and also the great Qualities, which Nature seems to take a Pleasure to unite in your Person, to render you one of the most illustrious Ornaments of the wise Nobility of the *British* Nation, the Love and Profit of your Country, in doing which I should but pay what is really owing. But I know, my Lord, that your Modesty is so great, it cannot in the least bear the most deserved Praises, any more than you can the justest Thanks for the Favours which you bestow, and that there are some Truths which offend you. Since then your Excellency will not hearken to the Justice due to such a Conjunction of Talents and Qualities, which shine in all your Conversation and Behaviour, and which you alone seem to be ignorant of, but which you cannot hinder the publick Proclamation of, I content myself to be a mute Spectator, and humble Admirer of your Virtues; and join my Wishes with those of your Country, which judge, that the Honours and Employments you are loaded withal, are far beneath your Merits.

T H E



# P R E F A C E.



*AS I closed the Second Volume of my first Travels with a short Account of the Renewal of the Order of the Bath in England, by King George the First, I shall begin this with more numerous Remarks of the original Institution of that Order, and of some others, as well antient as modern, of which I shall have Occasion to speak. I thought proper to comprise them all in one Chapter, (which is divided into as many Sections, as there are Orders mentioned) to give a general View thereof; that the Reader may carry, as it were, in his Eye the Resemblance of the Orders of one Country with those of another.*

*My principal Care and Endeavour throughout this Work shall be, to relate things just as I found them myself, or have been informed of them by Persons, whose Honour and Credit may be depended on, without suffering myself to be byassed by the Prejudices of Country, Education, or Religion. This Rule I followed in my preceding Work, which met with the Approbation both of my Friends and the Publick; and therefore, for my own Reputation, I shall endeavour to keep up to it as much as possible in this also.*

*If, notwithstanding my Care, my Memory and my Observations deceived me, or if I have been misinformed, I shall think myself infinitely obliged to those, who will take the Trouble on them to discover my Errors to me; and I will not fail, if there be any Room, either to make my Defence, or retract any Fault I may have committed, in the next Book I shall publish; or sooner by a Supplement expressing the Errata. I say, whoever will be so kind as to shew me my Faults; for, as to those unfair Criticks (who, to give themselves an Air of being thought brighter than others, bespatter every Work of Merit with no other Design, but the malicious Pleasure of condemning it, and building their own Reputations*



## THE P R E F A C E.

*on the Ruins of others Fame; and who boldly presume to deny all Facts which do not please them, though they are entirely ignorant of the Truth or Falsehood, and therefore incapable of either reforming the Author, or instructing the Publick, or producing any Reasons but personal Satires, and downright Contradictions, given in ill Language, they must expect no other Answer from me than the Contempt they deserve.*

*I have divided this Work into SIX Chapters. The FIRST treats of some Orders of Knighthood. The SECOND contains some Account of my Travels through Mecklenbourg, Pomerania, Prussia, and through Courland to Riga; with Observations on Dantzick, Thorn, Elbing, Koningsberg, &c. The THIRD contains Remarks on Livonia, Estonia, the Principalities of Pleskow and Novogrod, the Lake and the Canal of Ladoga, Petersbourg, Cronstadt, &c. with the principal Transactions of the Reigns of Peter the First, Emperour of Russia, and the Czarina, Catharine, his Empress and Successour; the honourable Promotion of General le Fort, and the Rise and Fall of Prince Alexander Menzikoff. The FOURTH, my Return from Petersbourg through Ingria, Estonia, some Parts of Livonia, through Semigallia and Poland; with some Remarks on the Diet of Grodno; and lastly, through Silesia, Brandenburg, &c. The FIFTH, a triple Tour into France, with the Ceremonies of the Marriage of Lewis the Fifteenth. The SIXTH, a Tour into Cornwall from London through Surrey, Hampshire, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Devonshire, &c. and a Voyage to Cork in Ireland, and a Journey from thence to Dublin.*



T H E

# T H E C O N T E N T S.

## C H A P. I.

OF the several Degrees or Orders of *Knighthood*, Antient and Modern, which were formerly in Repute, or are still held in Esteem.

SECT. I. Of *Knighthood* in general, and of the Order of the *Bath* in particular. Pag. 1.

II.	Of the Order of the <i>Round Table</i> .	2.
III.	_____ <i>Knights Batchelors</i> : Or of the <i>Golden Spur</i> .	10.
IV.	_____ <i>Knights Bannerets</i> .	13.
V.	_____ <i>Holy Sepulchre</i> .	ib.
VI.	_____ <i>Garter</i> .	24.
VII.	_____ of <i>S. Andrew</i> .	40.
VIII.	_____ of the <i>Knights Baronnets</i> .	41.
IX.	_____ <i>Templars</i> .	42.
X.	_____ of the <i>Teutonic</i> .	44.
	_____ of <i>Livonia</i> , or <i>Porte-Glaives</i> .	46.
XI.	_____ of the <i>Black Eagle</i> .	47.
XII.	_____ of <i>S. Andrew</i> in <i>Russia</i> .	ib.
XIII.	_____ <i>S. Katherine</i> .	48.
XIV.	_____ <i>S. Alexander Newsky</i> .	ib.
XV.	_____ of the <i>White Eagle</i> .	50.
XVI.	_____ <i>Star</i> .	51.
XVII.	_____ of <i>S. Michael</i> .	ib.
XVIII.	_____ <i>S. Lazarus</i> .	52.
XIX.	_____ of the <i>Holy Ghost</i> .	53.
XX.	_____ of <i>S. Lewis</i> .	ib.

## C H A P. II.

A Voyage from the *Hague* to the Lake *Ladoga*, with a Topographical, Geographical, and Historical Account of the most considerable Places through which the Author passed, chiefly in *Pomerania*, *Prussia*, *Courland*, *Livonia*, *Estonia*, *Ingria*, &c.

## C H A P.

# The CONTENTS.

## CHAP. III.

A Journey from *Riga* to the Lake *Ladoga*, and from thence to *Petersbourg*; with Geographical, Historical and Political Observations on the Country, Towns, and principal Transactions, as well in the Life of the Emperour, *Peter the First*, as of the Empress, *Catherine*; and on the Rise and Fall of *Alexander Menzikoff*, &c.

## CHAP. IV.

A Journey to *Poland*; Remarks on *Narva*, *Revel*, *Pernau*, *Grodno*, *Warsaw*, and other principal Places on that Road.

## CHAP. V.

Remarks on an Engine for raising Water by Fire; on the *London-Stone*; on the Roads from *London* to *France*; on that Kingdom; on the Ceremonies of *Lewis the Fifteenth's* Marriage; and on the Author's Return to *England*.

## CHAP. VI.

Containing some superficial Remarks on the Death of *George the First*, King of *Great Britain*; on *England*; on the New-Buildings at *London*; on *Cornwall*, and Part of *Kent*; on *Ireland*, particularly *Cork* and *Dublin*, and the Parts adjacent.



The Cuts are to be placed thus:

Plate I. Before the 1st Chap.

II. Before the 3d.

III. At the End of it.

IV. Before the 5th.

V. At the End of it.

VI. Before the sixth.

VII.

VIII. } At the End of it.

IX. }

THE







T H E  
T R A V E L S  
O F

*A. de la* M O T R A T E.

C H A P. I.  
*Of the several Degrees or Orders of Knighthood, Antient and Modern; which were formerly in Repute, or are still held in Esteem.*

S E C T. I.  
*Of Knighthood in general, and of the Order of the B A T H in particular.*



I HAVE mentioned, in my Preface, that, having concluded my first Work with the Order of the *Bath*, (which, being almost neglected, was re-established in *England* by King *George the First*, in the Year 1725) I should begin this with an Account of several other Orders that formerly made a very noble Figure, and still appear with great Lustre in the Countries I intend to treat of: Accordingly I am now entering upon my Task, and shall endeavour to perform it with the utmost Impartiality.

There is scarcely any Subject so fully or so variously treated of, and yet so uncertainly handled, as that of Knighthood; whether as to its Original and first Institutors themselves, or as to the Time and Occasions of its Institution. Some Authors, who seem to admire those Things only which are either the most extraordinary, antient, or remote, are very fond of making that Dignity almost as old as the World itself, which they pretend to prove by *Holy Writ*; for, among  
B other

## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.

other Instances, they tell us that *Pharaoh*, through a grateful Remembrance of the Advantages accruing to his People from *Joseph's* Interpretation of his Dreams, made him a Knight, by putting a Chain of Gold about his Neck, and investing him with other Marks of the Order which he had established in his Kingdom. That King *Belshazzar* conferred the same Honour on *Daniel*, who explained the Hand-Writing upon the Wall, MENE, TEKEL, PERES. In answer to this Assertion I beg leave to say, that the Collar or Chain of Gold, and other Signals of Honour, which Princes in those early Times were wont to bestow on such Persons, who had distinguished themselves by their Wisdom, Courage, and Bravery, are, in my Opinion, no better Proofs of there being then any Order of Knighthood established in their Dominions, than the golden Chains, for Example, which their *High Mightinesses* present to certain foreign Ministers, or to other Persons at their taking Leave, are Tokens of any particular Order instituted in the *United Provinces of Holland*.

But what is there not to be found in the Holy Scripture? Into how many various Senses has it not be wrested, repugnant even to itself? And how many different Opinions and Institutions, though ever so contradictory, is it not made the very Foundation of, and quoted as a sufficient Authority for?

The Institution of Knighthood owes its Original to the Heathen *Romans*; the Division thereof into several Degrees, under various Names, (some of which are very fantastical, as the Order of the *Madmen* in the Dutchy of *Cleves*, the *Extravagants* in *Perousa*, the *Heteroclitcs* in *Pisaro* in *Italy*, the *Dog*, and the *Cock*, &c. with the many religious Ceremonies annexed) is the Invention of the *Christians*, and can hardly claim an older Date than the first *Holy War*.

Nevertheless, the Abbot *Giustiani* seems to date this Institution from the Conversion of *Constantine*, surnamed *the Great*; who, according to him, first instituted the imperial Order of the *Angelical Golden Knights*, and that by an express Command from God, who, as a peculiar Mark, sent him a golden Cross, by an Angel, with this Device, IN HOC SIGNO VINCES, from whence he derives the Name of this Order.

It is needless to deduce the Ceremonies that are observed; I shall only say, after some impartial Authors, who are not led away with the Multiplicity of Opinions, that this Apparition of the Cross, whose Device promised *Constantine* a Victory, has no better Foundation than the foregoing Notions. These Authors believe rather, that this was a politick Stratagem to bring over the *Christians* to his Party, who were already very numerous in the Roman Empire, which *Maxentius*, his mortal Enemy, strongly opposed, than any real Motive of the Conversion of that Emperor. By his Conduct indeed one would  
be

be very apt to judge the same; *Scaliger* remarks, that *Constantine* was as much a *Christian* as he was a *Tartar*; and *Chevreau*, that it was hard to determine whether he was a *Christian* or a *Pagan*; witness the Murder of his Wife and Son, the many Cruelties, Acts of Injustice and Robberies which the *Heathens* themselves reproach him with, and which the *Christians* cannot clear him of. Those who give credit to the Reality of the Vision, affirm it to be as probable as that by which *S. Paul* was converted.

However, I think, the Era of the Institution of Knighthood may be fixed to the Year 1190, when the Emperor *Isaac Angel Comene* ordained Statutes relating thereto, which are the only Statutes concerning the Order that were ever made; and therefore, in all appearance, that Prince was its first Institutor.

I shall add to what I have said of the Order of the *Bath*, that the Time of its Institution is very uncertain. Several Authors fix it in the Year 1399, as I have already mentioned in the Conclusion of my 2d Vol. which was the first Year of the Reign of King *Henry the Fourth* of *England*, to whom the Institution thereof is generally attributed; but *John*, a Monk of *Marmoutier*, *Dydus*, *Selden*, and others relate, that it was instituted a long Time before.

Some are of Opinion, that it was at first called the Order of the *Three Crowns*, which the Knights wore on the left Shoulder, embroidered with Gold, upon an Escutcheon of blue Sky-Colour Silk, with this Motto *TRIA JUNCTA IN UNO*: But however, they all allow that it owes to King *Henry* its chief Splendour, Pomp, and Addition of most of the Ceremonies, which have been since observed at the Installment of Knights; and are still the same, except the Customs of *Bathing*, passing the Night in Prayers in the Church, and other Popish Ceremonies, which the *Reformation* abolished; and in their stead others more splendid, with more sumptuous Robes, have been substituted. In particular I shall here enumerate those which are ascribed to King *Henry*, though very much blended with the Ceremonies observed at the primitive Institution of this Order.

Before the Candidates received the Honour of this Order, which was commonly conferred on a Coronation-Day, or on Occasion of other great Solemnities, and is said to be practised at the Coronation of this Prince, they were clothed in Grey like Hermits, and the old Knights of the same Order accompanied them towards Evening to the Bath, where they were waited on by Esquires; some of whom, acquainting the King, that the Candidates for the Honour of Knighthood were Bathing, his Majesty sent some of the oldest Knights, with some of the Gentlemen of his Bed-Chamber, to their respective Apartments, to instruct them in what Manner they ought to receive that Dignity; who were accompanied in their Way thither with the Sound of Trumpets, and  
Variety



## *The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

Variety of martial Instruments of Musick, which continued to play 'till they were come into the Presence of the Candidates.

After the usual Instructions, the old Knights threw Water on their Shoulders; then the Esquires helped them out of the Bath, and put them into Beds of the finest Linnen, which were prepared for them; an Hour after they dressed them in their Hermits Habits, to which they added a red Vest, to keep them warm during the Night they were to pass in Prayers in the Church; and, thus equipped, they were thither conducted by the Knights, Esquires and Gentlemen, attended with the same Musick.

At Break of Day they confessed, heard Mass, and received the Sacrament, each holding a lighted Taper, which they left as an Offering at the Altar. Mass being over, they were reconducted, in the same harmonious Manner, to their Chambers, there undressed, and put to Bed. Some Hours after their Company, having asked the King's Leave to awake them, went for that Purpose with a Consort of vocal and instrumental Musick; this being done, the Esquires cloathed them in Scarlet-Habits, edged with deep Purple, each of them having two Esquires to put on his Stockings, and Shoes, and Ruffles; then they girded them with a white Girdle; some combed them, and put on their Caps surmounted with a Plume of white Feathers; others covered their Shoulders with a Mantle of Purple-Colour Silk. After that they tendered them the Oath, which was, *To maintain the Cause and Interest of the Catholick Church; to obey and serve the King; defend the Dignity of the Order, and the Honour of the Ladies; protect Widows, Orphans, and all distressed Persons.* Afterwards the Esquires helped them to mount their Horses, which were richly caparisoned according to the Fashion of that Time; and thus they marched to Church, to hear High-Mass, preceeded by the Musick, and followed by the Esquires, who carried the Ensigns or Badges of the Order, as the Belt, Sword, Chain of Gold, and golden Spurs, &c. As soon as Mass was ended, they went to the Royal Palace, where two of the antient Knights put on their Spurs; the King girded them with military Girdles, and put on their Swords; then he embraced them, and put the Ribbon of the Order about their Necks, pronouncing these Words, \* *Be a good Knight.* After that, the new-created Knights served the King at Table. If it were on a Coronation-Day, his Champion entered the Hall, where his Majesty dined, armed *Capapee*, with a Gauntlet in his right Hand, well mounted; at each Side an Esquire, the one bearing his Lance on the right, and the other his Target on the left, accompanied by the Great-Marshal and High-Constable on Horse-back, in their proper Apparel; and, coming to the lower  
end

\* This Ceremony would have been performed in the Church, had the King been present at divine Service.

## CHAP. I. *Of the Orders of Knighthood.*

end of the Table, the Herald pronounced a Challenge or Defiance in the following Terms :

*If any Person, of what Rank or Degree soever, high or low, dares to deny or gainsay, that our Sovereign Lord H. King of England \*, France and Ireland, is not the right Successour, and lawful Heir of the imperial Crown of these Realms, and that he ought not to enjoy it, here is his Champion, who saith, that he lieth, and is a false Traitor, being ready in Person to combat with him, and in this Quarrel will adventure his Life.*

Upon this the Champion threw his Gauntlet upon the Ground ; and, no Person daring to take it up, the Herald as usual did so, and returned it to him. They afterwards advanced to the middle of the Hall, where the Herald again pronounced the same Challenge ; and lastly they repaired to the further end, and he there repeated it a third Time ; at each Time the Champion casting his Gauntlet on the Ground, and receiving it from the Herald as before. After that the Champion made a low Obeisance to the King, bowing his Head and bending his Body, as much as his military Garb would permit : Then the great Cup-Bearer brought the King either a Gold-Cup, or one of Silver gilt, full of Wine, of which his Majesty drank to the Health of his brave Champion, to whom he sent the Cup, which he received as his Fee ; and lastly, having drank thereof, he made another low Obeisance to the King, and so retired in the same Order as he came in.

After Dinner these new-created Knights returned to Church, attended by the same Retinue as in the Morning, to hear Vespers ; the Service being over, they kneeled at the Foot of the Altar, laying their Swords thereon, which they † offered as a Sacrifice to God and his Saints ; praying the Almighty to give them Grace to employ those Arms for the Defence of the Church, of the King, and of the Order : Then they redeemed their Swords for a Sum of Money of the Priest officiating, who then blessed them. That done, as they were going out of the Church, in order to return to the royal Palace, the King's Master-Cook, standing in the Porch with a Chopping-Knife in his Hand, spoke to each of them in this Manner : *Sir, be mindful of the great Oath which you have made ; if you violate it, by any Action unworthy of a Knight ( which God forbid ) I shall hack your Spurs from off your Heels with this Knife*||. Being arrived at the Palace, and presented to the King, they returned their most humble Thanks for the Honour his Majesty had conferred on them ; and after having taken their Leave of him, and paid their Compliments to those who had accompanied and served them, they retired to their respective Abodes.

C

The

\* This Ceremony is still practised at the Coronation of the Kings and Queens of England ; only, since the Union of Scotland, Great Britain is expressed instead of England, which comprehends both.

† The Ceremonies of Offering and Redeeming the Sword, —

|| — And that of the Master-Cook's Advice and Threatning, are held to this Day.

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

The greatest Part of these Ceremonies are attributed to King *Henry the Fourth*. His Reign furnishes History with little else remarkable, except the Battle of *Shrewsbury*, wherein he defeated the young *Piercy*; unless some, fired with a cruel Zeal, will reckon as an Honour the Fame he had of being the first Christian Monarch in *England*, (as Queen *Mary* was the last) who persecuted and burnt their Subjects for Difference of Opinions in Matters of Religion. In short, never did any Prince acquire a Crown by Methods so little approved of, or maintained it by so much Effusion of Blood; besides the Injustice he did his Cousin *Richard the Second*, whom he forced the Crown from; not to mention the Right of the Earl of *March*, and the cruel Manner in which he caused the King to be put to death in the Prison of *Pontefract*, where by his Order he was confined, which will be a perpetual Stain to his Memory.

*Froissard* tells us, that this unfortunate *Richard* created four Esquires Knights of the *Bath*; which Instance, if true, would be sufficient to shew, that *Henry* was not the first Institutor of this Order. *John*, a Monk of *Marmoutier*, and *Dydius* go not only much higher to prove its Antiquity; but also, that it was not peculiar to *England*. The first says, in his History of *Godfrey Duke of Normandy*, that, in the Year 1228, *Henry the First of England* knighted *Godfrey*, Son of *Hugues*, Earl of *Anjou*, afterwards King of *Jerusalem*, at *Roan*, when he intended to give him his Daughter in Marriage.

*Dydius* mentions an old Writing, which he found at *Pisa*, in the Hands of a Prior, by which it appears, that a Priest, called *Peter la Piazza*, performed divine Service on the 8th of *April*, 1260, in the City of *Arezzo*, when a Commissioner, named *Ridolfinus*, having Power and Authority, conferred the Order of the *Bath* on *Ildebrand Geratafca*. This Candidate, he says, having taken the Oath of Allegiance to the Republick before a Notary, went to Court in the most costly Apparel, with a very splendid Equipage; from thence to Church, preceeded by six Courtiers and six Trumpeters. Having heard Mass, he repaired to the Palace of *Ridolfinus*, with whom he dined in Company of several Lords of that Name, and two Hermits; one of which latter made an excellent Oration at Table on the Duties of a Knight. *Ildebrand* ate and drank very sparingly of Bread and Water only, and after Dinner went to repose himself for an Hour; then, being shaved and his Hair cut, and the *Bath* prepared, he was conducted thither by four Knights and several Gentlemen of the Court, the Musick playing before them. Being undressed, and put into the *Bath* by two of the Knights, they stood round the Place, delivering him the necessary Instructions concerning the Manner of receiving the Order of Knighthood, and pointing out his Duty in that Station. Having remained an Hour in the *Bath*, he was put to Bed for an Hour longer; then they

they revested him with a single Robe of white Silk, girded him with a Leather-Girdle, and put a Cowl on his Head; in this Manner he was conducted by the Lord *Ridolfinus* and other Knights to Church, where they left him to pass the Night, in Company with four Priests, four Ladies, and four young Virgins of singular Beauty and noble Extraction, elegantly set out in the richest Dress. At Break of Day he confessed, heard Mass, received the Sacrament, and offered a green Wax-Taper, with two Pound Weight of silver Money. Mass being ended, he was from the Church reconducted by the same Company to the Palace of *Ridolfinus*, where, a Breakfast being prepared, he moderately refreshed himself with a little Food and a Glass of Wine, and then went to repose until High-Mass began; he then returned to the Church with the same Company. The Priest above-mentioned celebrated, and, in Reading the Gospel, one of the Knights drew a Sword, at which Instant *Ildebrand* swore with a loud Voice, *That he would comport himself as a faithful Subject to the Republick of Arezzo and S. Donato; that he would defend and protect, with all his Strength and with all his Might, the holy Catholick Church, the Honour of the Ladies, the Virgins, the Widows, and the Orphans.* After which two of the Knights put on his Spurs, and a young Damsel girded the Sword about him; he then kneeled down before the Lord *Ridolfinus*, who, giving him a light Blow with his Hand, said, *Be a Knight of this most noble military Order, and may this Blow remind you of the Honour which you now receive.*

After Mass he marched back to the Palace, in far greater Pomp than before, with the Sound of Instruments and the Acclamations of the People; when he arrived at the Palace-Gate, twelve Virgins of unspotted Fame from among the Citizens, with Crowns of Flowers on their Heads, denied him Entrance; but having presented each of them with a Gold-Ring, saying, *I have sworn to protect and defend your Sex, which Oath, by this Pledge, I now renew and confirm to you,* they permitted him Entrance. There a sumptuous Dinner was prepared for him, and the Persons of Distinction who had assisted at the Ceremony; after which, the Republick presented him two fine German Horses, the one white and the other black, richly caparisoned, and two pretious Coats of Armour; being armed *Capapee*, and mounted on the white Horse, accompanied by the Knights and Courtiers, all armed in the same Manner and well mounted, he repaired to the Place appointed for the Tournament, where he distinguished himself by his Valour and Dexterity; the Judges having distributed the Prizes, he dispatched his Esquire, with that which he had won, to the young Lady who girded his Sword about him in the Church.

The same Author says, that, in the Year 1240, he saw at *Rome* another Account; by which it appeared, that the Emperour *Frederick the Second*, conferred this Order on *Conrard Maznadar* in *S. Peter's Church*;

Church; adding, that he found, in the Records of the Family of Count *Lorenzo Magalotti*, that, in the Year 1388, *John* and *Walter Pancia-tici* received the same Honour in *Florence*: Moreover, that, in the Year 1389, *Charles the Sixth*, King of *France*, created *Lewis the Second*, King of *Sicily*, and his Brother *Charles*, Knights of the same Order, in the Abby of *S. Dennis*; that the two Candidates were bathed in the usual Manner; but, in Consideration of their tender Years, they dispensed with their passing two or three Hours only, instead of the whole Night, in Prayers in the Church; that it was the Bishop of *Auxerre*, who next Morning said Mass, and performed all the civil and ecclesiastical Ceremonies on their Installment; that two Days after there was a Tournament ordered by his Majesty, who assigned twenty four Knights for the military Exercises; and the same Number of beautiful young Ladies, to distribute the Prizes, to whom this Prince gave Ribbons of white Silk, which they tied to their left Shoulders; and, in this gay Fashion, followed the Knights to the Place appointed for the Tournament, which began immediately after the King had dined; that there was also present a great Number of Persons of Quality and Distinction, who signalized themselves by their Valour and Dexterity; and that the Tournament ending with the Setting of the Sun, the young Ladies distributed the Prizes, sending them among those whom the Judges thought merited most. The same Author adds, that the King appointed a second Tournament on this Occasion, naming twenty two Knights, and twenty two young Ladies, with this Difference only between this and the last, that now the Combatants were to fight on Foot, the Prizes being distributed in the same Manner; and lastly, that the King made very handsome Presents to the Knights and Ladies.

All these Opinions and Relations serve only to shew the Difference, Variety and Mixture of the ambiguous Ceremonies used in conferring this Order of Knighthood, and that it was not peculiar to *England* alone; but are not sufficient to prove, that the Order, which *Dydus* here speaks of, was the Order of the *Bath*, such as was established in *England*. 'Tis more likely, that the Custom of Bathing being so common among the antient *Romans*, which still remains among the Eastern Nations, they brought it with their victorious Arms into *Britain* and *Gaul*; that some British Monarch, observing how useful and necessary this Custom was, to preserve his Subjects in Health and Cleanliness, instituted an Order of it: And there is great Reason to believe, that Bathing was not only in Use before this or any other Order and Solemnities were received, but also in all Cases of Necessity; otherwise, what Advantage would it have been to the Publick? I have elsewhere remarked, with what happy Success the *Mahometans* used it, to whom the very Nature and Manner of various Distempers, so epidemical among us, are unknown;

of

of which *Mahomet* was so sensible, that he even made it a Part of religious Duty.

## S E C T. II.

*Of the Order of the ROUND TABLE.*

AUTHORS differ as much about the Order of the *Round Table*, which Institution is generally attributed to King *Arthur*, as about that we have just now been speaking of; some treat of it as a Chimæra, and say, not without Grounds, that what gave Birth to the Invention of an Order of this Name, was a *Round Table*, at which the Princes and other great Lords, who gave Jufts and Tournaments, feasted the Combatants and other Guests, who were there seated, to prevent all Disputes about Precedency: However, King *Arthur* might have been the first Inventor of this Sort of Table, to entertain those who had signalized themselves, by their Valour, in such military Exercises, or in his Service. Others alledge, that Tilts and Tournaments were in Vogue long before the Reign of King *Arthur*, which I do not pretend to contradict. They also remained a long while after. The Sumptuousness with which King *Edward the Third* feasted the foreign Nobility, at his famous round Table of *Windsor*, who resorted in great Multitudes to his Tilts, is very well known: It is evident, his Views therein were to draw over and engage the most renowned Warriours to his Side, against King *Philip de Valois*, when a War was kindling between those Princes; it is known also, that *Philip*, perceiving his Stratagems by their Effect, proclaimed the like Tournaments in his Kingdom, and set up a Table of the same Form, to entertain those who came there, among whom were some crowned Heads.

Those, who grant *Arthur* to be the Institutor of this Order, say, that he generally chose *Whitsunday* for the Day in which he created new Knights. They do not expressly mention the Year of its Institution, or the Manner of Conferring it, though some assure us it was in the Year 516; but only say, that he published an Edict throughout all his Kingdom, which obliged all the antient Knights to be present at the Installment; and that the Candidates should swear *to defend the Catholick Faith, the King against all his Enemies, the Honour of the fair Sex, and all Persons oppressed*: That after the Ceremony the King feasted the antient and new Knights at a round Table; and that each of them related his own military Exploits and Adventures.

However, to follow the first Writers in distinguishing the Truth from Fable, in the History of King *Arthur* we shall find no single Instance throughout his Reign unbecoming so great a Prince. He was generous beyond Expression, a brave Soldier, and an expert General. He had no

D

sooner

sooner attained his fourteenth Year, than he gave early Proofs of his Valour under the renowned *Ambrosius*, a British Monarch. In the Year 464 he succeeded his Father, *Gorlaus*, King of *Damoniun*, (now called *Devon* and *Cornwall*) and, having with great Difficulty ascended the Throne, *Howell*, King of *Arceleute*, entered into an Alliance with the *Saxons* against him; whom *Arthur* gave battle, and, discomfitting him on the *Isle of Man*, slew him with his own Hand in the Year 470.

*Ambrosius*, being declared universal Monarch of *Great Britain*, assumed the royal Purple, (after the Manner of the *Romans*) and made *Arthur* a Patrician, who had signalized himself in his Service against the *Picts* and *Saxons*.

During the Truce between *Ambrosius* and *Ella*, King of the *Saxons*, *Arthur* made a Voyage to *Jerusalem*, (according to the Devotion of those Times) and at his Return, finding the *Saxons* and *Northumbers* began to rise up in Rebellion, he marched against them; and in two Battles, one at the River *Gleyn*, in the Year 491, and the other near the River *Douglas*, in the Year 494, defeated them both.

*Pascentius*, a British Prince, having raised a Body of Troops, and revolted from *Ambrosius*, who at that Time was very ill, *Arthur*, taking upon him to chastize that Rebel, marched against him, and overthrew him near the River *Douglas*: But *Pascentius* humbly beseeching Pardon, with the most solemn Protestations of inviolable Fidelity, the generous King not only forgave him, but also made him Governour of *Brecknock* and *Radnack*, two Provinces in *Wales*, erecting the same into a Kingdom.

*Ambrosius* having lost the Battle of *Chardford* in *Hampshire*, and in it his Life, *Arthur* was unanimously chosen King of *Britain*. No Person was more proper to command their Armies, or more capable of defending them against the *Saxons*, whose very Name struck Terror into their Hosts, and who always got the Victory over them in Battle. He was no sooner crowned than he waged War with his Enemies, and encountered them on the Banks of the River *Ribregs*, where he accomplished their fatal Overthrow. This was his tenth Victory over the *Saxons*; he also gained another over them at *Cadbury*, and his twelfth and last at *Badon-Hill* near *Bath*.

### S E C T. III.

#### *Of the Order of the KNIGHTS BATCHELORS: Or of the GOLDEN SPUR.*

THE Order of the *Knights Batchelors*, or of the *Golden Spur*, is reckoned the most antient Order of Knighthood instituted in *England*, and I believe in all Christendom; nor is it only the most antient,

tient, but also regarded as the Model of all others. It derives its Origin from the *Equestrian Order* of the *Romans*, who brought it with their Arms and Laws into *Britain*. The *Equestrian Order* at *Rome* was a Degree between the Senators and Plebeians, to which Order the *Knights Batchelors* in *England* exactly responds. The Roman Knights were called in Latin *Torquati*, from the Collars or Chains of Gold which they wore, after the Example of *Manlius*, the Tribune, who wore the first, and from thence was surnamed *Torquatus*; so the *Knights Batchelors* were called *Equites Aurati*, from the Collars of Gold which were formerly put about their Necks, or the golden Spurs which were fastened to their Heels at their Installment. As the *Equestrian Order* was the first military Order among the *Romans*; so that of the *Knights Batchelors* was the first among the *Britons*, if they be not both one and the same Order. When I said the Addition of ecclesiastick \* to the civil Ceremonies could hardly claim an older Date than the first *Holy War*, I should have excepted the Order of the *Knights Batchelors*, into which they were introduced a long time before.

When this Order was to be conferred on any Person, two Thrones were erected on a Theatre, in a Cathedral or some other great Church belonging to a Monastery, for the King and Queen; on which was also placed a Chair, covered with green Silk, richly brocaded, for the Candidate; and other Seats for the Lords and Ladies, who assisted at the Ceremony. Their Majesties being come into the Church, and every one properly seated, the divine Service began; towards the Conclusion of which the Candidate went down, and kneeled at the Altar; when, after the Gospel was read, the Bishop officiating demanded of him, *Whether he was descended of good and honest Parentage? Whether he was a Man of a blameless Character? Whether he thought he had Health and Courage enough to undergo all the Fatigues of a Soldier? And whether he could produce any Witnesses to affirm the same?* To which having received satisfactory Answers, the Bishop or Abbot opened the New Testament, and tendered him the following Oath:

*Sir, you, who desire to receive the Order of Knighthood, swear before God and on this holy Book, that you will defend the Church, and the Honour of the Ladies; protect the Widows, the Orphans, and all Persons injured and oppressed; that you will not scruple to venture your Person in War, or any other warrantable Occasion that shall offer; that you will not take up Arms against this mighty and excellent Prince here present; (N. B. If the Candidate were a Foreigner, the Bishop added) unless your own peculiar Sovereign commands you; in which Case, after having resigned the Marks and Ornaments of this Order to the Prince who now confers them on you, it shall be lawful for you to fight against him; without*

\* The *Normans*, finding this Mixture of ecclesiastick and civil Ceremonies in *England*, derided it saying, It was profaning Religion, and degenerating the military Order of Knighthood.



*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

*without Fear of Reproach, and without Offence to other Champions in Arms; otherwise you will incur Infamy, and, if made Prisoner of War, you shall be liable to the Penalty of Death.*

Having taken this Oath, two of the chief Lords reconducted him to his Chair; two of the antient Knights put on his Spurs, while two others held up his Legs. Afterwards some Ladies dressed in white Silk, leaving their Seats, approached his; which he immediately quitting to meet them, they stopped him, and girt on his Sword. Then the Knights led him to the King, who, having put the Collar of the Order about his Neck, drew his Sword, and laid it upon his Head, saying, *God and S. George* (or any other Saint his Majesty was pleased to name) *make thee a good Knight.*

After that, two of the most noble Ladies, taking him by each Hand, led him between them to a magnificent Seat, placed near the King's Throne, where a Table was prepared of the choicest Delicacies, round which the illustrious Assembly seated themselves, and had the Honour to eat with their Majesties. Thus the Ceremony ended.

If a Knight violated his Oath, or committed any Action deserving Death, he was apprehended and armed *Capapee*, as if he was going to War; mounted on a Scaffold erected in the Church, like the Stage on which he was created; his Funeral-Ceremony sung by the Clergy, as if he was really dead; deprived of his Helmet, his military Girdle, his Gauntlets, in short, of his whole Armour; his Spurs were hacked off his Heels with a Chopping-Knife or an Axe, and his Sword broken: Then a Herald, at three several Times, cried out with a loud Voice, *This is a Coward, a perjured Fellow, a disloyal Miscreant*, and such like reproachful Terms, according to the Nature of his Crime. Thus being degraded, and all his Honours rebated, he was carried to a publick Place, and hanged on a Gallows erected for that Purpose.

Since the *Reformation* none of the ecclesiastical, and scarce any of the civil Ceremonies have been observed in the Creation of *Knights Batchelors*; neither have they any Badges given them to wear. All the Ceremony used at present is thus: The Candidate kneels before the King, who draws his Sword, and, smiting him lightly with it on the Shoulder, says, *Sis eques in nomine Domini*, i. e. *Be a Knight in the Name of God*; and then adds, *Rise, Sir Knight Batchelor*. This Honour is but for Life. Those, who formerly received it, were called Knights of the *Golden Spur*, 'till the Reign of King Henry the Third of England, who changed it to that of *Batchelors*, and granted a Patent for Making an Infant a *Knight Batchelor* immediately after his Baptism.

S E C T.

## S E C T. IV.

*Of the Order of KNIGHTS BANNERETS.*

**T**HE Order of the *Knights Bannerets* is the next in Antiquity to that I have been last discoursing of, which was thus established and conferred. It was formerly a Custom among Princes when they went to War, to chuse out the most valiant and noblest of their Officers to carry the Banner; which Custom also owes its Original to the *Romans*, whose Standard-Bearers were called *Præpositi Labarorum*. A *Knight Banneret* was made in this Manner; a Herald put into the Candidate's Hand a Lance, to which was fastened a Standard, and thus presented him to the Sovereign; after that the Candidate, having rendered an Account of his Birth, of his Family, of his Conduct and other requisite Qualities, the King said to him, *You are welcome, I will make you a Banneret*. Then the Herald put a cutting Sword into the King's right Hand, and the Tail of the Standard into his left, which he took hold of, and cut it into a square Banner; this done, the Prince returned both into the Hands of the Herald, who, presenting the Banner to the Knight, said, *Noble Knight, be henceforth a good Banneret, bearing this Banner in the Service, and for the Glory, of our Sovereign, and the Honour of your Family*. Knights Bannerets were sometimes in *England* made by Patents: Thus *Edward the Third* made *John Cupland* a Banneret, after he had defeated and taken Prisoner *David Bruys*, King of *Scotland*.

## S E C T. V.

*Of the Order of the HOLY SEPULCHRE.*

**A**MONG the military Orders of *England* I shall here place, in its Rank, the Order of the *Holy Sepulchre*, which is said to have been there established by King *Henry the Second*. Writers are very much divided concerning not only the Time and Places both of its first and last Institution, but also about its Institutors. Some will have it, that this Order owes its Original to *James the First*, Bishop of *Jerusalem*; and give for a Reason, that this Prelate, having appointed some Watchmen at the *Holy Sepulchre*, made, in the Year 96, a Kind of Militia of them, under the Standard of the Cross: Others ascribe it to *Baudouin the First*, King of *Jerusalem*, in the Year 1103: Abbot *Giustiani* and some attribute it to *Godfroy de Bouillon*, his Predecessour; and *Stoonbeck* with others tell us, that *Henry the Second*, in his Voyage to the *Holy Land*, was so well pleased with the good Offices of the *Knights of the Sepulchre* towards the Pilgrims, that he vowed to establish that Order in his Kingdom at his Return. Some assure us the same was performed at *Canterbury*,

E

ry,

ry, in the Year 1173 or 1174; others in the Year 1177 or 1178. If he instituted such an Order in *Canterbury*, it must have been after his Conquest of *Ireland*, when he went to that City, to make a Visit to the Archbishop *Thomas Becket's* Tomb, and performed that ignominious \* Part of the Pennance enjoined him by Pope *Alexander the Third's* Legate, to atone for the Murther of that Prelate; to which that Prince was accused of having given Occasion, by Complaints of his † Ingratitude, and the Troubles he had involved him in. It is most certain, *Henry* underwent that severe Part of the Pennance about the middle of *July*, 1173. If he established this Order at *London*, it must have been soon after his Arrival there, and, perhaps, on the agreeable News that General *Bobun*, who commanded his Forces against those of his eldest Son, had not only routed them, but also taken Prisoners the Earl of *Leicester* who headed them, the King of *Scotland*, with several Barons of the Kingdom, and other Ring-Leaders of the Conspiracy, who instigated him, his Mother, and his Brothers, to dethrone their Husband and Father, while they were in *France* supported by King *Lewis the Seventh*, surnamed *the Young*, the Earls of *Flanders*, *Boulogne* and *Blois*, &c. for the Intent of invading all the Provinces in the Kingdom. As *Henry* was made to observe, that this Victory happened on the very last Day he performed his Pennance, the Monks, who had already published several Miracles of the Archbishop, did not fail to ascribe it to the Merits of that Prelate; which Circumstance had such an Effect upon the Mind of this Prince, that he returned publick Thanks to the Martyr, and declared, that he did no longer doubt his *Sanctity* ||. This indeed might be a strong Inducement to him to establish this Order at that Time, if he had ever made such a Resolution: But however, he could not in the *Holy Land* determine to do so, because he never was there, as I shall shew hereafter. I have said, that, if he established that Order in *London*, he must have done it speedily after his Arrival there, since he suddenly

\* This Part of the Pennance was, to alight from his Horse within a League of *Canterbury*, and walk bare-foot to the Martyr's Tomb, where he was to receive 80 Lashes from the Hands of the Prior and Monks of *S. Augustine*, and pass the whole Night in Prayers, kneeling on the cold Pavement.

† *Thomas Becket* was the Son of *Gilbert*, Citizen of *London*, by *Mahauld*, said to be the Daughter of a *Saracen*, who had taken *Gilbert* Prisoner in *Palestine*. *Thomas* studied the Law, and grew so famous at the Bar, that he was translated to the Archdeanery of *Canterbury*; afterwards *Henry* promoted him to the Dignity of High-Chancellor, and at last to the Archiepiscopal See of that Diocese.

|| He was not canonized 'till 50 Years after his Death, it having been publicly disputed at the University of *Paris*, Whether he was in Heaven or in Hell? Some pleaded, that his Miracles were sufficient Proofs of his being in the Mansion of the Blessed; others, setting aside his Miracles, as the Contrivance of the Monks, argued, that his Pride, Haughtiness, Ingratitude, and the innumerable Troubles he caused, both in Church and State, could not entitle him to any other Place than that of the Damned.

N. B. It is a Custom, when any Person is to be canonized, to enquire into his good and bad Qualities, which are argued *pro* and *con*: And in *Rome* the Pleaders on one Side are called, *God's Advocates* or *Sollicitors*; and those on the other, *Attornies for the Devil*.

suddenly left that City to go to *France*, in order to chastise his Family, and bring the Provinces and Cities into Subjection, that had there revolted. If he established it in the Year 1174, it was not 'till after he had recovered all which his Enemies had taken away, imprisoned his Wife, brought his Sons on their Knees, and forced the King of *France* to sue for and conclude a Peace, as advantageous and glorious to himself, as it was quite the reverse to the other; for he did not return to *England* 'till all this was done, which was about the End of that Year. That this Order was introduced in the Year 1177, or 1178, is as groundless as his Voyage to the *Holy Land*, or pretended Vows there; my Reasons for which I shall offer, when I have related what I learnt, concerning the Order itself and its Ceremonies.

By the Statutes of the Order of the *Holy Sepulchre*, those who desired to be admitted were obliged to make a Tour to *Jerusalem*, and remain there two Years, by Way of Probation, to guard the *Holy Sepulchre*, and for the Safety of the Pilgrims who resorted thither. Afterwards they were tendered an Oath, the Substance of which was this; they swore on the Evangelists, *That they would defend the Christian Religion with all their Might; that at all Times, and on all Occasions, in which their Service should be necessary, they would return to Jerusalem, and enter into a Holy War against the Infidels; they promised also to defend the Honour of the Ladies, &c.* as in the preceeding Orders. Having taken this Oath, the Sovereign or Great-Master girt on the Sword, and, drawing it from the Scabbard, lightly smote them thrice on the left Shoulder, saying, *I make you a Knight of the Holy Sepulchre, in the Name of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.* The Sign of this Order was a *Green Cross*, like those of the Patriarchs, represented by Figure 9, Plate 1.

This is all I could learn of this Order; nor can I be convinced, by what I have read concerning it, that there ever was such a military Order in *England*. There was indeed a religious one of Canons of the *Holy Sepulchre*, who wore a white Gown, with a black Mantle, on which was a green Cross, as above.

Those who will have it, that King *Henry the Second* made a Voyage to the *Holy Land*, and in that Place vowed to establish the Order of *Knights of the Sepulchre*, must surely have been great Travellers in the Fields of Imagination, or very little acquainted with the History of that Prince. History would have informed them, that he was indeed obliged by the third Article of Absolution, which he received of the Pope's Legate at *Avranches*, on his Return from *Ireland*, not only to go to the *Holy Land*, but also to lead an Army thither against the *Saracens*, and remain there three Years successively: They would indeed have found that he at first seemed resolved upon going; that afterwards he could not; that then he would not go thither, when it was believed he

He could, and was even summoned by the Pope to comply with that Article; in short, that he never went at all. These are Truths which will more plainly appear by what I am going to add. That *Henry* intended to go to the *Holy Land* we learn from the Collection of *Publick Acts*, wherein we see an Agreement between him and the King of *France*, to make a Voyage there together. As this Agreement is without Date, we can only guess at the Time in which it was made. Some are of Opinion that it was before his Accession to the Throne, about the Time of the second *Holy War*, in the Year 1148, and that he was about to accompany that Monarch thither; but his Wars with *Stephen*, with whom he disputed the Crown, prevented it. History is silent concerning such an Intimacy at that Time between *Henry* and *Lewis*; but indeed tells us, that *Henry* was scarce sixteen Years old, when he laid claim to the Crown of *England*; and that the same Year, or quickly after, in which *Lewis* set out for that Expedition, he went in quest of Aid to his Great-Uncle, *David*, King of *Scotland*, who knighted him, according to the Custom of those Times, when this Ceremony was accounted generally necessary to all who turned Soldiers; and they concerted proper Measures together to make good his Pretensions; but the timely Precautions of *Stephen* baffled all their Designs, and put a Stop to their Enterprize: That *Lewis*, at his Return from *Palestine*, having put away *Eleonora* \*, his Wife, and returned her all her Dowry, which was very considerable, *Henry* married her: That this Addition to the Dukedom of *Anjou*, which fell to him by the Death of his Father, and to that of *Normandy*, which was to come to him at the Death of *Matilda*, his Mother, created no less Jealousy in *Lewis* than *Stephen*; whereupon they entered into a League together against him. And that *Lewis* raised him great Troubles in *Anjou*, by the Means of *Geoffry*, the youngest Son of King *Henry*; whence followed the War between him and *Stephen*, which is supposed to be that in *England*. It is well known how favourable this War was to *Henry*, and that it ended in his Adoption by *Stephen*, who assured him of the Succession to his Throne after his Death.

Others think this Agreement was made in 1162, when the War, which began between those two Monarchs about *Thoulouse*, was finished with the Conclusion of a Peace, or rather a Ratification of the Treaty of *Paris*; a Peace, which was cemented by a Match between *Henry's* eldest

\* *Eleonora* was Heiress of the House of *Poitiers*, whom *Lewis* married, and had in Dowry with her the Earldom of *Gyenne*, with its Appurtenances, and all *Poitou*. She accompanied him into *Palestine*, where he took an irreconcilable Aversion to her, on Suspicion of her having had criminal Conversation with a young *Saracen*, and resolved to divorce her at his Return to *France*; which, not discovering his Jealousy or the real Cause, he did under Pretence of their being too nearly related; and their Marriage was dissolved in the National Council of *Bois-Jenci*.

eldest Son and *Margaret* \*, the Daughter of *Lewis*. Whether this Agreement was made before or after his Accession to the Throne, I do not see when or how he could comply therewith; for he was engaged, from the Year 1154 'till then, in continual Wars and Troubles with *Stephen*, his Brother *Geoffray*, the *Welsh*, the King of *France*; and this Peace, or rather Suspension of Arms, was immediately followed by his Differences with the Archbishop *Becket*; the worst of all Differences, which not only lasted 'till that Prelate's Death, in the Year 1171, but also continued with the Court of *Rome* 'till the Absolution, which he paid so dear for. His Conquest of *Ireland*, the Conspiracy of his Queen *Eleanor*, and his three Sons, *Henry*, *Richard* and *Geoffray*, which broke out soon after: All which is a Series of successive Wars and Troubles, which does not let us see one Interval wherein he could fulfil that Contract, Intent, or Obligation of his Absolution, 'till the Year 1174. I have said above, that the Differences between *Henry* and the Archbishop *Becket* were worse than all the rest, and with less Partiality than all the Historians, who have spoke of them. The Cause of these Differences was: This Monarch had undertaken to reduce the Clergy within their antient due Bounds, who had taken Occasion, from the Troubles of King *Stephen*'s Reign, to raise the Mitre above the Crown, and had usurped too many of the royal Prerogatives. An Undertaking, which even *Thomas Becket*, as Chancellour, countenanced; but which, as Archbishop, he opposed with the utmost Vigour, and an invincible Obstinacy. As to the Conspiracy of the royal Family against *Henry*, which tended to nothing less than to bereave him of the Throne of *England*, and all his Provinces in *France*, it is not improper to remark, that he had caused his eldest Son *Henry* to be crowned in the Year 1170, as his immediate Successour, and made his Nobility swear Allegiance to him as such; that he had created *Richard* Earl of *Poitou*, but reserved all the Sovereignty to himself, and only flattered *Geoffray* with being created Duke of *Britaigne*; that these Princes, weary of their Subjection and those Shadows of Titles, and *Eleanor*, joining the Jealousy she had of the *Harem* † of Mistresses which the King kept, but above all of *Rosamond*, to their Discontents, blew up the Sparks of this Conspiracy, which was plotted and contrived whilst *Henry* was taken up with his Conquest of *Ireland*, being powerfully fortified on both Sides of the Water, and broke out in the Beginning of the Year 1173. However, he was not longer in suppressing it, than he was in conquering that Kingdom. It was then, and then only, that he seem-

F

ed

\* This Princess was to have for her Dowry the City of *Gisors* and Part of *Vexin*, which were sequestred into the Hands of the *Knights Templars*, to remain there, according to the Treaty, 'till the Celebration of their Nuptials: Chancellour *Becket* went with a numerous and splendid Retinue to bring her from *Paris*, that she might be educated in *England*, 'till she was marriageable, she being then but seven and the young Prince but three Years old.

† *Harem* is a Turkish Word, which signifies either the Apartment, or Number of Concubines, and not *Seraglio*, a Corruption of the Word *Seray*, a Palace, as I have observed in my first Vol.

ed to have any Opportunity of going to the *Holy Land*; he having at that Time reduced his conspiring Sons to beseech his Pardon; which he vouchsafed to them with his wonted Generosity to all his Adherents; except Queen *Eleanor*, whom he imprisoned, perhaps on Suspicion of her having poisoned *Fair Rosamond* \*: And likewise having made as glorious and advantageous a Peace with *Lewis*, as he could wish; a Peace, which, like the preceeding, was strengthened by the Marriage of his Son *Richard* with *Alice*, the Princess Royal of *France* †. This, I say, was the only Time *Henry* had to make his Voyage; as this was the Era of the longest Interval of Tranquillity that blest his Reign; yet he was so far from going at that Time, that he did not even seem to think of it: But bent his Thoughts on making some Regulations in his Kingdom, settling his domestick Affairs, and pursuing his Pleasures. He began with a Treaty with the King of *Scotland*, which obliged him to pay Homage to *Henry* for his Kingdom, to restore to the Crown of *England* all that had been taken from it by the *Scots*, and, for Security of the Performance of all Articles, to put into his Hands the Castles of *Berwick*, *Edinburgh*, *Sterling* and *Roxborough*. In the Year 1175, he enacted new Laws favourable to the Crown, and, to remove all Jealousies it might give his Subjects, he revived and ratified those of *S. Edward*, which were so to them. In 1176, he divided the Kingdom into six Districts, appointing two Judges for each, who were obliged to go to their respective Districts twice a Year, for the Administration of Justice, immediately after *S. Hilary* and *Trinity*-Terms; which is still practised, being called *Lent* and *Summer-Affizes*. The same Year he sent two Ambassadors to Pope *Alexander the Third*, to ask his Consent for erecting *Ireland* into a Kingdom, in Favour of his youngest Son *John*, on whom he intended to bestow it; but the Pope did not grant this Boon, because he had not complied with the third Article of his Absolution. As some of my Readers may have the Curiosity to know what those Articles of Absolution contained, I shall here insert them. But before that Monarch received it from the Legates, in 1172; and indeed with great Reluctancy on their Parts, he swore and protested, That he had never given his Assent or his Orders for the Assassination committed on the Person of the Archbishop; but acknowledged and confessed, seemingly with the most lively Penitence and deepest Remorse, that, alas! the too publick and frequent Complaints against that Prelate might have given Occasion to it. They made

\* *Rosamond* was of the House of *Clifford*, and, from her excellent Beauty, was called *Fair Rosamond*. King *Henry* was passionately enamoured of her, who, dying young and suddenly, was believed to have been poisoned by Queen *Eleanor*, who hated her as mortally; and, what the more encreased this Suspicion was, she died much about the Time of the Conspiracy.

† *Alice*, being very young, was placed under the Care of King *Henry*, to be educated at the *English* Court, till she was ripe for Marriage.

made him take the Oath as solemnly as if he were about to receive any of the aforeſaid Orders :

- I. That he would never oppoſe his Holineſs's Will.
- II. That he ſhould admit Appeals to the Holy See.
- III. That he ſhould lead an Army to the *Holy Land*, and remain there three Years ſucceſſively.
- IV. That he ſhould recal all thoſe he had baniſhed on Account of the Broils of the Archbiſhop, and reſtore them to their Eſtates, Places, and Dignities.
- V. That he ſhould aboliſh all the Laws and Cuſtoms that had been introduced againſt the Intereſt of the Church. The VIth was that ſhameful Penitence already mentioned.

He alſo, in the Year 1176, demolished all the fortified Caſtles, which remained in the Hands of private Perſons; a Work which he had already begun at his Acceſſion to the Throne, but never perfected 'till now; perhaps, for the very ſame Reaſons which obſtructed his Voyage.

About that Time, or ſoon after, the King of *France* perceiving himſelf much decayed and broken with Age, being in his 70th Year, determined, after a Reign of 40 Years, to reſign the Crown to his Son *Philip Auguſtus*; but this Prince falling dangerously ſick, *Lewis* \*, in the Year 1177, made a Pilgrimage to the Tomb of the Archbiſhop, *Thomas Becket*, of whom many Miracles had been related, to implore his Interceſſion in Favour of the Patient. *Henry* met him at *Dover*, and accompanied him to *Canterbury*, where theſe two Monarchs together joined their Prayers for his Recovery. *Lewis* preſented a Cup of pure Gold, on which were ennamelled an *Annunciation* and a *Crutifix*, enriched with precious Stones, and granted the Monks a Supply of an hundred Hogſheads of Wine, obliging himſelf and his Succeſſours, by an authentic Act under his Seal, to continue this Gift yearly to the Monastery for ever.

Thoſe, who maintain that *Henry* inſtituted this Order in that City, are of Opinion it was on that Occaſion. Others ſuppoſe they alſo there made their Agreement to go together to the *Holy Land*; but theſe at beſt are bare Conjectures, the Collection of *Publick Acts*, which make mention of it, being without Date: Beſides, how very improbable is it, that *Lewis*, who reſigned the Crown by reaſon of his great Age and Infirmities, ſhould, old and weak as he was, undertake ſo fatiguing a Voyage at that Time to *Paleſtine*? And, it is ſaid too, he died two Years after this Pilgrimage. As for *Henry*, he ſeemed rather to bend his

\* *Lewis* communicated his Reſolution to his Nobles, whom he had aſſembled, and appointed the Coronation to be performed on *Aſſumption-Day*, in the Year 1177; but it was deferred 'till *All Saints-Day*, on Account of *Philip's* Indiſpoſition. The old King could not be preſent at the Ceremony by reaſon of a Palfy, which ſeized one Side of his Body, at his Return from *Canterbury*. *Henry*, the young titular King of *England*, aſſiſted there, repreſenting the Duke of *Bourgoigne*, and carried the Crown before *Philip* from his Chamber to the Church.



his Thoughts towards the Gratification of his sensual Appetites, than Discharging his Obligation. *Alice* being now marriageable, *Richard* demanded the Celebration of their Nuptials, according to the Treaty of 1174; but his Father put him off from time to time with various Pretences, which plainly discovered he had no mind the Prince should have her. But the real Reason was, *Henry* himself was deeply smitten; whose Love became very soon so visible, that every one thought he would divorce *Eleanor*, who had given him Cause enough, and marry *Alice*; for no Person alive imagined that a Princess of Royal Blood would so far forget herself as to condescend to be the Mistress of an old King, whom she had ever looked on as her future Grandfather, when a blooming Prince invited her to his Marriage-Bed. But however; their Carriage to each other soon gave the World room to judge suspiciously of her. *Henry* flushed with Success, and blinded with his Passion; regarded *Philip the Second*, to whom by this Treatment he gave great Cause for a Rupture, as a Child, (for he was yet very young) and as incapable of enterprising any Thing to the Disturbance of his pleasant Tranquillity; especially, considering the Example of his Father's bad Success was still so recent in every Body's Memory. He did not dream that, after having reduced his Sons to due Subjection, they would attempt a second Revolt; but he was very much mistaken; for these Princes were actually plotting against him, upon the Subject of their former Grievances, to which *Richard* added the Refusal of *Alice*; and *John*, weary of the cold Affection of his Father, who had not yet settled any Appennage on him, also entered into the Cabal. As soon as this Affair was whispered to *Henry*, he seemed to take little notice of it; but, dissembling the Matter, endeavoured to sow Discord between the young King *Henry* and his two Brothers, *Richard* and *Geoffrey*, the latter of whom he had created Duke of *Britanny*, since his Peace with *Lewis*. (For he had not yet been informed of *John's* being in the Conspiracy.) Accordingly, he caressed him with great Demonstrations of Kindness, and advised him to demand Homage from them for their Appennages, as King already crowned. Young *Henry*, ignorant of the Italian Proverb, *Chi ti carrezza piu che non suole t'ha ingannato e ingannar ti vuole*, believed, that his Father was at last willing to resign the Sovereignty to him, which had occasioned the first Conspiracy, and was the Cause of the present Cabal; so insisting on his Prerogative, he accordingly made his Demand; but they made a Jest of it, and laid before his Eyes the Snare that was spread for him. However, he dissembled in his Turn with his Father, and expressed much Resentment against his Brothers for their Refusal, whilst he secretly continued a more intimate Correspondence with them than ever. He made a Tour to *Guyenne* under a very plausible Pretence, which had even the old King's Approbation, but with a Design to make the *Gascons* revolt; when, at the Point of executing his

Inten-

Intention, he fell ill of a Fever, which constrained him to stop at the Castle of *Martel*, where he died the 11th of *June*, 1183; by which Accident *Richard* became Heir apparent, and found it proper to change his Conduct, at least exteriorly, towards his Father: For nothing could make him alter his real Sentiments, submitting in shew only, in Hopes of having one Day the supreme Power. He let him quietly enjoy his dear *Alice*, never so much as mentioning her to him; and, to speak Truth, he did no longer care for her, but only made that Affair serve as a Pretence to cause a Rupture between *Philip* and *Henry*.

While this was in Agitation, *Heraclius*, the Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, arrived in *England*, with a Letter from Pope *Luce the Third*, addressed to all the Christian Princes, to demand their respective Succours against the *Saracens*. He could get nothing from *Henry* but Money, and Leave to such of his Subjects as would voluntarily go to the *Holy War*, to which great Numbers went. The Pope took this Occasion to engage that Monarch to fulfil the third Article of his Absolution, he having always excused himself on Account of his Wars, and intestine Troubles in his Kingdom. He not only sent him his Consent to erect *Ireland* into a Kingdom, in Favour of his Son *John*, which he had in vain desired of his Predecessour, *Alexander the Third*, but also added the Present of a rich Crown for that Prince. *Henry* thankfully received both, but again excused himself from the Voyage, pleading the Fear of another Rebellion of his Sons in his Absence. Instead of crowning *John* King of *Ireland*, he only sent him in Quality of a Governour, after having knighted him, according to the Custom already mentioned; but the *Irish* making Complaints against his Government, he was soon obliged to recall him. He had sent *Richard*, or at least had given him Leave to go, to *Guierme*, where, disregarding his Father's Orders, he executed an absolute Authority; and, having drawn over the *Gascons* to his Side, he undertook to gain the *Britons*, or rather to subdue them by Force of Arms; taking no notice of his Brother *Geoffray's* Right, and forgetting the Conditions of their Conspiracy and former Union, he marched against the *Britons*; and, *Geoffray* putting himself at the Head of them, *Richard* gave him Battle, and gained the Victory.

*Henry* had no sooner Intelligence of it, but he marched against *Richard* with a great Army, threatening to disinherit him, if he did not of his own Accord return to his Duty. *Richard*, fearing the Effects of these Threats, submitted himself. *Geoffray* died soon after by a Fall from his Horse at *Paris*, where he went to a Tournament, according to English Historians; but, according to the French, he died of a Fever. *Richard* for some Time behaved himself openly with great Affection towards his Father, whilst he laboured underhand to bring King *Philip* to a Rupture with him. The Affront put on the royal Family of *France* by his Father, on Account of *Alice*, was at least a plausible Pretence;

Pretence; which Princes indeed never fail of, when they have a Mind to quarrel; nor indeed did he find much Difficulty in succeeding, that Prince having too much Proneness already for it, who saw with Sorrow and secret Jealousy many fine Provinces in his Kingdom possessed by the *English*: But he carried his Views much further, than he thought convenient to communicate to *Richard*. It was entirely with these Views that he made such extraordinary Preparations in the Year 1186; and, as he could not conceal them, he endeavoured to make the World believe they were designed for the Service of the *Holy Land*. As soon as they were in Readiness, he first summoned *Richard*, not only to marry his Sister *Alice*, but also to come and pay him Homage for the Earldom of *Poitou*; and then *Henry*, to surrender *Gisors*, and all that he had had for the Dowry of *Margaret*, his eldest Sister, Widow of his Son *Henry*. *Richard* penetrating into the *French* King's Designs, or perhaps being made sensible by his Father what they tended to, and considering how contrary it was to his own Interest to favour them, struck in with his Father against *Philip*, in order to break his Measures. This succeeded so well, that they forced him to sue for a Truce, which was granted for two Years.

*Philip*, by this Harmony between the Father and Son, having missed his Aim, and knowing that *Richard* was not any higher advanced in respect of the Dignity to which he so impatiently aspired, thought it no difficult Matter to break their Engagement, and win him back to himself. To that End he invited him to his Court; *Richard* accepted the Invitation, and *Philip* gave him a Reception so apparently sincere, as to accommodate him in the same Bed with himself. What Measures they concerted, the Sequel may discover. *Henry* informed of those extraordinary Caresses, and jealous of such an Appearance of mutual Friendship between them, recalled *Richard* Home; and, the Truce being expired, the two Monarchs resumed their Arms: But just as they were entered into Acts of Hostility, they received Intelligence, that the *Saracens* had rendered themselves Masters of *Jerusalem*, and taken the King, *Guy de Lusingham*, Prisoner. Then was the third *Holy War* proclaimed, and the Pope's Legates interfered so much between these Princes, that they prevailed on them to drop their Quarrel, and espouse that of *Christ*; but particularly they reminded *Henry* of his Obligation in this Case. Accordingly, at a Conference on that Subject, a longer Time for the Cessation of Arms was agreed upon; they met at *Gisors*, a City famous for such holy Meetings and \* political Treaties, as I shall observe in its Place. There those Princes, after having signed the Truce and Articles of the *Holy War*, took the Crosses; *Philip* took the red, *Henry* the white, and the Earl of *Flanders*,

\* This Meeting was called the small Council of *Gisors*, and was composed of several Princes and Nobility of both Kingdoms. *William*, Archbishop of *Tyr*, presided there, who gave the Crosses with his own Hand to *Philip*, *Henry*, and the Earl of *Flanders*.

*Flanders*, who assisted at the Conference, the green Cross, their respective Subjects imitating them in this Distinction of Colours. But, alas, how unstable is the Mind of Man! How brittle oftentimes are the strongest Engagements! They were scarce ready to depart on this Christian Expedition, when their Zeal, wound up to the highest Pitch of Ardour, suddenly cooled, and was converted to the rankest Animosity against each other, on so frivolous an Occasion as is not worth mentioning; insomuch, that neither Pope, or Patriarch, or Legates, or Friends could prevent them from turning their Arms towards one another, which were taken up in Defence of themselves against the Infidels; nor hinder their renewing and continuing the War with the utmost Obstinacy. A War, in which *Richard* engaged with *Philip* against his own Father, and caused all his *French* Subjects to revolt; a War, the most unhappy for *Henry*, who was deserted on all Sides; a War, in short, which ended in a Peace more shameful for him, than the last he had concluded with *Lewis* was advantageous and glorious. A Peace whereof *Philip* imposed the Terms, and prescribed the Conditions; a Peace which *Henry* survived but a very few Months. He died at *Chinon* the 6th of *July*, 1189, in the 57th Year of his Age, after a Reign of 34 Years, 8 Months, and 12 Days. His Body was carried to *Fontevrard*, a Nunnery founded by himself, and there interred, as he had ordered before his Death. It is reported, that *Richard*, who was present at the Funeral, drawing near the Body on its Removal, there issued forth Blood from the Mouth and Nostrils in abundance, which that Prince, struck with Remorse, looking on as a Reproach for the Share his Rebellion had in his Death, burst into Tears, and publicly implored Pardon of Heaven and the Defunct. It is added, that, by Way of Attonement, he made a Vow to lead an Army to the *Holy Land*, a Thing so highly necessary at that Time, to which *Henry* had so solemnly obliged himself, and which *Richard* had so much contributed to hinder. However, he did not depart *France* 'till he had made an Agreement with *Philip*, to lead each a numerous Army thither without Delay, for which Expedition they prepared with the utmost Diligence. He dispatched several Orders to *England* for this Purpose, as well as on other Accounts; among which was the setting his Mother at Liberty, who had been confined near 16 Years. *Philip* restored him all the Places which were taken from his Father during the War, and received his Homage for the same. Then he went over to *England*, where he was crowned with the usual Ceremonies,

## S E C T.

## S E C T. VI.

## Of the Order of the GARTER.

\* Now called  
S. Jean  
d'Acris.

SOME Writers advance, that the Order of the Garter owes its original Institution to *Richard the First*, from a blue Ribbon, which he gave to those Noblemen, who accompanied him in his Expedition to the *Holy Land*; others, from Leather-Garters, which he gave to certain of his Officers and Soldiers at the Siege of *Ptolemaid*\*. There are who ascribe it to both these Occasions: However, the second give for their Authority the following Account, taken out of an antient Book, entituled, *Ordo militaris a prænobili subligaculo nuncupati*, translated from very bad and obscure *Latin*. Richard, observing with Impatience the tedious Delay of the Siege of Ptolemaid, resolved to storm the Town, and, by a divine Inspiration, S. George appearing to him, as it was thought, it came into his Mind to tie Leather-Garters about the Legs of a certain Number of Officers and Soldiers, whose Courage and Bravery he had experienced, to the end that, bearing thereby the Consideration of the Glory they should attain by conquering all Difficulties, they might be excited to the Performance of laudable Actions, so as to merit the Recompence of Victory; in Imitation of the antient Romans, who had such Variety of Coronets to adorn and distinguish military Men, as Incentives to Conquest and Virtue.

Thus it seems Richard made use of Leather-Garters, and animated his Soldiers, to try the utmost Effects of their Valour, by the Hopes which he probably gave them, that the holy Champion, who had appeared to him, would stand by them and secure the Victory. I shall not pretend to determine, whether S. George did really appear to Richard, and promise him the Success which he gained; let it suffice, that he had it. It was not at all difficult to make them believe so, at a Time when the Christian World was full of the miraculous Exploits of that Saint; nor could he be ignorant, how useful and advantageous such Apparitions, Revelations or Inspirations had already been. Those Exploits were universally believed, and in the Mouth or Writings of every one. For Instance, the Deliverance of the King of *Lydia*'s Daughter, from the devouring Mouth of the Dragon, was not only recorded in History, but even celebrated with Hymns in the Churches†. Nay, the very Horse of the holy Deliverer was distinguished, which, according to *Nicephorus Gregorius* in his *Bizantine History*, was heard to neigh

mira-

† O Georgi martyr inclyte,  
Te decet laus & gloria,  
Per quem puella regia,  
Existens in tristitia  
Coram dracone pessimo salvata est, &c.  
V. *Horæ B. Mariæ juxta Usum Sarum.*

O holy George, renowned  
Martyr, to thee belong  
Glory and Praise, by whom  
The royal Virgin, involv'd  
In Grief, was rescued from  
The fiercest of Dragons, &c.

miraculously at two different Times, upon which his Picture was represented in the Palace of the Emperour *Andronicus Palologus*. The first Neighing was interpreted to that Emperour as a Presage of his Triumphs, and the second happened, when *Baldwin* was beaten out of *Constantinople* by his Father. It is recorded in the History of *Antioch*, that the holy Knight appeared in the Christian Army, when they were besieging *Jerusalem*, in the Form of a beautiful young Man in white Armour, encouraging the Besiegers to mount the Scaling-Ladder after him, holding in one Hand a red Cross, that they might not be mistaken, and making a Sign with the other for them to follow him; at the same Time giving them Assurance, that they might with Safety attempt it and take the City, which they did without the Loss of a single *Christian*. They were so far from mistaking or mistrusting him, that, according to the same History, a Priest had foretold the same Success, assuring them that the Saint had not only appeared to him in the same Form, but also declared to him by Word of Mouth, That he was *George*, the Champion of *Christ*; and that he would be assuredly among them, and help them to take the Place.

Whoever requires any more Instances, whether antient or modern, of the Use that has been advantageously made of such Sort of Apparitions, may read the *Roman* History concerning the Conversations of *Numa Pompilius* with the Goddess *Ægeria*; the French Accounts of *Joan of Arc*; her Revelations and Discourses with *S. Michael* and other Saints of both Sexes; and those of *S. Michael* himself fighting visibly for the *French* against the *English* at the Siege of *Orleans*. It is not improbable, that *Richard*, having read or heard of the miraculous Deeds of this Saint, invoked him or implored his Aid, when he formed the Design to attack the City of *Acre*, the Siege of which had already given so much Anxiety and Trouble to the *Christians*; and that the Thought of the *Leather-Garters* then occurring to him, he looked on it as a Token of his Prayers being heard, and as a Presage of his happy Success. Who knows but he gave those Garters to his Soldiers, in Memory of That of the King of *Lydia's* Daughter? which, according to the Account of her miraculous Deliverance, *S. George*, her Deliverer, asked of her to tie about the Neck of the vanquished Dragon, to lead him in Triumph to *Silena*, as we somewhere read *S. Romain* did his Stole about that of another such voracious Monster, which he led in the same Manner to the City of *Roan*.

However, the blue Ribbon, these Garters, and the Saint whom *Richard* invoked, are the only Proofs Authors give us of that Prince's having instituted *the Order of the Garter*, under the Patronage of *S. George*; but they neither give us any Account of its Statutes, or Ceremonies used in Conferring it, or so much as name any one Knight he ever created. Others tell us, with more Appearance of Truth, that he

H

had

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

had an Intention to institute such an Order, but was prevented by his long Confinement, by the War he was engaged in with the King of *France*, and at length by Death itself, which followed soon after the Truce he had concluded with that Prince.

As the Expedition of *Richard* to the *Holy Land* is so variously related, and as there are several Particulars worth observing, I shall here insert some few, which I received from Authors who have treated of them with the least Partiality. He had agreed, as I have already said, to this Expedition with *Philip*, before he left *France*, and Preparations were accordingly made; their Subjects expressed no less Zeal for it than themselves, and gloried either in going in Person, or advancing Money for that War with the *Infidels*. *Richard*, having regulated his domestick Affairs, committed the Regency of the Kingdom to *Longchamp*, his High-Chancellour, and the Bishop of *Durham*; and, having given his Brother *John* six Earldoms to keep him quiet in his Absence, he again crossed the Seas, and met *Philip* at *Vezley*. They took the same Colours which this Monarch and *Henry* had chosen at *Gisors*, and appointed their Rendezvous at *Messina*, where they joined about the latter end of *September*, 1190, and wintered in that City. *Richard* having demanded Satisfaction of *Tankred*, for his ill Usage to his Sister *Joanna*\*, Queen Dowager of *Sicily*; and *Tankred* giving him only fine airy Promises, he took Possession of the Castle of *Messina*; and obliged that Prince by a Treaty, not only to pay the Widow twenty thousand Ounces of Gold for her Dowry, and the same Sum to himself for certain Legacies, which *William the Good* had left by Will to *Henry the Second*, his Father, but also to fit out six large Ships and ten Gallies for the Service of the *Holy War*. Scarce was this Difference accommodated, than *Tankred* treacherously bred another between *Philip* and *Richard*, instilling it into the latter, that *Philip* was hatching an ill Design against him; and even shewed him a Letter, which he pretended to have received from the Duke of *Bourgogne*, that seemed to confirm it, Upon which these two Monarchs had very high Words, *Philip*, denying all, told *Richard* he plainly perceived, that he was only seeking a Pretence to dissolve their Union, of which his Declining to marry his Sister *Alice* was a sufficient Proof. *Richard* replied downright, that he had no Mind to Marry a Princess, who had a Child by his Father, which he offered to prove; and declared he was so far from having any such Intention, that he would not leave *Messina* 'till the Arrival of *Berengualle*, Princess of *Navar*, with whom he had already concluded a Marriage: And thus, after other Words full as uncivil, they parted abruptly. However, their Friends on both Sides, considering how fatal a Rupture between two such powerful Princes might prove, bestirred themselves so much in the Affair, that

\* She was married in the Year 1176 to *William the Second*, King of *Sicily*, surnamed the Good.

that they brought them at last to a Reconciliation; and how sincere it was on the Part of *Philip* the Sequel will discover, who steered his Course first to *Acres*, where he soon arrived with a Fleet and Army considerable indeed, but much inferior to that of *Richard*, who waited for *Beren-gualle*. This Princess being soon after arrived with *Eleonora*, her Mother-in-Law, who had negotiated the Marriage between her and her Son, he took her on-board, and the Queen Dowager his Sister, who would accompany him to *Palestine*. As for his Mother, she returned home, and he set sail with a Fleet of 150 Ships, 52 Gallies, and a great Number of other Vessels and Transports.

If he had not so quick and favourable a Passage as *Philip*, he had a more prosperous one; a Storm having dispersed his Fleet, between *Rhodes* and *Cyprus*, drove part of them ashore on this Island, then under the Dominion of *Isaac de Comene* \*. This King, or rather Usurper, instead of assisting the *English*, imprisoned those that were ship-wrecked, and seized on all that could be saved out of their Vessels. *Richard* having gathered his scattered Troops together near this Island, and hearing, with Indignation, of the ill Treatment his People had received from *Isaac*, sent to demand the Restitution of the Prisoners with their Effects; but, receiving an insolent Refusal, he landed a Body of his Troops on shore, with which he defeated those that opposed him. *Isaac* fled and retired to *Melazzo*, where *Richard* pursued him, attacked the City, and at the first Assault took him Prisoner, with his only Daughter. Upon his Request not to be put in Irons, *Richard* literally granted it, ordering him to be bound in Silver-Fetters in their stead. This sudden and happy Success inspired *Richard* with the Thought of taking the whole Island, which he enterprised and accomplished with the *veni, vidi, vici* of *Cæsar*, without any Difficulty or Loss of Time; for the *Cyprians*, weary of the Tyranny of *Isaac*, a Prince avaritious, cruel, and proud, submitted readily to *Richard*, as to their Deliverer. He confirmed their Privileges, and, leaving them some Troops for the Custody of the Places, sent *Isaac* to *Tripoli* of *Syria* under a strong Guard; his Daughter he gave to the Queen, and set sail for *Acres*. This Place had held out a long tedious Siege †. It seemed as if the Glory of carrying it was reserved for the Courage and Bravery of *Richard*, who from thence was surnamed *Lion's Heart*: However, if his Valour on that Occasion merited the Admiration of all the Christians in general, it drew on him the Envy and Jealousy of other Princes and Generals, who commanded their Armies there at that *Holy War*, which his too great Pride and Vanity served but to heighten; and a particular Occurrence at the Taking of that

Place

\* *Isaac* was of the *Comenian* Family, who, after he had been some Time Vice-Roy of *Cyprus*, under the Emperour of *Constantinople*, usurped the supreme Authority, and assumed the Title of Emperour.

† The Siege is said to have lasted above two Years, and the Author of *Richard's Voyage* affirms, that no less than 300,000 Christians perished thereat.



Place proved fatal to the common Cause, but most to his own Person *Leopold*, Duke of *Austria*, in an Assault made by the Besiegers, caused his Banner to be fixed on a Tower from whence his Soldiers had dislodged the Enemy, which *Richard* taking as an Affront to himself and King *Philip*, who, having the greatest number of Troops †, commanded in chief, sent some of his Men to pull it down, who not only did so, but also trampled it under their Feet. The Duke resented this as highly as can be imagined; but, not having Courage enough to demand an honourable tho' dangerous Satisfaction, he stifled his Resentment 'till a proper Opportunity of being revenged with Safety, whether it were consistent with Honour or not, which soon after presented itself to him. However, the good Harmony, re-established at *Messina* between *Richard* and *Philip*, 'till now appeared very sincere, when fresh Quarrels arose; by which, at least, one may see how little Sincerity there was on *Philip's* Side, who framed Pretences to return to *France*. He had restored *Richard* all the Places which he had taken from his Father, during the late War between them, according to Contract; though it was much questioned whether he would ever have done it, had he not thought himself incapable of defending them against so brave a Prince as *Richard*, especially whilst he was upon the Spot with Sword in Hand: Therefore he now took Occasion to return Home, that he might take the Advantage of his Absence, the Death of the Earl of *Flanders*, and his own Illness furnishing him with good Pretences. *Philip* demanded of *Richard* the Half of the Kingdom of *Cyprus*, or of the Money, at least, for which he had sold it to the *Templers*, by virtue of their Agreement to share equally all their Conquests. *Richard* replied, that that Article of their Contract related only to their Conquests over the Infidels; and that his taking Possession of all that belonged to the Earl of *Flanders*, (who died at the Siege of *Acres*) without ever thinking to make any Division thereof with him, was a manifest Testimony that he meant no otherwise himself. Hence they began on all Occasions to oppose one another. The Right of the Crown of *Jerusalem* being then in Dispute between *Conrard*, Marquis of *Montferrat*, and *Guy de Lusingham*, *Philip* declared for the first, and *Richard* for the latter. The Duke of *Austria*, who never slipped any Opportunity of blowing the Fire, did not fail to join *Philip*, who became at last as jealous of *Richard* as the other Princes and Generals were, and took a final Resolution to return to *France*, which he communicated to *Richard*, with whom he preserved a Shew of Civility and Friendship, who testified his Surprise thereat; and complained of it as a Breach of an Article of their Agreement, namely, That *neither of them should return into Europe, 'till they had retaken Jerusalem, or without the other's Consent*. This made *Richard* suspect what he found but too true in the

End.

\* *Richard* alone had above 30,000 fighting Men.

End. *Philip* reasoned with him the Necessity of his going to take Possession of *Artois*, which fell to him by the Death of the Earl of *Flanders*, the ill State of his Health, which in that contrary Climate he could not recover, as *Richard* had of his; (for it must be observed, that in the midst of their Differences and Contests, they both fell ill, which Sickneſs proved a sort of a Truce.) However, *Philip*, to remove all his Suspicions, and dispel the Fears he might entertain concerning his Return, as well as to encourage him to remain behind, and continue the War with the Infidels, publicly renewed to him, before the Prelates and chief Commanders of the Christian Army, that Part of the Oath in particular, which they had reciprocally made in *France*, viz. *That neither of them should attack, or cause to be attacked, directly or indirectly, any of the Dominions of the other before their Return home, nor within 40 Days after.* He added, *That he would leave 10,000 Men of his best Troops under the Command of the Duke of Burgundy, with Orders to pay Richard the same Obedience as to himself;* which the Duke being then present promised to do; upon which *Richard* consented to *Philip's* Departure. But this solemn Oath, these fair Promises, and the specious Shew of Sincerity, tended only to amuse the deluded King; for scarce was *Philip* out of sight, but the Duke of *Burgundy*, the Marquis of *Montferrat*, and the Duke of *Austria*, were continually caballing against him, to obstruct his Measures; which he, unsuspecting his being concerned in their Conspiracy, always freely imparted to the first. However, inspite of all Opposition, with an Army incomparably less than *Saladin's*, he gained a compleat Victory over him, the Fruits of which were *Ascalon*, *Joppa* and *Cesarea*. Afterwards he marched towards *Jerusalem*, and met on his way the Babylonian Caravan, guarded by 10,000 Horse, which he put to flight, and distributed the immense Spoil, consisting of 3000 laden Camels and 4000 Horses, among his Soldiers; reserving to himself only a gold Ring, which he always wore on his Finger from that Time to the Day of his Death. He would have taken *Jerusalem*, had not the Division of the Christian Troops hindered, by the Difertion of the Dukes of *Austria* and *Burgundy*, who returned home with theirs, and the Marquis of *Montferrat* absolutely refusing him his Assistance.

But all this was nothing to the Danger he heard his Dominions in *Europe* were in, which obliged him to make a Truce with *Saladin*, and return home; but he left a great Part of his best Troops under the Command of *Guy de Lusingham*, lest the Sultan should break it in his Absence: He also put him in Possession of the Kingdom of *Cyprus*, upon the reiterated Complaints of the Islanders against the new Masters he had given them, and then set sail. But the Galley, on board which he was, having been driven by a Tempest on the Coast of *Istria*, run ashore, and he narrowly saved his Life to lose his Liberty; for, ordering

ing his Fleet to proceed directly for *England*, he resolved for Speed's Sake to go by Land, and pass *incognito*, with a few Servants disguised like Pilgrims, through the Duke of *Austria's* Dominions: But having been betrayed, or known by some of the Duke's People, he was taken in Bed at a Village where he lay, and delivered into his Hands. The Duke, overjoyed at this Opportunity of revenging himself with ample Interest, the better to secure his Prey, sent him to the Emperour, who kept him near two Years before he released him, which at last he was prevailed on to do, for no less a Price than 150,000 Florins. It is well known, what Efforts his Brother *John* made during his Confinement, to invade his Throne; what Sums he and King *Philip* gave, or sent Offers of, by the Bishop of *Beauvais*, both to the Emperour and the Duke, to have him kept longer, or detained in perpetual Imprisonment. Nor is any one ignorant, that *Philip* had scarce returned home, but, unmindful of his Oaths, he seized on *Gisors*, *Evreux* and all *Vexin*: Wherefore I leave this Digression to return to my Subject.

All that can be concluded, from the afore-mentioned Writings and Opinions, is, that *Richard* furnished the World with the *Blue Ribbon*, the *Garters*, and the *Saint*, for the Institution of the Order of the *Garter*: Some however, without regarding that, or going so far for its Origin, attribute it to *Edward the Third* on the following Occasion. That Monarch, they say, being at a Ball, where the Countess of *Salisbury* chanced to drop her Garter as she was dancing, he took it up, and, observing her blush and many of the Company smile, he said with a serious and loud Voice, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*, i. e. *Evil be to him, that evil thinks*; and it is the received Opinion, that in Memory of this Accident he instituted this Order, with those very Words for the Device. Others, willing to give this Order an Origin more worthy of the Lustre it has preserved to this Time, say, that *Edward* instituted it at the Battle of *Cressy*, which he gained over *Philip de Valois*, one of the most famous and glorious Battles that the *English* Nation ever won. Some will have it, that *Edward* had given at that Time for the *Parole S. George and Garter*; others, that he had ordered a Garter to be tied about a Lance for the Signal of Battle: But as to this the first object, that the Motto, which perfectly agrees with the Circumstance at the Ball, has no Manner of Affinity with Battles and bloody Actions; to which Objection the latter reply, that *Edward* only completed what *Richard* began, and that but by Degrees and at different Times and Occasions; adding, that it was in Memory of *Richard's* Leather-Garters, which he gave for the Signal of Battle; and that, according to all Appearance, he invoked *S. George*, as he did afterwards at the Siege of *Calais*; nay, that he did not put his Order under the Protection of that Saint, 'till after he had taken the Place. As to the Device, they grant it agrees very well with the Adventure at the Ball, allowing, that as  
Gallan-

Gallantries were in those Days oftentimes mixt with the Bravery of Knighthood, one of the Duties of which was, to defend the Honour of the fair Sex; he might, in Complaisance to the Countess, and to shew at the same Time the Innocency of his Thoughts, pronounce those Words at taking up her Garter, and make them the Motto of this Order: But they still insist, that he adorned this Institution with the Garter a long Time after, that it was the last Ornament bestowed on it, and the Point of Perfection to which it is arrived at this Day. Some even date the Adventure from one of the famous Balls which he gave for the Diversion of his royal Prisoners, or rather those of his Son, the Prince of *Wales*, surnamed *the Black Prince*\*, viz. *John the First*, King of *France*, with *Philip* his fourth Son, and the chief of his Nobility, taken by that Prince at the Battle of *Montpertuis*: They pretend, I say, that the Adventure happened only then, and in that very Ball; not only differing in respect of the Time and Circumstances, but even in the Countess's Christian Name, some saying it was *Katherine*, others *Joan*: But these are only Conjectures without any positive Proofs, which shew the Inaccuracy of former Writers.

There are many Circumstances so very remarkable at and after the Siege of *Calais*, and the Battle of *Montpertuis*, that I am not willing to decline repeating some of them. As to the Opinion above-mentioned, that *Edward* did not put this Order under the Patronage of *S. George*, 'till after the Taking of *Calais*; and that it was on that Occasion, all the Reason they give; who assert it, is, that this Prince and his Army, being greatly perplexed at the Length and Difficulty of the Siege, publicly invoked aloud the Succour of that *Saint*; that the Place having yielded soon after, he took it as a Sign his Prayers were heard, caused publick Thanks to be given to Heaven for it in his Camp, and vowed from that Moment to consecrate this Order to that *Saint*, and call it by his Name, as he did, at his Arrival at *Windsor*; and also dedicated a magnificent Chapel there to him, which is called *S. George's-Chapel* to this Day. However, the following Circumstance does not agree with that Prince's Devotion, nor is it any Honour to his Memory; for the Besieged being reduced to capitulate, for want of Relief and Provisions, he not only denied them all other Terms save their Lives, but even demanded six of their Burgers, who he absolutely insisted should come and bring him the Keys of the City barefooted, in their Shirts, with Halters about their Necks, to be hanged in his Camp, which he required of the Inhabitants as a Sacrifice to his Vengeance, for their long and obstinate Persistence. Not all the Remonstrances they could make concerning their Duty as Subjects and Soldiers, not all their Submission or Prayers could in the least soften his Anger, or cause him to revoke that cruel Sentence; but the Choice of the Victims he left to the

\* The Prince of *Wales* was surnamed *the Black Prince*, because he always wore Black Armour.

the Inhabitants themselves. It is easier to imagine than describe their Consternation, when one of the most considerable among them, called *Eustace de S. Pierre*, voluntarily offered himself to be one of the six: So generous an Act affecting all the rest, five more were quickly found, who, after his Example, devoted themselves for the Safety of their Citizens. Accordingly six generous Burgers came out of the City, and, in the Manner *Edward* had prescribed \*, presented him with the Keys thereof, casting themselves at his Feet and imploring Mercy, who seemed to be the only Person such a Spectacle could not move; and notwithstanding the Intercession of the Prince of *Wales*, who had contributed so much to his Glory, in the Battle of *Cressy*, in this very Siege, and on so many other Occasions; notwithstanding the Intreaties of the Lords, who were near him, and the Officers of his Army, who all admired the Generosity of those innocent Victims, which did not deserve a less Recompence than Pardon, he ordered the Execution: But the Queen, who was come to him a few Days before, to bring the News herself of the King of *Scotland's* Defeat, whom she had imprisoned in the Tower of *London*, hearing of it, came out of her Tent, ran to him and cast herself at his Feet, conjuring him, with Tears in her Eyes, by the happy Success with which Heaven had blessed their Arms against their Enemies, and by their conjugal Love, to grant his Pardon to those unfortunate brave Men; nor would she rise 'till she had obtained her Suit. That good Princess, not content with having saved their Lives, ordered Cloaths to be brought them, entertained them in her Tent, and, after a thousand other Marks of her royal Bounty, dismissed them with a Present of six Pieces of Gold each.

However, *Edward* did not institute this Order, or put it only under the Patronage of *S. George*, as some affirm, immediately after the Taking of *Calais*; for that Prince, having placed an English Garrison in that City under the Command of *Almeri de Padua*, a *Lombardian*, who had signalized himself in his Service, made a Truce with *Philip de Valois*, and departed for *London*; where most Part of his Time was taken up with all Sorts of Diversions, such as Pageants, Balls, Tournaments, &c. and receiving the Compliments of his Friends on his happy Successes; so far that Ambassadors were sent from *Germany* to offer him the Imperial Crown, which he refused. He was still there, when the Plague caused publick Prayers to take place of those Diversions; when, in the Beginning of the Year 1349, he received Intelligence, that *Philip*, having corrupted *Almeri*, had gathered together some Troops to surprise the City of *Calais*. This Breach of the Truce is differently related; some say, that *Edward*, on the first Notice thereof, sent for the Governour, who had already received 20,000 Crowns of the Lord  
Mont-

\* Some say, that of their own Accord they sent out six Burgers in that Manner, to move the Compassion of *Edward*.

*Montmorency*, as Part of the Price of his Treachery, and had secretly introduced a hundred *Frenchmen* into the Town; that the King, thinking it proper to dissemble with him, received him very graciously, promising him his Pardon and the Continuance of his Favour; also telling him, he might keep the Money he had received of the *French*, since it was not a greater Crime for him to do so, than for them so dishonourably to break the Truce, in Violation of a solemn Treaty; and further, that he should return to amuse them, 'till he had passed the Sea with a Body of Troops, and should be near at hand to fall on them just at the Time appointed for the Surrender of the Place. Others affirm, that the Governour, whether touched with some Remorse of Conscience and Honour, or fearing his Treachery was discovered, informed *Edward* of the whole Affair by a Letter, wherein he made great Protestations of Fidelity, praying his Majesty to send some of his Generals, with Troops, that might be present in the City at the Time he would set to admit the Enemies, according to the Scheme he had laid with the Lords *Montmorency* and *Charny*. But be this as it will, the King, who had no mind to send where he could be himself, went there *incognito*, with the Prince of *Wales* and 800 Men in Arms, and arrived in the Town the Evening before the Day on which the Governour had appointed to deliver up the Place. The next Morning, by Break of Day, the King and Prince went out separately at the same Time, each taking about a thousand choice Soldiers, through the same Gates which *Ribaumont* and *Charny*, who severally commanded a small Body of Troops, were to enter, who lay in Ambush in the Neighbourhood, waiting the Signal which *Almeri* had engaged to give for that Purpose; to wit, *Ribaumont* near the Gate the King went out at, and *Charny* near that through which the Prince passed. They fell so timely upon their Enemies, and charged them so vigorously, that they soon defeated them. The King took *Ribaumont*, and the Prince made *Charny* Prisoner with many others, and killed near 800 Men, ordering the two Commanders, and the rest they had taken, to be carried into the City, which they expected to be Masters of a few Hours afore. *Edward*, not thinking fit to trust *Almeri* any longer with the Custody of that important Place, committed the Government of it to *John de Beauchamp*, younger Son of *Guy* of that Name, Earl of *Warwick*. This was all the Revenge he took on the interested Temptation of *Almeri*, who unfortunately falling the following Year into the Hands of the *French*, they made him pay cruelly dear for it, tearing him to Pieces by four Horses.

*Philip*, having thus failed in his Attempt, sent to assure *Edward*, that he had no Hand in what passed between *Almeri* and the Lords *Montmorency* and *Charny*; whether the latter believed him or not, I cannot tell, but I am very certain they agreed to the Continuation of

K

the

the Truce for a Year\*, and *Philip* dying the next, it was renewed between his eldest Son *John* and *Edward* for four Years longer; but near the Expiration of that Term, an Accident caused a Breach, and gave Occasion to the Battle of *Montpertuis*, which I am going to relate. *Edward*, on a true or false Information, that *John* had given the Investiture of the Dutchy of *Guyenne* to the *Dauphin*, his Son *Charles*, gave it also to his, the Prince of *Wales*, leaving him to defend his Right with his Sword; and whilst this Prince was preparing to renew the War in *Guyenne*, King *Edward* went to drive on all Sorts of Hostilities in *Boulonnois* and *Artois*; but the *Scots* having taken the Opportunity of his Absence to surprise *Berwick*, he hastened back to *England*, where he represented to his Parliament their Treachery and Infringement of a Treaty just upon being ratified, by which their King was to be set at Liberty; and obtained a Subsidy, which enabling him to raise a great Army, he marched against them and retook the Place, they forsaking it at his Approach.

While *Edward* was in pursuit of the *Scots*, and ravaging their Country, the Prince of *Wales* made an Irruption into *Languedoc*, ravaged that Province, and returned to *Bordeaux* laden with Spoils. Afterwards he took the Field again with only 12,000 Men, and having passed through *Perigord* and *Limosin*, he entered *Berry*, which he put under Contribution. The King of *France* was not asleep all this while, but had formed a noble Army consisting of above 60,000 Men, in which were his four Sons, and the Chief of his Nobility. It is said, that, to encourage them to merit Honours by exerting their utmost Efforts of Courage and Valour, he instituted the *Order of the Star*, before he began his March, and conferred it on several Persons, who had already distinguished themselves by their Bravery on many Occasions. At first he marched against the King of *England*, whose sudden Retreat engaged him to turn his March against the Prince of *Wales*, who, not so soon expecting such a large Company, and not being prepared for their Reception, resolved to retire the shortest Way to *Bordeaux*; but *John*, who timely knew his Resolution, made such Haste, that he came up with him at *Montpertuis*†, about two or three Leagues from *Poitiers*. The Retreat of the Prince being hereby become impracticable, he intrenched as soon and as safe as he possibly could, which, it is said, he did very advantageously. Not thinking it proper to risque a Battle with so inferior a Number, he offered, at the Persuasion of two Cardinals, which the Pope had sent to mediate an Accommodation between them, to repair all the Damages he had done in *France*, and to refrain from any Act of Hostility for the Space of seven Years; but *John*, whose

Supe-

\* It was immediately, or a few Mouths after this Agreement, that *Edward* established this Order, according to the Date of its Statutes.

† *Montpertuis* is scarce known in Geography, but by the famous Battle fought there between the King of *France* and the Prince of *Wales*.

Superiority flattered him with an easy and infallible Victory, could not be brought to accept these Offers, or to agree on any other Terms than his Surrendering himself and his whole Army at Discretion. To which the Prince boldly replied, that he would chuse rather to die Sword in Hand, than do a Thing so unworthy his Honour, and against the Glory of the *English* Nation. Then he made a short Speech to his little Army, to whom, among other Things proper to inspire them with the same Sentiments, he said, *That Victory depended less on Number than Bravery.* This Harangue made such an Impression on the Minds of his Officers and Soldiers, that they all, with one Voice, cried out, *Battle, Overcome, or Die.* He then drew them up in Order to receive Battle, and could hardly restrain them from giving it; but *John*, impatient for the Fight, gave Battle, and lost it\*. Such was this King's first Trial of his Courage since his Accession to the Throne, who exposed his Person every where; such was the Fate of him and his Troops who made incredible Efforts of Valour; such the Conduct of the Prince; such the Bravery of him and his Army, that in less than four Hours the whole *French* Army was utterly defeated. The King, his youngest Son *Philip* who fought by his Side, the Archbishop of *Sens*, the Earls of *Pontieu*, *Eu*, *Longueville*, *Vandome*, *Salbruck*, *Nassau Dampmartin*, *la Roche*, and a great Number of other Lords of Distinction were taken Prisoners. There were above 10,000 Men killed and dangerously wounded. The Chiefs among the former were the Dukes of *Bourbon* and *Athens*, Constable of *France*, the Marshal of *Nesle*, and above 60 others of the prime Nobility. The *English* Historians tell us, that the Number of Prisoners equalled that of the Conquerours; but though Accounts differ, some say, that there were above 30,000 Men killed and wounded. The victorious Prince, after publick Thanksgivings to Heaven for so happy and marvellous a Success, thanked his Troops in such Terms as gave them the Honour of the Day, without making the least Mention of himself. He possessed all his Father's excellent Perfections, but none of his Faults; he treated his Prisoners in that generous, unaffected and affable Manner which was so natural to him, ordering particular Care to be taken of the wounded. It is related by credible Authors, that he shewed King *John* the same Respect a Subject owes to his Sovereign, so far as to serve him at Table, excusing himself from sitting down with him: On the contrary, he stood all the while uncovered, and entertained him with such Discourses as served to divert the Thoughts of his Misfortune; so that the King, who was charmed with them, told him, that since it was his Lot to be vanquished, he esteemed it a Happiness to be taken by so brave a Prince. He did not carry his noble Prisoners first to *London*, but kept them

\* This Battle was fought on the 19th of September, 1356; and there were above eight Frenchmen to one Englishman.



them at *Bourdeaux*, where he remained all the Winter. When he made his Entry with them through *London* in the Spring, he refused the Honours offered to himself, saying, that those, which should be done to King *John*, would be more agreeable to him; and indeed he appeared more like the Prisoner than the Conquerour; for it is said he rode on a little black Nag at the left Hand of King *John*, who had his Son *Philip* at his right, both mounted on fine Horses adorned with stately Trappings; and the rest of the noble Prisoners were mounted accordingly. *Henry Picard*\*, then Lord Mayor, with the Sheriffs and Aldermen in their Formalities, and the City-Pageants, went in great Pomp to receive them. The Citizens hung out all their Plate, Pictures, Tapestry and Armour, in the Streets through which they passed to the Palace of *Westminster*. King *Edward* gave him a cordial Welcome, and embraced him as tenderly as if he had been one of his most intimate Friends, come to pay him a Visit; he treated him on every Occasion in all respects as a King. He and his Son *Philip* were lodged in the Palace of *Savoy*†, which was magnificently furnished for his Reception. Nothing was wanting that might contribute to divert and comfort him, and the rest of his fellow Prisoners, who enjoyed as much Liberty as if they had not been so; the *English* Nobility inviting them to Parties of Pleasure at their Entertainments, &c. and there were Tournaments, Balls, Pageants, and all sorts of agreeable Diversions to that End. Among the Tournaments that which *Edward* appointed at *Windsor*, on *S. George's Day*, has been looked on as the most magnificent that ever was in *England*. Among the Balls, those who pretend that the Motto (*Honi soit qui mal y pense*) was not added to the Garter 'till after the Battle of *Montpertuis*, think was that wherein the Countess of *Salisbury* dropt her Garter. Some indeed say, perhaps with less Foundation, that King *John* fell in Love with that Lady, either at this Ball or somewhere else; and that the Passion he entertained for her induced, in a great Measure, his Return to *England* in the Year 1363.

However, whether the Order of the Garter owes its Original to those of *Richard* at *Acres*, to that of *Edward* at *Cressy*, to that of the fair Countess, or to them all together, I do not pretend to determine; but it is most certain no Order has better preserved its Lustre and Fame, and retained the Rules of its Institution, without degenerating as to the

Num-

\* He was a very rich Wine-Merchant, who six Years after most splendidly entertained four Kings at once, viz. the King of *England*; the King of *France*, who had been set at Liberty by the Treaty of *Britanny*, in the Year 1360, and was come to pay a friendly Visit to this Monarch; the King of *Scotland*, who obtained his Freedom about the beginning of *John's* Captivity, or a little after his Arrival in *London*, in the Year 1357; and the King of *Cyprus*, who came to demand his Aid against the *Infidels*.

† The Palace takes its Name from *Peter* Earl of *Savoy*, whose Mansion-House it formerly was. King *John* was lodged again in it when he came to pay a Visit to King *Edward* in the latter end of the Year 1363, and died there of a Fever the 8th of *April*, 1364.

Number of the Knights, which has always been twenty six, since the Reign of King *Edward*, including the Sovereign of *England*, and remain so to this Day.

The Candidates must be at least Peers of the Realm, if they be *English* or Subjects, such as his Grace the Earl of *Burlington*, the right honourable the Lord *Philip Stanhope*, Earl of *Chesterfield*, who received it lately, on the same Day with his Royal Highness Prince *William*, second Son of his present Majesty King *George the Second*. Sir ROBERT WALPOLE is the ONLY *Exception to this Rule*, since the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*; King *George the First*, in Consideration of his SERVICES bestowing the GARTER on him, in the Year 1726, vacant by the Death of the Duke of *Kingston*. As to Foreigners I never observed, that this Order was conferred on any one less than a Prince. It hath been so considerable, that even Emperours and Kings have not thought it below their Dignity to court the Honour, and to accept it whenever it was offered them. Since *Edward the Third*, there have been 8 Emperours, 27 Kings, and a far greater Number of other sovereign Princes, who have received it. The Ceremonies observed at the Installment of these Knights, being described by so many Pens, are so well known, that it is the less necessary for me to enlarge much thereon.

When it pleases the Sovereign to elect a Knight Companion, the Chancellour draws up Letters, which being signed with the King's own Hand, and sealed with the small Seal of the Order, he sends them to him by *Garter*, Principal King at Arms. These Letters are to advise him of his Election and invite him to repair before his Sovereign, to receive the intended Honour, and meet the Companions of the Order, who are to be assembled for that Purpose on such a Day, N, in a Chapter held at *Windfor* Castle; and on such another Day, N, the same assemble, at the same Place, to have the whole Ceremony performed. The first Day the Garter \* is put on his left Leg under the Knee, and the Sovereign puts the Collar of the Order † about his Neck, the Prelate, at the same Time, giving him a short Exhortation. The second Day he appears in a Silver-Cloth Doublet, and is invested with the Robes of the Order, which are rich and magnificent; then the Sword is girt about him, and the Prelate repeats his Admonition, the Substance of which is, *That he would receive the Order as an Addition of Honour, and an Encouragement to be ready to sacrifice his Life for the Defence of the Christian Faith, the King's Service, and all Persons unjustly at-*

L

tacked

\* The Garter is made of blue Silk, with the Motto wrought in Gold-Letters.

† The Collar is a broad blue Ribbon, to which hangs the Image of S. *George* fighting the Dragon, (Plate 1. Figure 10.) but the Garter, which surrounds it, is an Oval, as large as the Palm of one's Hand, all of pure massy Gold, finely wrought in *Relievo*; and is a Present of the Sovereign to the new Knight Companion, who is always to wear it in publick, as well as the Garter, on the left Shoulder, Belt-Fashion. Those who will be at the Expence may enrich the *George* with precious Stones.

*tacked and oppressed.* That done, a Cap of black Velvet, furrounded with a Band of pretious Stones, and surmounted with a Plume of Feathers, is delivered to him, in which Manner he is conducted to S. George's Church, where he takes the Oath agreeable to the Admonition, and his Stall is assigned him in the Choir; among those of the Knights Companions of the Order.

Over the Stall of every Knight are placed his Banner, Helmet, Crest; Sword, and a Plate with his Name and Titles engraved thereon, where they remain during his whole Life, unless he commits some great Crime; for then they are removed, himself degraded, and punished according to the Nature of his Offence, and it is written against his Name in the Register *Proditor*, &c. To this Order belong a great and small Seal; a Chancellour, who is the Bishop of *Salisbury*; a Prelate, who is the Bishop of *Winchester*; a principal King at Arms, who is called *Garter*; a Register, who is the Dean of *Windsor*; with 12 grand Canons, and several petty Canons, Virgers, &c. 26 poor Knights, as they are called, though not properly so, being only poor Gentlemen wounded in War, or who have done some Services to the Crown; these are maintained, lodged and cloathed at the Expence of the Order; their Habit is a kind of a Cassock of red Cloth, and a large Mantle of purple Colour, with S. George's Cross on the left Shoulder; they have their Seats under those of the Knights in the Choir of the Church, which they are obliged to frequent twice a Day, to pray for the Sovereign and the rest of the Knights.

Hearing and reading the History of so many surprising Exploits attributed to *George of Cappadocia*, and seeing his Image conformable thereto in the Churches, in the Oratories, and on the Badges of so many Orders instituted under his Name and Patronage, which exceed all those under all the other Saints put together, who would not really take him to be the true S. George, instead of a very wicked Man, a worse Christian and a Heritiek, &c. Yet several orthodox Writers, even of those who have canonized him, do not scruple to affirm the same. *Gregory of Naziance*, among others, writes of him, that he was of mean Extraction, most depraved Inclinations, and wicked Dispositions. *Epiphanius* severely reprov'd those who revered him as a Martyr of *Christ*; and, far from looking on him as such, he made it appear, that he justly suffered Death for his Robberies, Violences and Oppressions. Some pretend, that the right S. George was of *Candia*, born in the old Castle of the City or Island of that Name, from whence he was called *Pali-Castrite*\*; that *John Cantacuzen* created some Knights of his Order in a Church in that Island dedicated to him, where I have myself seen many who assume his Name to this Day. The *English* affirm, that the Patron

\* The modern *Greeks*, in their Language, call the oldest Castle *Pali-Castris*, in the City of *Candia*, and even some other Towns, where perhaps this Saint was born.

Patron of *England*, and of the Order of the Garter, was *George*, Bishop of *Austria*, who contributed most to the Re-establishment of *Christianity* in *England*, where they believe it was first brought by the Apostles, and even to the Conversion of the Pagan *Saxons*, who had almost extinguished it; as also of those who were the most fiery and powerful Persecutors of the Christian Faith, who had demolished and burnt all the Churches and Monasteries wherever their Arms prevailed.

As to the Image of a Champion armed *Capapee* encountering a Dragon, all the learned disinterested Divines assure us, it is but an Allegory, such as the symbolical Representation of *S. Michael's* combating the Devil under the same Form; and that by the Dragon is meant the Angel of Darkness, and all the Enemies both of Church and State. They tell us, for Example, that *Sygismundus* afterwards instituted the *Dragon overturned*, under the Patronage of *S. George*, on occasion of his Victories over the *Turks*; that the Emperour *Maximilian*, having gained a signal Battle over the same, and some Persons having reported to him, that, during the greatest Heat of the Action, they saw a beautiful young Man, with a flaming Sword in his Hand, destroy abundance of the Infidels, instituted the Order of *S. George* in his Kingdoms, really supposing it was himself that fought; and gave as a Badge such an Image as is represented by other Orders established under his Name; that the Popes, *Alexander the Sixth* and *Paul the Third* did the same, after some Advantages gained by their Galleys over the Corsairs of *Barbary*, to encourage the Commanders and other Officers to exert their utmost Efforts of Bravery, to merit and acquire the Honour of their Orders; lastly, by the Dragon of all these Orders, we must understand the *Turks* and other *Mahometans* already subdued, or to be overcome. They add, that *George* of *Cappadocia*, far from being the Champion of *Christ*, was the Dragon of *Arianism*, the Champion of the Devil, who entered *Alexandria* armed *Capapee* with a Troop of Soldiers, whom *Constantius*, an *Arian* Prince, supplied him with; dispossessed *S. Athanasius* of his Bishoprick, placing himself in that See, and committed the greatest Cruelties and Injustices both upon the orthodox Christians and the Pagans. They also inform us, that all the pretended Miracles, of which the *Cappadocian* History is full, were the Work of the *Arians*, who likewise wrote the Hymn afore-mentioned.

As to the Churches and Chapels dedicated to *S. George* in *England*, they who have carefully examined the Dedications assure us, there is not one wherein the Word *Cappadocian* is mentioned; but whether they found those of *Ostien* or *Pali-Castrite* I cannot tell. As to the Hymn they say, it is only to be met with in an old Office of the Church of *Salisbury*; and suppose, that it might be brought into *England* with *Arianism*, which spread itself from East to West in many Parts of *Europe*, the Dragon whose poisonous Breath had infected that Church, as  
he

he had done many others \*. The Sticklers for the Allegory say, that by the royal Virgin, or the King of *Silene's* Daughter, is meant the Church, the chaste Spouse of Christ, or the Honour of Ladies which all the Orders of Knighthood are commanded and sworn to defend.

The symbolical Representation of *S. George* fighting the Dragon has been dressed up and explained according to the various Changes and Revolutions in the Church and State. King *Henry the Eighth*, having quarrelled with the Pope, declared himself Head of the Church; and held the Title of *Defender of the Faith*, which *Leo the Tenth* gave him, for having written against *Luther* in Defence of the Catholick Church, which Title is still retained by his Successors, as well as the Image of *S. George* for a Badge of the Order of the *Garter*. The Roman Pontiff at that Time was considered in *England*, especially by the most learned Divines, as the Dragon from whose Slavery King *Henry* had freed the Church and State, and recovered the Prerogatives of the Crown, which many of his Predecessors had not only attempted in vain, but with a great deal of Danger. There have been since the Reformation many Protestant Preachers and Writers, who assert the Pope to be the Dragon mentioned in the *Revelations of S. John*.

I am afraid my historical Digressions have frequently carried me too far from my Subject in respect to the preceeding Orders, I shall therefore in the following be more brief.

#### S E C T. VII.

##### *Of the Order of S. ANDREW.*

THE Order of *S. Andrew* in *Scotland* is one of the most antient, according to *John Lesley*, Bishop of *Ross*; who will have it, that *Acains*, King of that Country, was the first Institutor thereof; and, that which gave Rise to it, was a luminous Cross, like that whereon *S. Andrew* suffered Martyrdom, which appeared in the Air to *Hungus*, King of the *Picts*, his Ally, and to several Officers and Soldiers of their Army combined against *Athelstan*, King of *England*; adding, that this Apparition happened the Night before a Battle wherein the latter was defeated: But I believe the good Bishop is out in his Chronology, for I do not find in any History of *Great Britain*, which I have read, that the *Scots* ever won a Battle over *Athelstan* †, who ascended the Throne in the Year 841; or over that *Athelstan* who succeeded *Edward* surnamed *the Elder*, in the Year 929; but I find that the first was a natural

Son

\* In my last Passage through *Hungary* and *Transylvania* I saw some Churches wherein they still retained Prayers and Preaching according to the Doctrine of *Arianism*, among which was one very large at *Clausenburg*. See my second Vol.

† Among other Monuments of *Athelstan's* Piety, which in those Days chiefly consisted in building and endowing Monasteries and Churches, &c, was a Translation of the *New Testament* into the *Saxon* Language, which may be still seen in the Library of *Upsala* in *Sweden*, as I have already mentioned in my second Volume.

*Son of Ethelwolf*, King of *Essex*, and reigned at the same Time with his Father in *Kent*, and that he utterly defeated the *Danes* at *Okely* in the Year 852; after which there is no more Mention of him. Concerning the other *Athelstan* I read, that he was also a Bastard of the same King *Edward*, and defeated *Constantine*, King of *Scotland*, in the Year 849; or at least, gained such Advantages over him as reduced him to sue for a Peace, and to pay him Homage for his Kingdom. If any King of *Scotland* could be induced in those Times by the great Success of his Arms to establish such an Order, it was *Kennet the Second*, who to revenge his Father's Death, whom the *Picts* had not only slain, but also cut his dead Body in pieces, utterly exterminated that Nation, nothing remaining but the Memory thereof. On which Account this Prince is recorded in the History of *Scotland* as the Founder of that Monarchy.

However, without searching any further for the uncertain Origin of this Order, and passing over in silence what Figure it may have made afore the Reign of King *James the Sixth* of *Scotland*, and *First* of *England*, I shall only say, that this Monarch illustrated it, after having received the Orders of the *Garter* from *England*, of *S. Michael* from *France*, and of the *Golden Fleece* from *Spain*, by crossing it in the middle. It was very much decayed and neglected at Queen *Anne's* Accession to the Throne of *England*, but that Princess restored it to its primitive Splendour and Reputation.

This Order consists of a Sovereign and twelve Knights, in Imitation of *Jesus Christ* and his Apostles; they who receive this Honour ought to be Peers of the Realm, if they be *Scots*. The Collar is a broad green Ribbon, worn on the left Shoulder always in Publick, as that is of the *Garter*; to which hangs the Image of *S. Andrew* upon a Cross in a Circle of Gold, enamelled, vert; and on the Reverse, in the middle of a Star, this Device round a Thistle in golden Letters, *Nemo me impune lacessit*; which the Knights, on solemn Days and extraordinary Occasions, wear of pure Gold, enamelled, vert, fashioned into Thistles in Relievo, as Plate 1. N<sup>o</sup>. 11 and 12: And appendant to it is the same Apostle, as in the other. Their Habit is their Parliament-Robe, on the left Breast whereof is a Cross in the middle of a Star embroidered with Silver, and the Device alluding to a Thistle\*, which is in the Center. They wear always abroad the like Star on the same Side of their ordinary Coats, as the Knights of the *Garter* do theirs.

## S E C T. VIII.

*Of the Order of the Knights BARONNETS.*

THE Order of *Knights Baronets* was instituted by *James the First*, King of *England*. This Monarch, being desirous to secure  
M the

\* This Order is also called, the Order of the Thistle.

## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.

the Peace of *Ireland*, and make Arts flourish in that Kingdom, granted the Citizens of *London* the Possession of the Province of *Ulster*, with all the Privileges and Encouragements necessary for that Purpose, and for the Improvement of their Lands. They sent thither 300 Artisans and Handy-Craftsmen of all Professions, who had their Habitations assigned them at *Londonderry* and *Colarain*. He conferred this Order on some of the principal Citizens, who were at the Expence; and on the Officers who distinguished themselves in his Service in that Kingdom. This Order is conferred much after the same Manner as that of the *Knights Bachelors*; and they who receive it must be worth no less than 1000 Pounds Sterling *per annum*, who are also created by Patents under the Great-Seal. The Knights of this Order take place immediately after the Barons, and before all other Knights, except those of the *Garter*, those who are Privy-Counsellours and Knights *Bannerets*, (if any such are still in Being) and of such only they who are made under the royal Banner by the King in open War.

### S E C T. IX.

#### *Of the Order of the Knights* TEMPLARS.

THE Order of the *Knights Templars* appeared in the Year 1118 or 1119. They were so called, because they had their first Residence near the *Temple of Solomon*, or in some Apartments of the royal Palace of *Jerusalem*. They owed their Original to several Princes, Noblemen, and other zealous Persons, who went in Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*. *Godfrey of Bullen*, having taken that City, was proclaimed King by the *Croises*. This Prince, observing such vast Multitudes of Strangers resort thither, took particular Care to provide for their Security, and supply their Necessities. Some Lords, to second his Zeal, formed a Society of Persons, who devoted themselves to the Service of the Sick, to harbour the poor Pilgrims, and to provide other Necessaries, which Persons made three Vows, of *Poverty*, *Chastity* and *Obedience*. This Society was esteemed so useful to the Publick, that *Baldwin*, his Successour, resolved to transform it into a military Order, which was confirmed by Pope *Gelase*. They say it was this Prince, who gave the *Templars* Part of the Temple for their Residence, from whence they took their Name. They, who were received into this Order, swore on the *New Testament*, solemnly promising, *To defend the Holy Land at the Hazard of their Lives against the Infidels; to guard the great Roads for the Security of Pilgrims, of whatsoever Nation they might be*; and the rest according to the Form of other Orders afore established. After which a Sword was presented them with this Admonition, *Receive this Sword for the Defence of the Christian Faith, and the Servants of GOD, against all Mahometans and other Infidels*. They chose

chose a *Grand-Master* of the Order, whom they vested with an absolute Authority over themselves. Their ordinary Habit was a white Mantle, over a kind of a Cassock of the same Colour, with a red patriarchal Cross on the left Side; in a Word, as it is represented in Plate 1. Pope *Eugene the Third* gave them the Rule of *S. Augustine*. The Services which they did to the Pilgrims, and the Actions whereby they signalized themselves against the Infidels, acquired them such Fame, both in the East and West, that the Christian Princes and wealthy Lords seemed to outvie one another in encouraging them to continue their good Offices towards the Pilgrims, and Services for the Defence of the *Holy Land*: But all that served only to corrupt the very End and Design of their Institution, to render them unmindful of their Vows and Obligations, and to raise their Ambition. The extraordinary Power they had attained, which they tyrannically exercised over the Subjects, whom they got by their Arms as well as by the Gifts of Princes, and the immense Riches which they had heaped up, drew on them not only the Hatred of their own Subjects, but also the Envy and Jealousy of all the Christian Princes; especially of *Philip the Fair*, King of *France*, and Pope *Clement the Fifth*, over whom they gave the Preference to the Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, and at last caused their own Destruction: For the Abolition of their Order was resolved on in the Year 1306, in an Interview which that Monarch and that Pontiff had at *Lyon*; and the Examination of the Crimes laid to their Charge\* were referred to another Interview appointed the next Year at *Poitiers*. This Resolution was approved by the other Princes, but executed afterwards with much less Severity in *England* than in *France*. As their immense Riches† were imputed the greatest of their Crimes, of which the least Mention was made in that Examination, *Philip* was no sooner returned to *Paris*, than he arrested all the *Templars* in one Day, seized on all their Estates and Effects, and went to reside in the Temple himself. *Clement*, hearing this, took it very ill, that *Philip* should proceed thus without his Privy or Consent in an Affair which principally belonged to the Holy See, whose immediate Subjects, he said, the *Templars* were; and sent two Cardinals, requiring that the Prisoners with their Estates and Effects should all be remitted to him, or, at least, put in the Power of those Cardinals. *Philip* contented himself with sending him some of them, which

\* *Nesedy*, an *Italian*, whom the Grand-Master of the Order had condemned to perpetual Imprisonment for Heresy, and the Prior of *Montfaucon* in the Province of *Toulouse*, who had been sentenced by the Provost of *Paris* to suffer rigorous Pains for his disorderly Life, were their principal Accusers, and chief Instruments employed in their Destruction.

† *Pomerarius* says in his Chronicle, that he had seen in a Letter from *Clement the Fifth* to the Bishop of *Magdebourg*, these Words, *Erat enim voluntatis nostrae intentio Templariorum Bona ad Cameram nostram transferre*; For it was our Will and special Intention, that the Effects of the *Templars* should be delivered into our Treasury. And *William of Tyr* says, that in his Time there were above 300 Knights in the House of *Jerusalem*, besides Brothers and Servants without Number, immensely rich, who went Check by Jole with the King. *Matthew of Paris* adds, that they had, as well in the East as West, more than 9000 Houses which were as so many Lordships.



which were deemed the most culpable; however, they soon agreed about the Division of the Spoils of the Order. *Philip* caused the last Grand-Master and a great Number of other Knights to be burnt alive at *Paris*. The Pope condemning all the Order, without Exception, for the Crimes of which some private Knights were accused, sent his Mandates to all Princes in whose Dominions the *Templars* had Houses or Estates, to seize on them, and to leave the Disposal thereof to the Holy See. At the same Time he sent Legates to take Possession, and Inquisitors with Commission to examine the Persons of the Accused, that they might be punished according to the Nature of their Crimes. Among the Commissions of that Pontiff for this Purpose, he sent one into *England*, addressed to the Archbishop of *Canterbury* in the Year 1309; pursuant to which there was a Meeting of the Bishops in *London*, to examine several Knights charged with the like Crimes, for which those in *France* had been punished; but the Accusations not being well grounded, that Assembly declared them *Not Guilty*; neither were they of Opinion, that the Order ought to be abolished. The Verdict runs thus, *Nihil inventum est quod de jure videretur statum illorum annullare*; Nothing is produced which seems in Equity to countenance the Dissolution of their Order. Nevertheless it was suppressed by them after the general Abolition had been decreed by the Council of *Vienna*, in the *Delphinate*, in the Year 1311: But the Knights were used in *England* with greater Humanity than any where else, their Persons being disposed into divers Monasteries of religious Orders, and there maintained during their Lives. It is said, that *Thomas Woolsey*, Archbishop of *Tork*, shewed great Compassion on them, and was very bountiful to those of his own Diocese, of whom he took particular Care.

## S E C T. X.

*Of the TEUTONICK Order.*

THE *Teutonick Order* was formed much after the same Manner as the foregoing. A German Lord, no less zealous than rich, being in *Jerusalem*, built an Hospital there, for the Reception of his Countrymen, who resorted in great Numbers to the *Holy Land*. He added a Chapel to it, which was dedicated to the Blessed Virgin *Mary*, from whence the Knights were called *Maryan Knights* of the *Teutonick Hospital*. Several very considerable Persons of the same Nation joined with him in that pious and charitable Undertaking, obliging themselves to attend and relieve the sick Pilgrims in that Hospital. At their Admission they made the very same Vows as the *Templars* did\*, whom they even surpassed in Austerity, lying on Straw, and living on Bread and Water. Their Number increasing, as well as their Revenues by the Libe-

\* Of Poverty, Chastity and Obedience

Liberality of several Lords, they did not confine themselves to the Service of the Sick alone; but, after the Example of the *Templars*, they also sent to convoy the Pilgrims, and fight against the *Infidels*. However, this Society was not erected into an Order of Knighthood 'till after the Taking of the City of *Acres*. Their particular Care of the Sick and Wounded during the Siege, joined to the brave and valiant Actions, by which they signalized themselves against the *Saracens*, induced the Duke of *Suabia*, General of the *German Army*, to recommend them to the Emperour, *Henry the Sixth*, in a Letter, desiring him to institute it; which was readily granted by that Monarch, and confirmed by Pope *Celestin the Third*, who made those Vows and the Regimen, which they had themselves prescribed, the principal Obligations of the Order, and gave them also the Rule of *S. Augustine*. The Knights must be *Germans* and of noble Extraction, or who had enobled themselves by their bright and glorious Actions. Their Habit was almost like that of the *Templars* in Form, but black, with a Cross of the same Figure, as represented by Fig. 14, Plate 1, only it is white. Before they are invested, they are obliged to promise, with their Hand on the Evangelist, the same Things which were vowed by the *Templars*; and, in putting on the Mantle with the Cross, the Prelate says, *Ecce Crucem istam tibi damus, & si servas quæ promissisti, Deus te faciat cohæredem gloriæ æternæ*; Behold, we give you this Cross, and if you observe that which you have promised, God make you Coheir of eternal Glory. The first of their Grand-Masters was *Henry Walport*, which Place has been filled by several Sovereigns. They became not less rich than the *Templars*, neither did they fall short of them in degenerating from the Design of their Institution; they grew even more powerful, eclipsing the *Livonian Order*, or *Porte-Glaives*, 37 Years after its Apparition, which was reunited to theirs. They met with great Obstacles in their Expeditions by some Potentates, whose Jealousy they excited by the Conquest of *Prussia* and *Livonia*. They had more than once seen their Order on the Brink of falling; but the Court of *Rome*, to whom their Arms had acquired the Conversion of most of the Inhabitants of those Countries, with the Conquests they had made thereof, and where she established rich Bishopricks and Monasteries, the Valour of many of their Grand-Masters, and the Zeal of divers great Princes for the Propagation of the Christian Faith, all supported them. Among the most unhappy Blows there were three very dangerous ones; the first was the Battle of *Tuneberg*, which they lost in the Year 1410, with 40,000 Men, against *Ingello*, King of *Poland*, who caused the *Prussians* to revolt, and put them in a Condition to shake off the *Teutonic Yoke*; but this the other Potentates made up tolerably well by the Mediation of Treaties. The second was another Revolt of the same People sustained by King *Casimir*, which could not be accommodated but on Condi-

N

tion

tion the Knights would yield up to *Poland* that Part of *Prussia*, known to this Day by the Name of *Royal Prussia*, and pay Homage to that Crown for the rest. The last was in the Year 1525, when *Brandenburg*, their then Grand-Master, embraced the Reformation of *Luther*, and divided *Prussia* with his Uncle *Sygismond*, King of *Poland*. Several Knights followed his Example; the others retired into *Germany*, and chose *Walter* of *Cronberg* in his stead. This Change stript the Order of most of its Riches; however, its Credit and Fame was not hurt thereby, but subsist to this Day in such a Degree, that only the younger Sons of Princes and Lords of the first Rank are honoured therewith. Their Arms are a *Cross Potency Sable*, charged with a *Cross Argent*, in heart over all the *Imperial Eagle Sable*. These Arms at first were single, viz. *Argent*, a *Cross Sable*. *John* of *Bregna*, King of *Jerusalem*, granted thereto another *Cross* to be charged on *Sable*. *Frederick the Second*, under whose Empire this Order was established in *Germany*, surcharged that *Cross* with the *Imperial Eagle* in the middle. *Lewis the Ninth*, King of *France*, better known by the Name of *S. Lewis*, at his Return from his Expedition into *Palestine*, in the Year 1250, added to the Corners of the *Cross Sable*, the *Flower-de-Luce*, in Consideration of the numberless great Services the Knights had done for the common Cause of Christendom in general, and his Country in particular.

## S E C T. X.

*Of the Order of LIVONIA, or PORTE-GLAIVES.*

THE *Livonian* Order, commonly called *Porte-Glaives*, another Order of *German* Knights, was instituted in the Year 1204, by *Albert the Third*, Bishop of *Livonia*, and confirmed by Pope *Innocent the Third*. The Knights of this Order, in Latin *Ensisferi*, or Sword-Bearers, made the same Vows, and took the same Oaths as the two precedent Orders did, with this Addition, That they obliged themselves to defend the antient Habitation\* of the blessed Virgin *Mary*, whom the *Livonians*, embracing Christianity, chose for their Patroness, and the Order was entituled to possess, as their own Property, all the Countries belonging to the *Pagans*, which they could make themselves Masters of. The Ceremony of Conferring this Order was performed by striking the Candidate thrice on the Shoulder with a naked Sword, saying, *Accipe hunc Ensem pugnaturus pro Deo, pro Religione & pro Domicilio Mariae*; Take this Sword with a Resolution to fight for God, for Religion, and the Habitation of the blessed Virgin *Mary*; which an *English* Poet has thus Translated:

Take

\* Now called *Loretta* in *Italy*.

*Take thou this Sword out of my Hand,**To fight for God and Mary's Land,*

The Habit of these Knights was white, and differed only from that of the *Templars*, in that they bore on their Mantle two Swords and a Star *Gules in Sautoir*, represented by Figure 17, Plate 1. This Order lasted but 37 Years, as I have before hinted, being swallowed up by the *Teutonic* Order, with which it was incorporated.

## S E C T. XI.

*Of the Order of the BLACK EAGLE.*

**T**HE Order of the *Black Eagle* was instituted in the Year 1701, by *Frederick the First*, King of *Prussia* \*, on occasion of his Coronation and Advancement to the Regal Dignity. This Prince declared himself Grand-Master thereof, and fixed the Number of Knights to Thirty, besides the Princes of his royal Blood. None were to be received into this Order, of which Kings, Electours and Princes might be Members, unless they were nobly descended, who were bound to defend Religion and Justice, and protect the Widows and Orphans. The distinguishing Mark of this Order is a *Golden Cross*, enamelled, *Azure*; on each of its four Corners a *spread Eagle*, *Sablè*, hung on an Orange-Colour embroidered Ribbon on the left Shoulder; and on the same Side of their Coat a Silver embroidered Star, with an Eagle displayed in the middle, holding in one of his Claws a Laurel-Crown, and a Thunder-Bolt in the other, with this Motto, *Suum cuique*; Every Man his own.

## S E C T. XII.

*Of the Order of S. ANDREW in RUSSIA.*

**T**HE Order of *S. Andrew* in *Russia* was instituted in the Year 1699, by *Peter the First*, Czar of *Muscovy*, who, after his Victories over the *Swedes*, declared himself Emperour of both *Russia's*. It is the first Order of Knighthood established in that Country, and seems as if that Prince designed it to be the Epogue or Date of those Projects he had in view, and which the World has since seen him put in Execution. He had just then concluded a glorious Peace with the *Turks*, and thereby intended to honour those who had distinguished themselves in his Service during the Wars, or who were most in his Favour; and to rouse the Emulation of others to merit the same Honour, for which he had then prepared fair Opportunities and Prospects of Success. He could not have bestowed a more venerable and agreeable Name on this Order to the *Russians* in particular, because they have a standing Tradition,  
That

\* Some are of Opinion, that this Order was instituted in the Year 1685, by *Frederick the Third*, Electour of *Brandenbourg*, when he was only Electoral Prince. The distinguishing Mark of the Knights is a golden Cross, enamelled, *Azure*, with this Device, *Generositas*.

## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.

That the Apostle S. *Andrew* planted the Cross amongst them. The Collar of this Order is a blue Ribbon, to which hangs a Cross with the Image of that Saint, and these two Letters S. A. surmounted by an Eagle, and these Words, *Peter the First, Emperour of Russia, Preserver of the Country*. Prince *Alexander Menzicoff*, his Favourite, was the first on whom he conferred this Order; the last Subject he bestowed it on, not long before his Death, was Baron *Jagonzinsky*; and then on the Marquis of *Bonac*, a Foreigner. When I was in the Country, the Empress *Katherine* had, in the Year 1726, honoured two of her Subjects with the Order, viz. General *Butterlin*, and the *Knez Romadnosky*, her Privy Counsellour; and likewise to three Foreigners, namely, the Count *Bassewitz*, first Minister to the Duke of *Holstein*; the Count *John Sapicha Starostu Bobrusky*, Felt-Marshal; and to Baron *Marderfeld*, Envoy of *Prussia*. They reckon 25 Persons, who had received this Order between 1699 and 1726, among whom were the Kings of *Poland* and *Denmark*.

### S E C T. XIII.

#### Of the Order of S. KATHERINE.

THE Order of S. *Katherine* was also instituted by *Peter the First*, in the Year 1715, in favour of the Czarina, who took her Name from that Saint, on the Declaration of his Marriage. She was the first Person on whom he conferred this Order, with an ample Power to bestow it on such of her Sex whom she should think deserving. The Mark of the Order is a broad white Ribbon, to which is fixed a Medal enriched with precious Stones, which they wear over the right Shoulder, like that of the *Bath*, and adorned with the Image of S. *Katherine*\*, with this Motto, *Out of Love and Fidelity*. The Czarina received it immediately from the Czar, on the Day of its Institution, and gave it to Princess *Anne*, her eldest Daughter, in the Year 1725, when she was married to the Duke of *Holstein*; and also to the Princess *Elizabeth*, her other Daughter, on the same Day; afterwards, in the Year 1726, she conferred this Honour on the Dutcheßes of *Mecklenburgh* and *Courland*, and on the Princesses of *Pascova* and *Menzicoff*.

### S E C T. XIV.

#### Of the Order of S. ALEXANDER NEWSKY.

THE Order of S. *Alexander Newsky* was instituted by the Empress *Katherine*, the first of *June*, 1725; and the very Day and on the

\* The Order of this Name, according to some, was instituted in the Year 1063, others say 1200, for the Security of the Pilgrims, who, out of Devotion to this Saint, travelled to her Tomb on Mount *Sinai*. The Badge of this Order is represented by Figure 13, Plate 1, according to the last Description thereof.

the Account of the Princess *Anne's* Marriage with the Duke of *Holstein*, she created 19 Knights of this Order, some of whom were the principal Officers of her Army, others Members of her own Council; besides some of his Highness the Duke's Household; among the latter were the Baron *Stamke*, his Chancellour; Count *Bond*, his Great-Chamberlain; Mr. *Platen*, his Marshal; Mr. *Atlefield*, the chief Master of all his Game; and Mr. *Nareskin*, Lord Lieutenant of the Dutchy of *Holstein*. The same Year she also made five others; and in *September*, 1726, she encreased the Number by five more, when I was at *Petersburgh*. The last of her Creation was Monsieur *le Fort*, Envoy of *Poland*, whom she honoured with it on the 10th of the same Month. It has been my Misfortune to lose or mislay the Description of the Badge, and the Device of this Order, which that Minister, among other Civilities during my Stay in that City, had the Goodness to communicate to me, with the Ceremonies which were observed at the Installment: As therefore I have nothing but my Memory to trust to, I shall only handle them superficially, and as Uncertainties. I think the Collar is red, which the Knights wear embroidered on the left Shoulder, with a Cross of the same Colour, encircled with a Device in the *Sclavonian* Dialect, and in the middle a Star embroidered with Silver, on the left Side of their common Coats; but I dare be positive, that the Ceremonies are as short and plain as those of the two preceeding Orders, which is no more than the Sovereign's putting the Collar about the Candidate's Neck, embracing him, and saying, *Be thou a Knight in the Name of GOD, and S. ALEXANDER*. As to all other Particulars, allowing Novelty has commonly its Charms, that Empress could not have pitched on a Patron for her Order more agreeable to the Taste of her Subjects than this, who was one of the first Dukes and renowned Generals of their Ancestours, and who had greatly contributed towards the Establishment of Christianity amongst them, and the Settlement of the *Russian* Monarchy, in signalizing his Valour and Bravery against the *Pagans*, particularly those who bordered on the Lake *Ladoga*. He was surnamed *Newsky*, on Account of a great Victory gained by him over *Magnus*, King of *Sweden*, on the Banks of the River *Newva*. These People had a long Time solicited their Patriarchs to put him in the Canon of their Saints; for, besides the numerous heroick Actions during his Life Time, they reckoned up many Miracles wrought by him after his Decease. After that *Peter the First* had stripped their Patriarch of all spiritual Jurisdiction, and, in Imitation of the *Roman* Emperours, had declared himself Grand-Pontiff or High-Priest, they more eagerly solicited the Emperour in behalf of his Canonization; to which he acquiesced, and ordered a magnificent Monastery to be built on the Banks of the River *Newva*, (described in Plate 3.) to which he appropriated Part of the Revenues of several other Monasteries, which he had suppressed:

O

pressed : And caused his Relicts, in the Month of *August*, 1724, to be translated thither, with great Pomp and Veneration, declaring him a canonized Saint ; and ordered his venerable Ashes to be deposited in a Shrine placed in a small Chapel, 'till a stately Church, designed to be dedicated to him, could be finished, of which the Foundation was but just then laying, and which was not finished in the Year 1726. But I shall give a full Account of this Monastery in its proper Place.

## S E C T. XV.

*Of the Order of the WHITE EAGLE.*

THE Oder of the *White Eagle* in *Poland* was instituted\* in the Year 1704, or 1705, by *Augustus the Second*, the present King. The ill Estate of his Affairs, and the bad Success of his Arms against *Charles the Twelfth*, King of *Sweden*, gave Occasion for it ; he intending thereby to animate the *Polanders* of his Party to make fresh Efforts of their Bravery, in hopes of remedying their Misfortunes ; which was but a little before the unhappy Treaty with the *Swedish* Monarch, who wrested the Sceptre out of his Hand. The Badge of this Dignity is a Cross, enamelled, *Gules*, with eight Points, in a Silver-Circle, charged on one Side with a white Eagle, on whose Breast was another Cross, with the Electoral Arms ; on the Reverse is the King's Name in Cyphers, with this Device, *Pro fide, rege, & lege* ; For the Faith, the King, and the Law. The Collar, to which it hangs, is a blue embroidered Ribbon, which rests on the left Shoulder, as those I have spoke of before, except that of the *Bath*, which, without Disrespect to the Founders, is more commodiously placed on the right Shoulder, because the Badge then hangs on the Side the Sword is of. The Knights also wear on the left Breast of their Coats a Star embroidered with Gold, on which is a Cross *Argent*, with eight Points. The Motto on the King's Badge is *Pro fide, grege, & lege* ; For the Faith, the Flock, and the Law. This Order is become so desirable, that the greatest Lords, and even crowned Heads have thought it an Honour to receive it. The Czar and his Son, the Czarowitz, whom he put to Death, in the Manner I shall relate in its due Place, the Princes *Mezickoff*, and *Tubesky*, and Count *Tolsty*, &c. were the first of Foreigners, on whom it was conferred. Monsieur *le Fort*, in the Year 1726, presented in great Pomp, to the Empress *Katherine*, this Collar and Badge set with Brillants of very great Value.

## S E C T.

\* I should have said, resumed, for this Order was founded in the Year 1425, by *Uladislas the Fifth*, on the Marriage of his Son *Casimir* with *Anne*, Princess of *Lithuania*, who then became a *Christian*. The Knights wore a Chain of Gold about their Necks, to which hung an Eagle with a Silver Crown, reaching down to their Breasts, as is represented by Fig. 8, Plate 1.

## S E C T. XVI.

## Of the Order of the S T A R.

THE Order of the *Star* in *France*, according to some Writers, was instituted in the Year 1022, by King *Robert*, under the Patronage of the Blessed Virgin; others will have it instituted in the Year 1356, by King *John the First*; others again say it was instituted in Commemoration of the *Star*, which conducted the three Kings from the East to the Place where our Saviour was born. But the most received Opinion is, that it was only resumed at that Time. The Knights of this Order were stiled *Knights of the Star*, because they bore a Star fastened to a golden Chain, described by Fig. 4, Plate 1, with this Motto, *Monstrant Regibus Astra*; The Stars conduct the Kings. This Order, at first so much coveted by Persons of the first Rank, became at last so contemptible, by being too common, that *Charles the Seventh*, observing with what Scorn it was regarded at his own Court, took it from off his Neck, and bestowed it on the Captain of the Night-Watch; ordering at the same time, that only he and the parading Soldiers, Horse or Foot, should wear it embroidered upon their Coats and Banniliers, as is still in Use. However, this Circumstance is contradicted; for some affirm, that this Order was even in Reputation in *Lewis the Eleventh's* Time; that he bestowed it on his Son-in-law *Gaston de Foix*, in the Year 1458; and that it was not wholly laid aside 'till the Reign of King *Charles the Eighth*. But I have Reason to believe it was dropt by his Father, *Lewis the Eleventh*, because he established the Order of *S. Michael*; of which I shall now say something, since it offers itself very opportunely.

## S E C T. XVII.

## Of the Order of S. MICHAEL.

THE Order of *S. Michael* was instituted by *Lewis the Eleventh*, in the Year 1469. The Wars between *France* and *England*, and the Discontents and Divisions amongst the Nobility of his own Kingdom, gave birth to this Order, he proposing thereby to gain them over to his Interest, and reunite them all. He succeeded with them all except the Duke of *Britanny*, who refused to accept the Collar of this Order. This Collar was curiously wrought with Shells on golden Mails, to which hung the Image of *S. Michael*, trampling the Dragon under his Feet, and piercing him with his Lance, represented by Figure 3, Plate 1. What in all Appearance induced him to chuse this holy Archangel for the Patron of his Order was, as they generally believed, that he had given visible Testimonies of his having protected them against the



the *English*, particularly at the Siege of *Orleans*. The Device was, *Immensi Tremor Oceani*; The Dread of the immense Ocean. This Order took as much at first as the preceeding had done; but its Lustre was considerably eclipsed in the Reigns prior to that of *Henry the Third*. In our Days it is only conferred on Foreigners in particular, and Gentlemen of a late Creation; for they must have some good Blood, and personal Merit to recommend them. I say in particular, because all the Knights of the *Holy Ghost* are of course Knights of the Order of *S. Michael*. But as this Order is purely military, an ecclesiastical Commander cannot be admitted.

## S E C T. XVIII.

*Of the Order of S. LAZARUS.*

THE Order of *S. Lazarus* owes its Origin to *S. Basil*; it was intended only for the Relief of *Lepers* in Hospitals; but as that Distemper became less epidemick, this Order consequently decayed; and, the Knights growing negligent in their Duty, Pope *Innocent the Eleventh* suppressed them in the Year 1490; or, to speak more properly, incorporated them and their Estates with those of *Rhodes*, our present Knights of *Malta* \*. They were kept up in *France*, and Pope *Pius the Fourth* being apprehensive that the Order of *Rhodes* would, by this Addition, become too powerful, re-established them on their primitive Footing. *Gregory the Thirteenth* gave the Duke of *Savoy* full Power of investing every Knight in his respective Districts, situated in *Spain*, the Kingdoms of *Naples*, *Sicily*, the *Milanes*, or any other of the States in *Italy*. *Henry the Fourth* obtained from Pope *Paul the Fifth* the entire Re-establishment of it in *France*, and united it to the Order of *Our Lady of Mount Carmel*, which she instituted, limiting their Number to 100, all *French* Gentlemen, whose Duty it was to attend the King, in Time of War, as his Body-Guard. The Badge of this Order is a golden Cross, with the Image of our Lady enamelled, as in Figure 6, Plate 1; but this Order fell into the utmost Disgrace in the Reign of *Lewis the Fourteenth*, when it most shamefully became venal. His Royal Highness the Duke of *Orleans*, present Grand-Master, exerts himself, on all Occasions, to restore it to its former Splendour.

## S E C T.

\* This military Order was formed in *Palestine*, by the Name of the Hospital-Knights of *S. John of Jerusalem*, in the Year 1118, from a Society like that of the *Templars* and *Teutonicks*, but of greater Antiquity, it having begun about the 10th Century, or rather it was the Model of the latter. They were driven out of the *Holy Land* in 1291, and retired to *Cyprus*, and in 1301 they settled themselves at *Rhodes*, of which they had made a Conquest; but in 1521 they were chased from thence by *Soliman the Second*, the *Ottoman* Emperour, from whence they fled to *Candia*, then to *Sicily*, and in Conclusion to *Malta*; which Island *Charles the Fifth* made them a Present of, and where they still continue in Possession. The Badge of this Order is a Silver-Cross, described by Figure 15, Plate 1.

## S E C T. XIX.

*Of the Order of the HOLY GHOST.*

**T**HE Order of the *Holy Ghost* was instituted, or rather renewed, on *Whitsunday*, in the Year 1579, by *Henry the Third*, in Commemoration, as believed, of his being Born on that Festival, in the Year 1551; and of being advanced to two Crowns, that of *Poland* in 1573, and that of *France* in the Year 1574, on the same Day. The Installment was made in a Chapel of the Church of the Great *Augustine Fryars* in *Paris*, which has been ever since called the Chapel of the *Holy Ghost*. The Badge of this Dignity is a blue Ribbon, like that of the Garter, fixed to a rich Collar, and wore in the same Manner; at the End of which hangs a Cross, with the Figure of a Dove, the Emblem of the Holy Ghost, and the Letter H represented thereon, as in Figure 2, Plate 1. I have hinted above, that this Order was only renewed; for Father *Maimbourg*, the Jesuit, who follows *le Laboureur*, tells us, in his History of the League, that its first Institution was in the Year 1333, by *Lewis* of *Anjou*, King of *Jerusalem*, *Naples* and *Sicily*, in the Castle *dell' Ovo* at *Naples*, so called from its being of an oval Figure. The Revolutions, which happened after the Death of that Prince, were probably the Cause of its so sudden Fall, that the very Mention of it had been entirely buried in Oblivion, if the Charter, which that King gave, consisting of 25 Articles, had not luckily fallen into the Hands of the Republick of *Venice*, who made a Present of it to King *Henry*, when he passed through *Venice* in his Return from *Poland*. This Monarch, having selected what he thought most proper out of the same, ordered his Chancellour to burn the Original, that he might appropriate to himself the Glory of being thought the sole Founder of this Order; but his Minister, disobeying his Orders, preserved the Piece, which afterwards fell into the Hands of the Bishop of *Chartres*, his Son, and came at last into the Possession of the President of *Matsons*. *Le Laboureur* published a Copy of it in his Additions to the Memoirs of the Marquis of *Casteinau*.

## S E C T. XX.

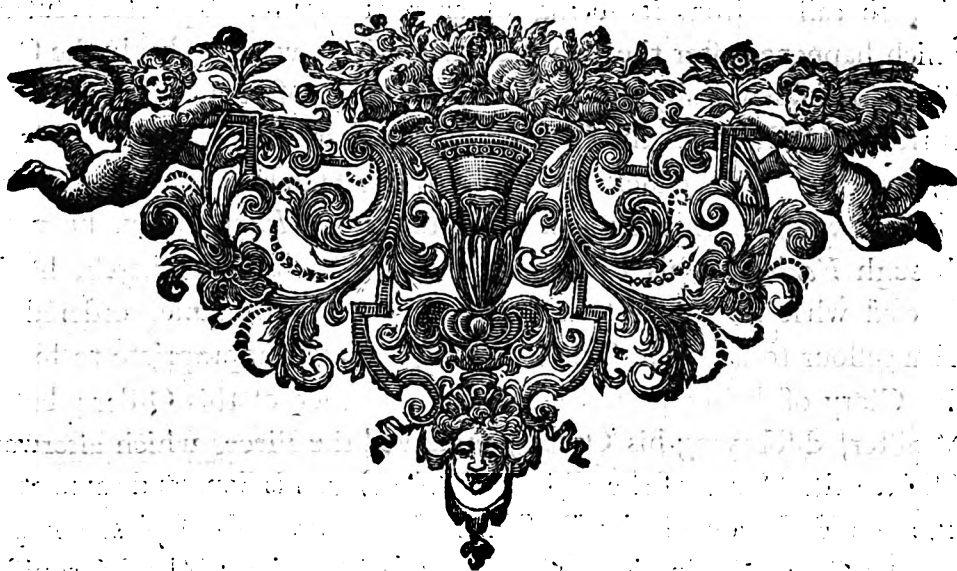
*Of the military Order of S. LEWIS.*

**T**HE military Order of *S. Lewis* was established in the Year 1693, by *Lewis the Fourteenth*, on Account of the War he was engaged in with *William the Third*, on whom the *English* had bestowed the Crown, which they had deprived King *JAMES the Second* of, to excite the Emulation of his Officers, and to reward them with this Honour, for Want of something more real to bestow. It was at first in

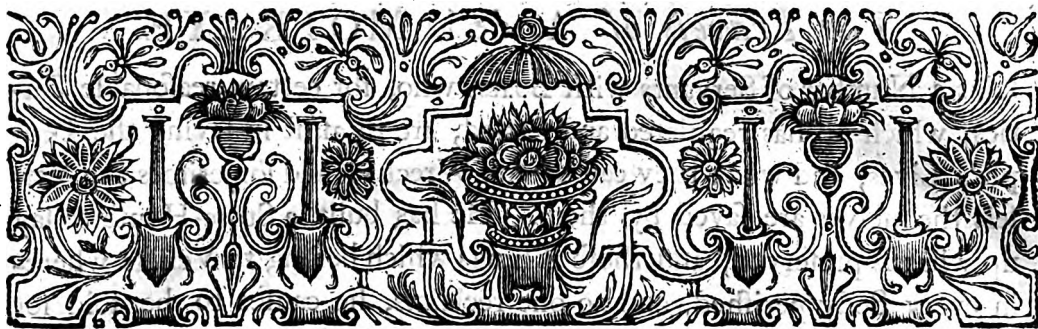
P

great

great Esteem; but the Peace, which has been since so long observed, is the Occasion of its being now conferred on many Officers who never faced the Fire of a Gun, or saw any Fire more dreadful than that in a Kitchen. The Badge of this Dignity is a Cross of Gold with the Image of S. Lewis, represented by Fig. 1, Plate 1. This great Monarch made his Knights of divers Degrees, to wit, 8 *Large-Crosses*, 24 *Commanders* and as many *plain Knights* as he thought proper. The Knights of the two first Degrees wore the Badge hanging to a broad red Ribbon like a Scarf, and those of the last wore theirs on the Breast, fastened to a narrow Ribbon of the same Colour. The *Large-Crosses* are distinguished from those of the *Commanders* by their being embroidered in Gold on their Coats and Cloaks.



The



The TRAVELS of  
*A. de la MOTRAIE.*  
 C H A P. II.

*A VOYAGE from the Hague to the Lake Ladoga, with a Topographical, Geographical, and Historical Account of the most considerable Places through which I passed, chiefly in Pomerania, Prussia, Courland, Livonia, Estonia, Ingria, &c.*



**A**BOUT six or seven Months after a Tour which I made in *France*, in the Year 1725, I undertook the Voyage that I am to give an Account of in this Chapter. I set out from the *Hague*, the latter end of *May*, 1726, for *Amsterdam*, where I embarked on board a *Boyer*\* for *Hamburg*, the beginning of *June*, in Company with a *Swedish* Officer; we were not long in our Passage, notwithstanding this sort of Vessel lies by every Night at Anchor; the Wind being fair we came up the next Day to the North of *East Friesland*, and saw my Lord † *Clancarty's* little Island, which he did not conquer, but obtained by a Sum of Money from *Denmark*. This Island is small, and seems scarce worth keeping; however, it brings the Lord who possesses it, one Year with another, four times as much as the Interest of the Money would amount to that he gave for it, which arises from the unfortunate Vessels that are ship-wrecked there and thereabouts. He has built on it a very convenient and pleasant House, in which he spends a good part of the Year, and where he constantly main-  
 tains

*The Author sets out from Amsterdam to Hamburg.*

*Sees my Lord Clancarty's Island.*

\* This is a small Vessel that carries Goods and Passengers from *Amsterdam* to *Hamburg*; there are two which go every Week from each of those Places.

† My Lord *Clancarty* is a Nobleman of *Ireland*, who was too much engaged in the Interest of King *James the Second*, of *England*, against King *William the Third*. His Estate, which was considerable in *Ireland*, was confiscated, his Person was seized in *London*; but he obtained a Pardon, with a Pension of 300 Pounds a Year Sterling, from King *William*; on Condition and solemn Promise, that he would never enter, directly nor indirectly, into any Conspiracy against that Prince or his Successors; accordingly, he retired to *Hamburg*, has kept his Word, and his Pension is continued to this Day.

tains a Number of Servants with Boats, who, for certain reasonable Duties, which he has regulated and settled, are to assist in saving the People's Lives, and what they can of the Wrecks; and sometimes the Vessels themselves are saved by them. He has built a Store-House to lay up what is preserved, and those Things which belong to Vessels wherein every Body perished, and no one reclaims, he causes to be sold for his own Advantage, to such as have Occasion for them.

Is stopt at  
Stade.

Having coasted along the Country of *Emden*, we came into the Mouth of the *Elbe* the next Day in the Afternoon; our Eyes were very agreeably entertained here, with the Prospect of *Bremen* on the right Hand, and *Holstein* on the left. At *Stade* we were stopt for the Duty which is paid by every Vessel that passes that Way, where was an *English* Man of War, maintained for a Guard, as we were told, by the King of *England*, as Duke of *Bremen* and *Verden*. This Ship would certainly have fired on any Vessel that should presume to pass without paying the aforesaid Duty. I do not know what is paid for Goods in Trade, but I know very well, that every Trunk with a Lock and Key, how little soever, pays four Pence, and every Cloak-Bag and Box the same. The Town is above a Quarter of a League from the Banks of the *Elbe*, Vessels of a middle Size go up to it by a pretty deep Canal, through which the River *Steweing*, on which it is situated, passes into the *Elbe*. We were stopt here on Account of some ill Language given by a young Passenger to the Officers of the Customs, about a Box with a Padlock, which he had not discovered, but was found by them in the Captain's Cabin, and carried to the Custom-House, where it was kept 'till the next Day in the Afternoon, and not restored then 'till he had paid at least the Value of it, and asked Pardon for what he had said. The Captain, who was his Relation, took his Part, and could not get his Discharge sooner, very likely on that Account; this gave me more Time than I wanted to view the Place. The *Swedish* Officer had the Civility to accompany me every where. Although it is not large, there

A Description  
of that Place.

are four Churches in it indifferently well built after the old Gothic Manner; there were formerly five, but one was burnt by Lightning; the Walls, which are still standing, shew that it was large; nevertheless they have still three too many, since one would be sufficient for the Number of Inhabitants. Many of the Houses destroyed by the *Danish* Bombs have not been rebuilt. The Town-House and Arsenal are worth seeing, but very little else; as to the Place it is pretty well fortified. This Town is the Residence of the Superintendent of all the *Lutheran* Churches of the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*; the last was M. *Diaman*, who died in the Year 1720, well known by his Remarks on *Bodin*, upon the Difference between the Eastern and Latin Churches concerning *Purgatory*; but above all by his Edition of the famous Bible of *Stade*, which is an Amendment of *Luther's* German Translation. He

was

was preparing, when he died, to publish the Glossary of *Robin Maure*, which was never printed.

The Wind being fair, we came to *Hamburg* in the Evening; the next Day I visited my old Friends and Acquaintance of the *English* Factory, who received me with fresh Marks of Kindness and Respect. They kept me with them six Days, and pressed me to stay longer, but I begged to be excused. There being nothing worth remarking in this City, more than what I have already said in the former Part of this Work, I left it about the middle of *June*, taking the common Post-Waggon for *Stetin*, in company with three very civil *Germans*; we went out through the Gate of *Berlin*, and saw, as we went along, a great many very pleasant Country-Seats and Gardens at a little Distance from the Road. About two Miles from \* *Hamburg* we passed through *Perdoff*, a little Town remarkable for nothing, but that it is alternately possessed by *Hamburg* and *Lubeck*, receiving Laws one Year from one Republick, which maintains some Soldiers in it, and the next Year from the other. We changed Horses a Mile farther, at *Eschebourg*, a House built for that Purpose, by the King of *Prussia*, in *Larwemburg*, and where his Posts begin on this Side *Germany*. I call them the King of *Prussia's* Posts, because upon the whole Road they belong to him; he furnishes the Postillions with the first Horses, and gives new Cloaths, a new Horse and Waggon to each of them every two Years, and they pay to him half of what they receive from all Passengers; they are obliged to feed their Horses themselves, and, if any die or are spoiled before the two Years are expired, to buy others at their own Expence; the Waggon is changed as well as Horses at every Stage; we had fresh ones at *Butzemburg*, a small ill-built Town in *Mecklemburg*, where is a *Hannoverian* Garrison, for Reasons well enough known, and which I have mentioned in my second Volume. This Place is agreeably situated on the north Side the *Elbe*. About three Miles and a half farther, at a little Village, called *Lepton*, we changed Horses again; afterwards, in about four Miles, at *Lentzen*, a good pretty Town in *Brandenbourg*; then at *Peterberg*, three Miles farther. This Town is not so neat, but larger than the last, with two Churches in it, one of them a good Building. A Mile farther we came to *Eydergrop*, an antient Abbey of *Bernardine* Nuns, where a certain Number of *Lutheran* young Ladies, of good Families, but small Fortunes, are received and maintained, by the Favour of the Prince, out of Part of the old Revenues, as at *Lune-Abbey*, and others I have mentioned in my second Volume. As they make no Vows, they are at Liberty to go out when they please, or marry any Gentleman not inferiour to them in Quality, who are more willing to gratify their Love than their Interest. We were told a very

*Arrives at  
Hamburg.*

*Eschebourg,  
where the King  
of Prussia's  
Posts begins.*

*A Nunnery for  
young Ladies of  
the Lutheran  
Religion.*

Q

tragical

\* By Miles, in this Place, I mean those of *Germany*, one of which will make more than five *English* or *Italian* Miles, and near two *French* Leagues.

tragical Accident, that happened to two of these Girls not long since. A Country-Man, who was hunting Swans, which do a great deal of Mischief in this Neighbourhood, where there are very many Rivers and Fish-Ponds, seeing, at too great a Distance, these two Ladies, dressed in white, walking by the Side of a Pond, he took them for Swans, shot at them and wounded them, especially one, in such a dangerous Manner, that she is still in a very bad Condition. As to the Abbey, it is large and beautiful for the Time in which it was built; and there is a very pleasant Park, and a Garden belonging to it.

We went next to *Witstock*, which is not above a Mile farther. This is a small Town, encompassed with old Walls, a little out of repair; but has a very handsome Church in it. We changed Horses at *Tabo*, a Hamlet not far off. We stopt an Hour at *Miraw*, where one of the Passengers had some Business; this is a pretty good Town, with a kind of Fortrefs, in the Middle of which stands the Church, which is very old, but has no remarkable Beauty. This Town depends on the Principality of *Strelitz*, and is under the Dominion of one of the Princes of the House of *Mecklembourg*, whose Mother-in-law makes it her Residence. After passing through *Weysemberg* and *Coblets*, two large Villages about a Mile from each other, we came to *Strelitz*; this is an open Town, wherein I found nothing worth observing; it belongs to the Prince of that Name, who, as I was told, is Brother to the Duke of *Mecklembourg*; his military Force consists only of 30 Life-Guards, and 50 common Soldiers, whom we saw before his Palace, which is not a very fine one. Here we changed Horses, and one of my Fellow-Travellers took the Post-Waggon for *Berlin*, which is about eight Miles from hence; and a *Pomeranian* Gentlewoman filled his Place in our's; who was the Daughter of an Officer that was killed in the Service of *Charles the Twelfth*; was very well-bred, and came from *Berlin*, where she had received an Order from the King of *Prussia*, to be admitted into a *Lutheran* Nunnery of the same kind, as the Abbey I just now mentioned. This Convent is, as she told us, in that Part of *Pomerania* which *Sweden* gave up to his *Prussian* Majesty by the Treaty of *Stockholm*, which I have spoke of elsewhere. Two Miles farther we went through *Lyken*, a small ill-built Town in *Brandenbourg*. Here another of my Fellow-Travellers left us, and a *Prussian* Commissary supplied his Place for *Prenslow*; he was sent by the Court of Justice at *Berlin* to examine a Man who had killed another by an Accident, something like what happened to the two *Lutheran* Nuns, in mistaking him, as he said, for a Bear; he found that the Man, who had been arrested at *Lyken*, whither he was come to seek him, was sent away to the Prison of *Prenslow*. We changed Horses at a little Village about two Miles from *Lyken*, with which we went on to *Prenslow*, above four Miles farther. This is a good Town, well peopled; but we stayed here no longer than while we changed



changed Horses. The Commissary left us here, and a young *Polish* Gentleman, a very genteel, well-shaped Man took his Place; he told us, that, upon some Discontent in his own Country, he had engaged himself in the *Prussian* Service; but was disgusted with it, for some Reasons he told us, which I shall pass over in Silence, and that he could not obtain his Discharge, but by bringing five Soldiers in his Stead, tall, handsome and will-made, which had cost him a great deal of Trouble and Money to find out; this Gentleman was very good Company, full of Wit and Gaiety. We went from *Prenslow* to *Licknis*, four long Miles; here we treated the *Pomeranian* Gentlewoman after the *English* Manner, I mean, by giving her a good Dinner and not suffering her to pay any Thing. This Custom the *Polander* commended much, and said, he would introduce it into his own Country. I had told him, as we were walking together while Dinner was getting ready, the Manner of it, which is, if, in a common Stage-Coach, there are more Men than Women, the former treat through the whole Journey, especially if they are Persons of any Fashion or Merit. I had already put this in practice myself, since the Gentlewoman came into our Company, and told my Fellow-Travelers of it, though none followed my Example, but contented themselves with saying, it was not the Custom in *Germany*, only among Friends and Relations; however, the only one, who remained of the Company, could not hear the *Polish* Gentleman commending the Politeness of it without coming into it, which he did at last with a good Grace.

*Licknis* is properly no more than a Village, but a Village that is better peopled, and worth more than some Towns I have named; there is in it a large and handsome Church, in which the *Lutherans* perform Divine Service in the *German* Tongue, and the *Calvinists* in *French*; we changed Horses here for the last Time, and came in early to *Stetin*, which is but three Miles farther; here we separated, except the *Polish* Gentleman and myself, who lodged in the same Inn.

I was not altogether a Stranger in *Stetin*, being acquainted there with *M. Maclair*, one of the King of *Prussia's* Chaplains, and his Wife, *Niece* to Mr. *Dayrolle*, the *British* Resident at the *Hague*. I went the next Day to wait upon them, who received me in a very obliging Manner, and shewed me many Civilities during my Stay in that City, which was eight or nine Days. *M. Maclair* is very well read in History and Philosophy, as well as Divinity; he lodges in the Castle, at which Place I will begin my Remarks. There is in the Castle a very fine Chapel, which serves alternately the *French*, *Calvinists* and *German Lutherans*; it is adorned with excellent Paintings of the sacred Story; the Seats are well disposed, and a magnificent Gallery, that will contain 200 People, goes quite round it, only where it is broke off for the Altar in the East, and an Organ in the West; the Pulpit is lofty, the  
ducal

*Some Curiosities described in the Chapel there.*



ducal Lodges perfectly neat, and the Organ answers to the Magnificence of the Chapel\*. There are two Vestries, one on each side the Altar; that on the right Hand is for the *Lutherans*, the other for the *Calvinists*. The first contains three Altar-Cloths, and four Chasubles, or Copes, that are very rich; five Chalices with their Pattens, and two Vessels for the Communion-Wine, all Silver gilt; there are two Altar-Cloths, or Facings extremely rich, which differ from one another only in the Figures embroidered on them: I will describe but one. It is a red Brocade, with a Border round it of three Fingers Breadth, embroidered with precious Stones; in the middle is a richer Embroidery of a Heart as big as a Man's Hand, done in Pearls of a good Size, and fine Water, crossed by a Lance, and a Pole of the same Length, with a Sponge at the end of it, placed in Saltier; this Lance and Sponge are embroidered with Silver-Thread and Silk in Colours natural and proper to the Subject, and mixt with some precious Stones, as well as a Crown of Thorns which encloses the whole; in the four Corners are two Feet and two Hands; in the middle of each is a fine large Ruby to denote the four Wounds that *Jesus Christ* received in those Parts of his Body; lastly, over the Crown of Thorns is the *Holy Ghost* in the Form of a Dove, done with Pearl of a fine Water, and some Rubies to distinguish the Eyes, Bill, &c. The whole is wrought with the greatest Art and Propriety imaginable:

As to the Chasubles, I shall enlarge but upon one of them, though there are two, which seem to vie with each other, in the Richness and Beauty of the Work, and which differ, as the Altar-Cloths only in what is represented upon them. The first is of red Velvet, with a Border embroidered round, of about three Fingers Breadth; on the Back is a Crucifix embroidered with white Silk, and other proper Colours intermixt with Pearls; there are likewise Rubies in the Hands and Feet of *I. C.* as in the Altar-Cloths, to describe his Wounds, with one larger in his Side, which was pierced with the Lance, and small ones under for the Drops of Blood. There is another of black Velvet with a Cross of white Satin, of the same Length and Breadth as the Chasuble itself, enriched also with Pearls. The *Roman Catholics* use this sort of Chasuble in saying Mass for the Dead. The *Lutherans* on Communion-Days, and sometimes in *Lent*, and during the *Advent*; but the richer sort on the most solemn Days of the Year, such as *Christmas-Day*, *Easter* and *Whit-Sundays*, and the Altar-Cloths at the same Time. These Chasubles must be very antient, for there are some *Run-*  
*nick*

\* The *Lutheran* is the prevailing Religion of this Country. This Chapel in all likelihood was built, or preserved with its primitive Decorations, by the antient Dukes of *Pomerania*, who have all been *Lutherans* since the Reformation, except those of the Family of *Brandenbourg*; and it is known, that none of the reformed Churches have retained so many of the Ornaments, and sacred Utensils of the *Romish* Church, as that of *Luther*.

*nick* Characters embroidered upon two of them, which no body at this Time can understand, or even read.

The oldest of the Chalice was made in 1209, at least it has that Date upon it; that and its Patten are of Silver gilt; there is another less antient, enriched with precious Stones, which, by its Weight, I took to be gold; but the Sacristan, or Vestry-Keeper, assured me it was only Pewter, or some such Metal, covered with a thin Plate of Gold. If he is not mistaken, this is a very ingenious Imitation of an Art among the Antients, to cover their Copper-Medals with Silver, several of which I have by me. The Wine-Vessels are very large and well wrought; they are thought to be no older than the *Reformation*. There is nothing extraordinary to be seen in the other Vestry, but an *English* Minister's Gown; how it came there no one could tell me.

The King of *Prussia*, in taking Possession of the *Swedish Pomerania*, has made no Alterations in the ecclesiastical Establishment, but hitherto maintained the *Lutheran* Clergy and Magistracy in their antient Rights and Privileges; he has only added the free Exercise of Religion, not only according to the Reformation of *Calvin*, which he professes himself, but even of the Doctrine and Ceremonies of the Church of *Rome*; he has likewise continued all the Appointments of the antient *Lutheran* Chaplain of the Castle; I forgot to ask of what they consist, but I know that those of M. *Maclair* amount to 600 Crowns yearly, besides Lodging, Firing, and an Exemption from Excise.

The Castle is supposed to be built by the Duke, *John Frederick*, in the Year 1519, from the following Inscription over the great Gate: Other Parts of the City described.  
*Johannes Fredericus Dux Stetin, Pomeranorum & Cassubiorum, Vandalorum Dominus, Princeps & Comes Gatske, M. D. XIX.* It is a vast Pile of Building in a quadrangular Form, with four high Towers, one in each Corner, the highest of which serves for a Belfry to the Chapel, in which are contained five fine Bells; one of them not less than that in the Tower of *Notre-Dame* at *Paris*, and equal at least to that of the Cathedral of *S. Paul's* in *London*. The *Roman Catholics*, of whom there are above 200 in Garrison at *Stetin*, meet in the Hall of one of these Towers for the Exercise of their Religion; this Hall is very neat; and the Court-Yard will contain three Thousand Men. There is a Terras, or flat Roof, on the top of the Castle, covered with Lead, but the Towers are covered with Copper, except one which is plated over with Iron; the Gutters are all Copper. The Apartments are very convenient; among the chief of which is that wherein the Council of War assembles on the first Floor, and M. *Maclair's* is one of the best on the second, where is a large Gallery that goes round the whole Castle.

On the left Hand of this long and broad Building, there is another as long, and separated from it only by a Court-Yard of 50 or 60 Paces broad. This was, they say, formerly an Academy of *Belles-Lettres*,  
 R found

## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.

founded by *Philip the Second*, and *Francis*, who were Brothers and Dukes of *Pomerania*; which is confirmed by the following Inscription, over an old Door, between their Busts and Arms, which are to be seen there in Relievo: I have copied it as faithfully as I could, as well as the foregoing, for both have suffered from the Injuries of Time, without having any Care taken of them by Men. D. M. C. XIX. *Illustrissimi D. D. Phillipus secundus & Franciscus, Fratres Sedimorum Pomeranorum Duces Vandalorum Principes Cuyorum Comites Leopoliensium ac Terrarum Butoviensium Despotæ hoc Ædificium suis sumptibus extructum Musarum & Artium voluerunt esse Conditorium.*

This Building at present consists of a fine Manage, and good Stables for Horses, with Lodgings for those who have the Care of it, and other Persons. The Castle and this Piece of Building, which properly makes a Part of it, being situated on an Eminence, afford a very extensive Prospect, not only over the City of *Stetin*, but all the Country about it, which is very pleasant, and fruitful of all Sorts of Grain, and every Necessary of Life. I may say the same of all the Countries I passed through between *Hamburg* and this Place. There are four *Lutheran* Churches within the Walls of the City, viz. *S. Mary's*, *S. James's*, *S. John's*, and *S. Nicholas's*; and two in the Suburbs, one dedicated to *S. Peter* and *S. Paul*, and another called *Gaderouth*. I say *Lutheran* Churches, because the *Calvinists* and *Roman Catholics* have only large Halls without Steeples, which make no manner of Show on the outside. The chief among the first is the Church of *S. Mary*, over the Western Gate, of which the following Inscription is set up, as a Memorial of the Homage paid by this City to the King of *Prussia*, her new Master, in the Year 1719.

L. D. O. M. *O quam tremendus hic est Locus, Dei Domus Cæli Porta Regi Prussiæ Friderico Willielmo Pomeraniæ Duci incomparabili maximo Porta hæc ad Homagium patuit prima Pomeraniæ quorum pia hic teguntur Ossa principum suspirus; tot Sanctis Majorum Pactis gloriosissimi Ævi merito magni Patris voto Regum Regniqve Suæciæ quæsito Turi simul solemnitur cesso exoptatum nunc sua Majestas addidit Complementum suosque antiquos hic data Fide Pomeranos Sanctissimo sit inviolabili recepit Sacramento, Mense Augusti Die Laureato 1719.*

Every Thing is preserved within side this Church in the same Condition it was in the Time of the *Roman Catholics*, its first Masters, even to the Holy-Water Stock \*, except the Altars which are reduced to one, as in all the *Lutheran* and *English* Churches. This Altar is very fine; the Pictures and Statues of the sacred History are all good Pieces; the Organ the same, and well adorned. The Church of *S. James*

\* Holy-Water Stock has been left standing not only in *Lutheran* but *English* Churches built by *Roman Catholics*, and converted into Baptismal Fonts in many, especially in *England*.

*James* is very little inferior to this in all these Respects. They are building a new Altar there, with Columns of the *Corinthian* Order, which, when finished, will surpass in Beauty every Thing of that kind in any of the Churches in *Stetin*. *S. John's*, which they commonly call the Cloister-Church, because it formerly belonged to a Monastery; *S. Nicholas's*; that which is called *Gaderouth*, and *S. Peter's* and *S. Paul's* in the Suburbs, yield to neither of the other but in Bulk.

The Colledge called *Gymnasium*, over the Gate of which is writ *SCHOLA SENATORIA*, has produced several famous Magistrates, and other great Men, who have studied in no other Place. There are yet some able Professors in it, although it is at this Time but little frequented.

The City has always been esteemed a strong Place, but will be much more so, if the King of *Prussia* continues the Works and Designs he has begun there. He does not only repair but enlarge the Fortifications; and has caused new and deep Ditches to be dug, which are to be multiplied to such an Extent, that the City may be secure from Bombs. This Prince adorns as well as fortifies the City; he has pulled down the old Gates to erect new ones more magnificent in their stead; for this Purpose *M. Demart*, who is both a good Architect and Statuary, has been sent for from *France*; this Gentleman has finished one, and is about another; he intends to vary the Orders of Architecture in each of them, he has observed the *Tuscan* Order in that of *Brandenbourg*, which is finished; and the *Doric* in that which he is about, and designs to follow the *Ionic* and *Corinthian* Orders in the other two not yet begun. The first, which is very magnificent, has on the top of it a very large Royal Crown, that is to be gilt; upon the Architrave are the Letters *F. B.* in Cypher, and below it a very fine Relievo representing the City of *Stetin*, and the River *Pene*, who mixes his Waters with those of the *Oder*, in human Shapes, as the Painters commonly draw them. Under this Basso-Relievo, which shews the Reunion of *Swedish Pomerania* to *Prussia*, are the Arms of *Prussia* and *Pomerania* intermixt, and the following Inscription in Capital Letters carved and gilt:

*Fridericus Wilhelmus, Rex Borussiae, Ducatum Stetiniensem cessum Brandenburgicis Electoribus Clientela Fide Pomeraniae Ducibus redditum postfato ad Suecos delatum Justis pactis Justoque Praetio ad Penem usque emit paravit sibi que restituit Anno 1719.*

*Ac Portam Brandenburgi fieri Jussit.*

The Figures, that are to adorn the other Gate, were almost finished, and consisted of, a Trophy of Arms to be placed between *Mars* and *Hercules* holding *Corberus* in Chains. The Stone, which these Ornaments are made of, comes from *Middelburg*; it is very white, and pretty hard, but grows more so by being exposed to the Air.

The

The Town having been much damaged by the last Bombs, on the Side of *Brandenbourg*, and the King, being willing to repair it, has granted to the Inhabitants, to encourage them to build, 15 *per Cent.* for the Money they shall lay out that Way; besides all Materials necessary, as Bricks, Lime, &c. and an Exemption from all Taxes for five Years; he caused a Declaration to be published in favour of the Inhabitants of *Stetin*, and, to oblige those to it who were least inclinable, he ordered the following Clause to be inserted, ' That whoever did not rebuild ' his House, or find somebody to build on his Ground, by a certain ' Time, should lose his Right in it, and the Property should be transferred to those, either Natives or Foreigners, who would undertake ' it.' The Chancellour, *Grumkow*, to set an Example, has built a magnificent House, not unworthy the Residence of a Prince; the principal *Façade* is in a large Square, and there is a neat, well-contrived Garden behind it. Several have followed this Example, but not so many in Number, nor with so much Earnestness, as was to be desired. Among the Strangers, who took Advantage of this Clause, were the Director of a Colony of *French Refugees*, and a Physician of the same Nation, who has each built a very handsome House for himself.

There is constantly a whole Regiment in Garrison at *Stetin*. The Soldiers Cloaths, as it is well known, are very short, there being not above five *German* Ells, or three *English* Yards of Cloth in a Coat, Waist-Coat and Breeches for the tallest Man; and it is to be observed, that the Waist-Coat consists only of two Fore-Parts sewed to the Lining of the Coat under the Arms. This is a great Piece of Frugality in the King, since, by the Encouragement his Grand-Father and Father gave to the *French Refugees*, to establish a Number of Woollen-Manufacturies in his Dominions, he not only has his Cloth very cheap, but there are such Quantities made, that a great Part of *Germany* is furnished from thence, as well as all *Russia*, whose Troops are all clothed there, to the great Prejudice of the *English*, *French*, and *Dutch* Manufactures.

*Stetin* is one of the most antient Towns in *Germany*. After having held out a Siege of six Months in the Year 1678, it yielded, for Want of Provision \* and fresh Supplies, to *Frederick William the Great*, Electour of *Brandenbourg*, to which the Duke of *Lunenbourg* and the *Danish* Fleet did not a little contribute. The Electour made his publick Entry on the sixth of *January* the Year following, and received Homage of the Inhabitants; this Ceremony was very grand and magnificent, of which these are some Circumstances: Two young Lads, clothed in black,

\* It is said, that this Siege cost the Besiegers above 8000 Men, that 150,000 Cannon-Shot, and near 100,000 Granado's were spent in it. The Duke of *Lunenbourg*, who was with a Body of Troops on one side of it, distinguished himself in an extraordinary Manner, while the *Danish* Fleet not only stopt all Provisions and Succours coming up the *Oder*, but continually fired upon it. The present King of *Prussia* is no less obliged to the *Russian* Bombs in taking this Town, than his Grand-Father was to the Arms of *Lunenbourg* and the Fleet of *Denmark*.

black, were placed, one on each side the Gate, now called *Brandenbourg*, but then the *New-Gate*; one of them presented him, as he went in, with a Key of Silver gilt, and these Words carved on it, *Accipe, serva, & conserva*; Receive, keep, and maintain: To let him understand the City was willing to receive him for its Master, but desired to be maintained in its Priviledges. The other presented him with a ducal Crown, that had these Words upon it, *Quod Deus dat*. Two young Maids also in black stood at the Church-Door, where he received Homage, holding a Crown, with one Hand each, made of such Greens as the Season afforded, on which these Words were woven in Gold-Thread, *Victori cruentatam Virginitatem*; giving him to understand, that the Place was never taken without great Loss of Blood; and this they offered to him, as he went out.

This City was restored to *Sweden* by the Treaty of *Nimeguen*; it is situated on the South Bank of the *Oder*, which Situation would be very advantageous to its Commerce, consisting chiefly of Wood and Salt, which comes from *Hall*, if the Vessels had not Occasion for different Winds to get to Sea, besides some other Inconveniences I shall mention by and by.

I left *Stetin* about the middle of *July*, and embarked on board a Vessel for *Koningsberg* with a South-East Wind, but we were scarce got down to the middle of the great Island of *Usdom*, before it changed to South-West. This had been nothing, if two short Passages\*, by which the *Oder* discharges itself into the *Baltick-Sea*, had not been unfortunately shut up since the Year 1719, in so much that there was scarce more than five or six Foot Water, where there had formerly been enough for larger Vessels than ours, which drew about seven; so that we were forced to go a great Way about, although the Wind, that was against us in that Place, had been right for us, if we had been eight or ten Miles lower towards the Island of *Rugen*. I asked our Captain the Reason of this Change; he told me it was occasioned by Sand, which had been thrown by Storms into the *Oder*; and added, that an *English* Captain, who had sounded the Passage, offered the King to make it as navigable as before, for the Sum of 800 *Rixdollers*; but his Majesty had rejected the Proposal, thinking the Sum too large, or not knowing of what Importance it was to the Commerce of *Stetin*, which was at a stand, sometimes on that Account, for whole Months together.

*The Author  
embarks for  
Koningsberg.*

We anchored over-against *Usdom*, at about half a Mile's Distance, where we remained four Days. The Wind, which blew very fresh from the West, and which had been fair for us, if we had been at Sea, would not allow us even to go about on the River. I spent the greatest Part  
S of

\* One of these Passages is called *Duyno*, and is but eight Miles from the great Island of *Usdom*, and the little Island of that Name; the other is between the Continent and the last, and is called *Zwyn*.

of the Time in the Town, or in walking with the Captain and a *Russian* Passenger on the Island. This Town takes its Name from the Island; it is small but not disagreeable; the Walls of it are Old and out of repair; it has but one Church in it; its Situation upon a kind of Lake or Gulph, filled with the Waters of the *Oder*, is pleasant enough, but useless by the Negligence of the Inhabitants; for the Entrance into it is so filled up with Sand, that there is not above two or three Foot Water. The Island is very fertile, and Provisions extremely cheap; we bought good Chickens of the Country-People for two Pence a Piece. This Island is about five Miles in Circumference, but *Little-Uedom* not above three, though no less fertile. These two Islands produce more Corn, and other Necessaries of Life, than are sufficient for their Inhabitants.

At the Break of the fifth Day, the Wind changing a little to the North, and being moderate, it permitted us to go about; but we ran two or three times aground, the Water being too low in many Places, which was not above nine Foot, where it was deepest. From *Uedom* to *Wolgast*, this, with the long Way one is obliged to go round to reach the Sea, shews of what Consequence the two Passages of *Dueno* and *Zwyn* are, which, some Years ago, led to it by a Way too short and easy; notwithstanding, there are three Rivers fall into the *Oder* between *Uedom* and *Wolgast*, (besides several Rivulets) viz. the *Anclam*\*, the *Anclamfere*, and the *Pene*; in the last of these the *Oder* loses its Name, and takes that of *Pene-Strom* at *Wolgast*. A violent North-West Wind kept us two Days and a half at the Mouth of the *Anclamfere*, where is a small Fort mounted with about a dozen Pieces of Cannon, at which every Vessel is obliged to shew its Pass, and pay three or four Pence; there is likewise a Custom-House, with some Officers who examine those who are going to *Stetin*. The Wind, being Northerly and moderate, gave us leave to come to *Wolgast*, where we were obliged to wait two Days in Expectation of a South-West Wind, without which we could go no farther.

*Wolgast*, This Town is small, and has but one Church, which was burnt, with a Number of Houses, by the *Russians* in 1713, a fatal Year to the *Swedes*, who paid dearly for their burning *Altena*, as I have observed elsewhere; there are yet but a few Houses rebuilt, the Church itself is not quite finished, though they perform divine Service in it. On the North-East Side of the Town runs a little River, called *Wolgast-Fluss*, which abounds with Fish; there is a Bridge over this River, leading to an old ruined Castle, about which are a few Cottages only.

The

\* The *Anclam* washes the Walls of a small Town of the same Name, which I saw only at a Distance, but thought it looked well; it was taken from *Sweden* by the Arms of *Brandenbourg*, in the Year 1676; and restored to it after the Peace of *Nimeguen*.

The Wind changing as we desired, we set sail, and stopt at *Penemuden* to shew our Passes; I say ours, because the Passengers are obliged to shew theirs, as well as the Vessels; but coming in at Night we could not have an Audience till the next Morning.

*Penemuden* is well enough known, and lately by the vigorous Defence it made against the *Prussian* Forces in 1715, since which Time it has remained in Possession of the King of *Prussia*, who maintains a Major there with 100 Men; this Port is well mounted with Artillery, but has hardly Houses enough in it for the smallest Village. When I came to the Major in the Morning, I told him I had taken no Pass, which, I thought, would not be required of me in Time of Peace; an added; that no one had questioned me before, on that Account; through all the Places I had passed: But he answered, That the King his Master expected them from every Passenger at all Times. However, the Captain, to whom I was recommended by M. *Mauchair* and some other considerable Persons, said so much in my Favour, that he let me pass.

The same Wind carried us to the little Island of *Ruden*, where we anchored near a little Fort not much unlike *Penemuden*, but without any Garrison; at this Place we were obliged to wait for a West Wind before we could pursue our Voyage, which we were lucky enough to have in less than 24 Hours. The Captain took a Pilot here to carry our Vessel to Sea. This Island is inhabited only by Persons of that Profession, who live by that and Fishing; it produces no kind of Grain or Fruit, but we bought very good wild Ducks, by the Help of the Pilot, for about four Pence a Piece.

The Wind grew so strong in an Hour after we got to Sea, that, although our Vessel was none of the best Sailors, we made 22 *German* Miles between five in the Morning and eight at Night; this we saw plainly upon examining our Chart, and taking notice of the Land which we were very near to all the Time. The Wind, after Midnight, rising to a Storm, we kept but one Sail, and coasted along *Cassubia*\*, the Capital of which we were willing to reach, if the Entrance of the Port, which is good at other Times, had not been dangerous to undertake with so strong a Wind as blew at that Time. We got into the Road of *Hellen*, and, finding the Place proper for it, we thought fit to come to an Anchor, 'till the Fury of the Wind was abated; it began to decrease towards Evening, but the Captain resolved to stay there all Night; that, as he said, we might have the whole Day before us. A Fisher-Boat coming up to us, I took that Opportunity to go on Shore, and was accompanied by the *Russian* Passenger, after we had made a Bargain with the Fishermen to bring us back again.

*Hellen*

\* *Cassubia* is a small Country with the Title of a Dukedom, the Capital of which is *Polberg*, situated on the Mouth of the River *Perfand*, defended by a pretty good Citadel; its chief Trade is in salt; the *Swedes* took it in 1631, after a Siege of five or six Months, and gave it up to the Electour of *Brandenbourg* by the Treaty of *Munster*.



*Hellen* is only a Village, with one Church in it pretty well built; the Inhabitants are almost all of them Fishermen; it is situated on a Neck of Land, and is but four Miles from *Dantzick*. We bought some fresh Provisions here, especially Fish, of which they salt up a great Quantity to send abroad. The Wind falling considerably, about six a Clock in the Morning we set sail, but were hardly got two Miles from the Road of *Hellen*, before it rose again with fresh Fury; however, as we failed directly before it for *Pillaw*, we contented ourselves with furling our Sails, according to the Advice of *Horace*,

*Comprimes Vento nimium secundo*

*Turgida Vela;*

and arrived happily at that Town in less than five Hours, by the Assistance of a Pilot who came to meet us, but had some Difficulty to board us.

I went ashore in his Boat to view the Town, as we were obliged to wait for a more moderate Wind to pursue our Voyage. It is a small, but pretty Town, situated on the River *Pregbel*, upon the Point of a Neck of Land, and at about a Mile and a half's Distance from another not so large, called *Fishagen*. *Pillaw* is defended by an old Castle, and a Fortress which seems something newer; there is but one Church in it, where divine Service is performed alternately by the *Lutherans* and *Calvinists*; near this Place is taken a great deal of Sturgeon, which they pickle to send abroad. The *Swedes* made themselves Masters of this Town in the Year 1625; but it was restored to *Brandenbourg* by the Treaty of *Oliva*, in 1660.

The Wind being very much abated, between four and five a Clock in the Afternoon, we went up the River *Haverstrom*\*, for here the *Pregbel*, which comes from *Koningsberg*, and discharges itself partly into the *Haff*, and partly into the Sea, takes that Name. We staid about an quarter of an Hour at *Fishagen*, where every Vessel pays a certain Duty; this is an open Place, pretty neat, with one Church that has nothing remarkable in it; and between eight and nine a Clock at Night we arrived at *Koningsberg*, which is not above five Miles further.

**Koningsberg:** This City is divided commonly into the old Town and the New, or rather into three; perhaps from the different Times of building, enlarging, and putting it in the Condition it is at present, under three different Names, viz. *Koningsberg*, *Kniphoff*, and *Lobnitz*, so that it may be called *Tripolis*. It is defended by a good Castle that commands the Harbour, in which there is, at all Times, never less than a whole Regiment in Garrison.

The

\* The Source of the *Pregbel* is near a Village, called *Neravol* in *Lithuania*, and it takes the Name of *Haverstrom* below *Koningsberg*.

The old Town is properly *Koningsberg*, (in Latin *Mons Regius*) so called from it's Situation on an Eminence. This City was one of the first built by the *Teutonic* Knights, after they had made themselves Masters of all *Ducal Prussia*. I have said before, in my Account of that Order, that they were established in *Germany* in the Reign, and by the Encouragement, of the Emperour *Frederick the Second*.

The History of this Order informs us, that that Emperour was an Eye-Witness of their Zeal for the Cause of *Jesus Christ*, and of the military Bravery, by which they signalized themselves against the *Infidels* in *Palestine*; that, being desirous to find Employment for them, he proposed to them the Conquest of *Prussia*, the Inhabitants of which were still Pagans; that these Knights carried the War thither in the Year 1228, and, having defeated the People in several Battles, they made themselves Masters of all their Country, and most of them embraced the Christian Religion: But, as Force and Interest commonly make more Hypocrites than true Believers, this History informs us, that many of them returned to Paganism; and that, when this Order flourished, there was in *Prussia* a kind of Inquisition, called the *secret Court*, to punish those who relapsed with Death. The *Teutonic* Knights were not the first Institutors of this Court\*, it had been established in *Germany* long before.

*The People of Prussia Pagans till the Year 1228.*

Be this as it will, it is certain that not only *Prussia* but *Courland*, *Livonia*, and many other Parts of *Germany*, are indebted to their Arms for the Establishment of Christianity among them. As soon as they became absolute Masters of all *Prussia*, they built *Marienburg*, and made it the chief Residence of their Order, after the rest of the Brotherhood, obliged to quit the *Holy Land*, were retired into the Empire. It was about that Time they laid the Foundation of *Koningsberg*, that is to say, in the Year 1254; *Lobnitz*, in which is the Castle that commands the Harbour, was founded, as it is generally believed, in 1330, by *Bernshold* of *Austria*; *Kniphoff*, which with the last forms what is properly called the New Town, is on the Island of *Kniphoff*, both named after an Officer who built the Town in the Year 1338; each of these three Towns has its own proper Magistrate.

As to the Name of *Koningsberg*, [ *King's Mount* ] it is thought to be given by the *Teutonic* Knights, its Founders, as a Compliment, and in Gratitude, to *Orthocar*, King of *Bohemia*, for the Succours he brought them to reduce the Pagans in those Parts. There are some will have this City more antient than this Conquest, and say, it was built by the first Kings of the Country, and had its Name from the Palace they had

T

on

\* This Court was composed of Counsellours and other zealous Persons, with Judges to condemn the Delinquents, who were executed in private; and for this Reason, according to *Marquardus Frecherus*, and others, it was called *Judicium Occultum*.

*The Castle of  
Koninsberg.*

on a Hill there; which Palace, they say, was where the Ducal Castle is at present, which was built on its Ruins; but all this seems mere Conjecture, and as such I only report it: However, as I am led to this Castle, I shall say something of it. It is a very large Structure, raised towards the latter end of the 15th Century, by *Frederick William*, Elector of *Brandenbourg*, in which there are at least as many Apartments as in that of *Stetin*; they are more regular, more stately, and better enlightened, but many of them not finished to this Day. There is a Hall in it remarkable for being near 270 Foot long, and 60 Foot wide, without any Pillars to support it.

*The Chapel  
and Library.*

The Chapel is fine, but not so fine as that of *Stetin*; what merits the most Attention is the Library, which contains a good Choice of Books, and a Number of curious Manuscripts; among them there is one wrote by Duke *Albert's* own Hand, which he composed for the Instruction of the Prince, his Son, containing useful Lessons for the Government of his Country. It was from hence *Chemnitz* took his Materials for his Examination of the Council of *Trent*. Here, among other Curiosities, is preserved the Safe-Conduct of *Luther*, found, it is said, among the Effects of his Daughter after her Death in *Prussia*: They likewise shew a Knife here, about a Span long, that was swallowed by a Countryman; but, it being extracted from his Body by an able Chymist, the Man lived many Years after in good Health, without finding the least Uneasiness from it. I must add, that the Castle appears so little to be built on the pretended Ruins of the antient Royal Palace, that even the *Teutonic* Knights were not there; but according to general Report, and other concurring Circumstances, in a Place not very near to it. The King of *Prussia* has lately given the Remains of it, and promised some other Materials to the *French Refugees*, to build a new Church withal, larger than what they have already, which is only of Wood, and too small for them, whose Number is much larger than at *Stetin*; where *M. Maclair* told me, he had not above 200 Communicants. There are in this triple City, if I may be allowed to call it so, nine Churches besides the Chapels of Hospitals.

*The Cathedral.*

The Dome or Cathedral is much the largest, but not the finest; there are several Monuments in it, some of which are worthy Observation, on account of the Epitaphs: The first is that of *Rosmarin*, wherein he is called one of the chief Disciples of *Luther*, and the Protestant Apostle of *Prussia* and *Livonia*. This Epitaph informs the Reader, that *Rosmarin*, after having embraced the Reformed Religion, and preached it to the *Prussians*, went to find this Reformer [*Luther*] on the *Elbe*, who sent him to preach in *Livonia*; that he acquitted himself with wonderful Success; and that, at his Return, he was made Superintendent of the Churches in *Koningsberg*, and of all in that Diocese.

II. That of *Ilma*, a Daughter of *Melancthon*, God-Daughter of *Luther*, and Wife of the Poet *Sosinus*: The Epitaph commends her Learning and rare Virtues.

III. That of a Baron of *Bohemia*, whose Epitaph says, that he was banished his Country on account of his having embraced the Reformed Religion; but that he was protected and beloved by Duke *Albert* of *Brandenbourg*, for that and his other personal Qualifications.

In this Church are many more Monuments which seem very antient, but without Inscriptions, or such as are so spoiled and defaced that it is impossible to read them. The most magnificent are inclosed in a Balustrade of Iron behind the Altar. On one side is an old Episcopal Seat made of Oak, on which is a Mitre and Crozier in Relief very well carved. This Cathedral is adorned with a Number of Paintings from sacred History, the best of which are a Creation, the Lord's Supper, a Crucifixion, and the Baptism of *S. John*. Among the Pictures, Monuments, and other Ornaments which the *Lutherans* preserve in their old Churches, or add to their new, I have met with no better Pieces of Painting and Carving, in my last Journey, than in those of *Stetin*. The Subjects or Designs are almost every where the same, or at least with very little Difference, except in the Execution. I do not pretend to have it thought, that all the Pictures in the Churches of *Stetin* are without Faults; I shall give some Instances of the contrary: For Example, in a Picture of the Lord's Supper, which stands over the Altar in the Chapel of the Castle, it must be confessed the Apostles are painted in Attitudes proper enough, but *J. C.* is represented with a gay, smiling Countenance, as if he was at a Feast of Pleasure, and *S. John* like a beautiful Lad of twelve or thirteen, half asleep reclining his Head in *C's* Bosom. I cannot think this Air of *J. C.* and this Posture of *S. John* in anywise agreeable to a Subject so serious and venerable as this to all Christians. In another Picture above this, which I take to be by the same Hand, *J. C.* is represented with a fuller, but a less handsome, Face, holding the Globe of the World in his Hand, and with these Words on the Frame; *Speciosus Forma præ Filiis Hominum, diffusa est Gratia in Labiis tuis*; Thou art more beautiful than the Sons of Men, Grace is diffused on thy Lips. Here ought to have been the handsomest Face the Pencil could paint. There are few better Paintings than those which adorn the Body of the Pulpit in the same Chapel; but the Nudities of the Creation, especially of *Eve* tempted by the Serpent, are too natural, too free, and, in a Word, immodest. The Devil endeavouring to tempt *J. C.* is bold and delicate; but a Cardinal's Hat on the Head of that Angel of Darkness does not please every body. This is very likely a Piece of Malice aimed at some Cardinal; for Painters, in their Works, do but too often follow the Dictates of their Passions. I have seen such Faults in other Places; but I never saw Pulpits with such Ornaments;

ments; they are commonly adorned with small Statues of the Evangelists, Apostles, or the like; such is that of the Cathedral at *Koningsberg*, which is not the finest in this City. The Organ here is magnificent; they have just repaired it, and are now repairing the whole Church, which is situated in the New-Town. The same Gate on the South-West side gives Entrance into the Church-Yard, and leads to the Academy of *Belles-Lettres*; over which are two Busto's of Men in *Alto Relievo* of good Workmanship, one without and the other within; the first holds a Helmet in one Hand, and a naked Sword upright in the other, with this Inscription under him:

*GEORGIO FREDERICO D.G. Marchioni BRANDENBURGIENSI STETINI Pomeraniæ Cassubiorum Vandalorum & in Silesia Carnia Duci Burgravio Norimbergenfi Rugique Margravio Vergel in perpetuam debitamque Memoriam atque Grattitudinem 1597, & ren. Anno 1724.*

The other on the inside holds also a naked Sword, but resting on his Shoulder, from the Guard of which there hangs an Escutcheon, whereon two Eagles are painted, one black and the other red, with gilt Feet, and this Inscription under it, *Insigne Academiae Regiomontane.*

*The Academy:*

The Academy was founded in the Year 1554, by the first *Lutheran* Duke of *Prussia*, *Albert*, whom I have already mentioned. All that can be learnt from the first Inscription is, that the Gate, or House, was repaired or embellished by *George Frederick*, Marquis of *Brandenbourg*, in the Year 1597; and from the latter Part of it, that it was so again in 1724.

This Academy has produced great Men in every Science; there is a fine Printing-House in it, wherein they have lately printed a *Lithuanian* Version of the *New Testament*, and they were preparing a *Bible* for the Press in the same Language. The Library is well stored with good Books and curious Manuscripts. The *Libnian* Church is the best built of any; the Ornaments of carved Work and Painting are good, and disposed with Judgment. The *Polish* Church and that of *Oberbeck* are not without Beauties.

The *German Calvinists* have a very large one of good modern Architecture; that of the *Roman Catholics* is pretty enough, and well adorned. The City was very much beautified by Duke *Albert*; on the great Gate that was built or repaired, as it is said, in his Reign, is this Inscription, *Turris fortissima Nomen Domini*; and under that these Verses, to shew the Duty of a good Prince.

*Parcere Subjectis, & debellare Superbos,  
Principis officium musa Maronis ait,  
Sic regere hunc populum, Princeps Alberte, memento.  
Sed cum divina cuncta potentis ope.*

There

\* This Church is so called, because divine Service is performed in it in the *Polish* Tongue, and is for the Use of Persons of that Nation, most of them Officers or Soldiers in the King's Service.

There are more *Latin* Inscriptions upon another Gate near the Exchange to the same Purpose, which I omit transcribing as little curious. Upon the Exchange itself, which is a small and indifferent Building, there are some to recommend Integrity, plain, honest Dealing, and the like good Advice. There are Inscriptions over most of the Doors of the Houses, as in most Parts of *Germany*, but more at *Königsberg* than any where else. These are either Passages from Scripture, Proverbs, or some moral Decrees in *Latin* or *German*. The Houses are much alike, but better enlightened with Windows than in many Towns in *Germany*. The Inhabitants are civil, sincere, and honest Dealers. The Women are industrious and good House-Wives, faithful to their Husbands or their Lovers; those of Rank dress after the *French*, but the Generality after the *German* Fashion. The single Women wear long white Veils, that cover them from head to foot; the married Women have them black. In Winter they wear a kind of short Cloak on their Shoulders, like that which is come into Fashion of late Years in *England*; but lined with Furs, as in *Poland*, *Hungary*, *Lithuania*, and all *Russia*. Women of the ordinary Sort endure the greatest Labour and Fatigue, like those in *Sweden*; it is rare, for Example, to see even a Fisher-Boat that has not two Women to a Man in it; but in the small Passage-Boats upon the River there are commonly none but Women; if there are two Men to a Woman in a Boat, the first row as usual, sitting with their Backs to the Place whither they are going, but the Woman rows, standing with her Face towards it.

As there is gathered a great deal of Amber about *Königsberg*, it makes a small Branch of their Trade; the most considerable Part of which consists in Cloth and other Woollen-Stuffs made by the *French Refugees*, and in Sturgeon. I shall speak in another Place of the Amber that is wrought here, and of the several little Works made of it, that are very curious.

I was willing to see *Dantzick*, where I had some Business as well as Curiosity, and to go as far as *Thorn*. I formed and executed the Plan of this Tour in the following Manner: I took the Convenience of one of those small Vessels which go every Week with Passengers for *Dantzick*, and which are called Yachts, a Name not at all proper for them; I very unluckily embarked on board one of the worst and oldest among them, at *Frederick-Huse*, where the Captain took in his Passengers. This is a fine House, which the King of *Prussia* made a Present of to one of his Generals, situated on the South Side the River. We were hardly got into the *Haff* but the Wind turned directly against us, and we rolled about without advancing any thing to speak of, and, blowing soon after pretty strong, our pretended Yacht took in so much Water, that the Sailors and some of the Passengers were forced to be continually at the Pump: As there are many Sand-Banks in the *Haff*, and our

*The Author leaves Königsberg, and goes through Dantzick to Thorn.*

U

Captain,

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

Captain, fearing we might fall upon some of them, and be split, fought the nearest and safest Place to come to an Anchor; this was near a Hamlet which is inhabited only by Fishermen, on a Point facing that on which *Pillaw* stands. The next Day, the Wind abating, we began to go about again, and some of the Sailors and Passengers went to the Pump; and, the Wind not being quite so high, our Vessel did not take in so much Water as the Day before. We reached the middle of the *Haff*, which may be a Mile broad where it is broadest, and the Waters deepest, as they are in that Place. The Master and three Sailors, who with one more at the Helm composed the whole Crew, made use of their long Oars for about three Hours in the Morning, and as much in the Afternoon. We anchored on the same Side the *Haff*, and near the Shore, to be under Shelter, if the Wind should have blown strong; the next Day, the Wind being neither better nor worse, we did the same; but the third Day, being weary of this disagreeable Work, and finding we were over-against a little Hamlet, I asked some of the Passengers, who knew that Country, If I could not hire Horses there for *Dantzick*? They told me I might. I paid the Captain, and desired he would send me ashore, which he did accordingly; and at the Hamlet I hired a couple of Horses of a Countryman, one for myself and another for a Guide; upon the Road, about a quarter of a Mile from the Post-House, we overtook the *Pillaw-Waggon* \*.

As there were but two Persons in it, I agreed with the Coachman for a Place. I had seen nothing from the Place where we anchored the first Day till now, but a barren sandy Land with a few Pine-Trees and Brambles; I say seen, having always kept near enough to *Nering* to view it. I have called this Island narrow, and properly I think, for it is not above 300 Paces broad in many Parts of it, that is, from the first Hamlet where we anchored, to the last where I took Horses; but from thence to *Dantzick*, besides its being much broader, it is very fertile and pleasant, and, in about seven or eight Miles, we passed through several good Villages.

Being come to the Extremity of *Nering*, we crossed in a Ferry-Boat the little Streight, which makes a Communication between the *Frisch-Haff* and the Gulph of *Dantzick*; at a little Distance from thence we went over a Branch of the *Vistula*, by a Bridge about fifty Paces long, and four other before we entered the City; for this River falls into the Gulph here, dividing its Waters into five Branches or Ditches: Besides some good Fortifications which defend these Passages, the Advantage of being able, in case of Necessity, to put the Land under Water, by opening the Sluices, renders the Approach to *Dantzick* as difficult as that to

\* The Post-Waggon of *Koningsberg* and *Pillaw* (for it is the same) sets out twice every Week, from a House, built for that Purpose, on that Point of the Island *Nering* which faces *Pillaw*. This long narrow Island is in the Form of a Man's Leg, the Foot of which begins at the Gulph of *Dantzick*, and extends itself along the *Haff*, from S. W. to N. E.

to many Towns in *Holland*. There are between the aforesaid Bridges three Suburbs. The second Bridge we passed is about sixty Yards long; the third above 100, with a fine Gate of Stone; the fourth is near fifty eight; and the fifth above sixty.

After having crossed the last we entered the City, by a Gate that Dantzick. has an old round Tower on each side of it; at the Entrance on the right Hand is the Magazine for Iron, a large plain Building; a little further are those for Corn, Wax, and other Merchandizes, which belong to the Commerce of *Dantzick*: Then passing through another sort of Gate, always open, which consists of three Arcades, we came directly to the great Market, where stands the Town-House and Exchange; The Town-House. the first has a very fine Tower on the top of it, with a curious Ring of little Bells; the Apartments in it are neat, and adorned with some good Paintings: The latter, which was once called the Bank, is also adorned with several good Pictures, and Statues, and some Figures, both The Exchange. sacred and profane, cut in Relievo; the chief among the sacred are Paradise and Hell, with the World between; *S. Hubert* like a Hunter, with a Stag carrying a Cross between his Horns, the Dog looking back at him, &c. Among the Profane is *Orpheus* drawing the Beasts about him by the Harmony of his Lyre. The Building is not large, but a good Piece of *Gothick* Architecture; there are some Shops in it, where they sell Toys, Jewels, Prints, Linnen, &c. The Merchants commonly meet before the Gate which fronts the great Market.

The City is fine, large, well peopled, and rich; it has a great Number of publick Buildings in it, which have all their Beauties agreeable to the Times they were raised in: I shall say something on them, and begin with the Cathedral, which is called here, as in other Places, The Cathedral. the Dome. The Architecture is *Gothick* of the most antient kind; the *Roman Catholics* strove all they could, but in vain, to preserve it to themselves; they afterwards desired, and solicited for a long time the Liberty of serving God alternatively in it after their Manner; but the *Lutherans*, who are Masters of that as well as all the rest of the City, only gave them leave to build a Chapel at about a 100 Yards Distance from it. What seemed most strange to me in this Cathedral was, that all the Chapels, Altars, and Ornaments were left standing, in the same Manner as when the *Romish* Religion prevailed in this City, which I believe was an Article of the Treaty between *Dantzick* and *Poland*. I counted more than forty three Altars there, which is a greater Number than I have seen any where else, even in the Cathedral of *Milan*, that is much bigger; the Baptismal Font is magnificent, and cost, they assured me, 25,000 *Rixdollars*. There are several fine Statues of Saints in it, and some good Pictures among many very indifferent ones. The Chapel may be called a Church for its Bigness; it is a very good Imitation of the fine *Roman* Architecture; there is a Cupola answerable to the



the rest of the Building, and it is well decorated within. Two *Jesuits* from the Colledge of that Society, in the Suburbs of *Cujavia*, who are not allowed to pass a Night in the City, come every Day to perform Divine Service: Some other religious Communities, who have renounced all worldly Power, made Vows of Poverty, and live accordingly, have Convents here; among these the mendicant *Capuchins* have one; they appear in publick with the Habit of their Order; their begging Brothers go about the Street with a Wallet on their Shoulders, and receive Alms, even from many *Lutheran* Families; who say, they are a good sort of People, that never disturb the Government, nor meddle with any other Affairs but those of their Convent, and the Service of their Church. There are in this City twenty Parochial Churches, some of which are as much worth Notice as the Cathedral, some please a great deal more; but I shall not give a Detail or Description of them.

*The Arsenal.*

The Arsenal is an Edifice, the Architecture of which, although *Gothick*, pleases extremely; it is stored with a prodigious Quantity of fine Arms, both antient and modern; among the antient are those of the *Teutonick* Knights, and those of the *Croises*. As to the Houses of the Inhabitants, they are generally very high, built with Brick, after the *German* Fashion. Going out of the City South-East, it will be found much stronger by Art than Nature, and more cannonable and bombardable, (if I may be allowed to express myself so) than on the Side I come in at, being commanded by Mountains: For although those which are nearest to the City are almost all undermined, yet unless they are defended by a more numerous Army than this little Republick can set on foot, they will give a great Advantage to an Enemy. Towards the North-West there is a long Suburb big enough to pass for a Town; it is under the Jurisdiction of the Bishop of *Cujavia*, and inhabited partly by *Roman Catholics*, and partly by *Lutherans*. The Colledge of *Jesuits* in this Place is fine; it is from hence the two Fathers, I mentioned before, are sent to perform Divine Service at the *Catholic* Chapel in the City. A good League further, towards the North-West, stands *Oliva*, a famous Monastery of *Benedictine* Monks. Some will have this to have been formerly a House for the *Teutonick* Knights, built by one of their first Great-Masters, named *Conrard Wallenrod*; they add, that he also laid the first Foundation of *Dantzick*, in the Year 1390; others say, that he only built that Part of it which is called *Die-Recht-Stad*, and that the *Danes* had began to build it in 1165, when *Voldimer*, King of *Denmark*, being at War with *Sobeslaus*, a Prince of *Pomerania*, erected a Fortrefs there, called *Danefwick*: There are others affirm, that it was only a Village in 1295, when *Premislaus*, King of *Poland*, made himself Master of it; and that this last, by the Addition of some Buildings, made a Town of it. *Cluverius*, who was a Native of *Dantzick*, says, it was not walled till 1342. It is certain that,

that, like *Königsberg*, it was built at different Times, and, like that, divided into three Towns by different Names, viz. *Al-Stadt*, *Voor-Stadt*, and *Recht-Stadt*, which altogether make one of the largest Cities in *Europe*, and the Trade of it makes it one of the richest and most populous; but I will leave it at present to visit the Monastery of *Oliva*.

This is a large Building, wherein is a Mixture of antient and modern Architecture, which shews, that it has been enlarged, as the City was, at different Times; when I say antient Architecture, I do not mean *Greek* or *Roman*, but *Gothick*, such as is seen in most religious Houses in *Europe*, and especially in *Germany*: However, in the whole it is a noble Structure. The Church deserves the most Notice, which is not only well built, but finely decorated with very good Pieces both of Sculpture and Painting, and rich in it's sacred Utensils and other Ornaments; the House has a very pleasant Garden belonging to it; the Monks are very civil, and take delight in shewing whatever is curious to Strangers. This Abbey is chiefly remarkable in History for the Treaty of Peace concluded there in the Year 1660, by the Mediation of *France*, between *Sweden*, *Denmark* and *Poland*; in which the Emperour and the Electour of *Brandenbourg* became Parties, and declared themselves Guarantees. By this Treaty *Poland* gave up all Right and Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden* to *Livonia*, *Estonia*, &c. These contracting Powers did mutually oblige themselves, by the second Article of this Treaty, to protect, maintain, and defend the *Protestants* and free Towns of *Royal Prussia*, namely, *Dantzick*, *Elbing* and *Thorn*, in their Acquisitions, Possessions, Rights, Priviledges and Liberties, both spiritual and temporal.

After having staid four Days, to satisfy my Curiosity, at *Dantzick*, where the Business I had did not take me up an Hour, I left that City to go to *Thorn*, where the bloody Tragedy acted some time since still makes a great Noise. The *Jesuits* are generally looked upon as the Authors of it; for it is the Fate of these good Fathers to have all the Mischiefs, that is done by their Disciples, or the Persons whose Consciences they direct, laid to their Charge. I took the Advantage of the Company of two Merchants, who eat in the same Inn where I lodged, and proffered me a Place in a Boat in which they were returning home, one to *Culm*, and the other to *Thorn*: The first was a *Roman Catholick*, the last a *Lutheran*. I found them both alike civil and sociable; they talked to some other Passengers of the Affair of *Thorn*, without the least Partiality or Passion. They knew, they said, some very honest Men among the *Jesuits*, but agreed, that the Number of those, who are not to be regarded as such, had so far prevailed in that Affair, that, by their Misrepresentations, their interested and unfaithful Reports, full of Aggravation to the Assessorial Court of *Warsaw*, they had rendered the Tumult,

mult, excited by their Disciples, as advantageous to their own Society as it was fatal to the City of *Thorn*, in which they had been only tolerated, but were in a manner become Masters of it. I had heard as much, or more, through the Countries I passed, from whence the same Conclusion might be drawn: But I shall leave this Subject now, to speak of our Passage. We embarked in the Afternoon with a favourable Wind; the Company of these Gentlemen, and the Variety of Objects that presented themselves to us on both sides the *Vistula* or *Weissel*, as the *Germans* call it, made our Passage not less agreeable than it was short. The first of these Objects was the Island formed by this River in dividing itself in two Branches, which run to discharge themselves, one Eastward into the *Frisch-Haff*, and the other Westward into the Gulph of *Dantzick*. We passed by *Dirschaw* before Night, which is a pretty little Town agreeably situated on the Western Branch of the River, about six Leagues from *Dantzick*; it is neat and well peopled; the Country all along the River is very pleasant and fertile. The second Town we met with, after *Dirschaw*, was *Novibourg*, a small Place situated on a Hill washed by the River, that seems to have nothing more to recommend it than its Situation and Prospect of a fine Country. At length we arrived at *Graudenz*, which is much larger and more worth Notice than the other two. It is situated where the *Ossa* and *Vistula* meet, has a good Castle, and two fine Churches; the Walls of it are thick and well cemented; we stopt here two Hours, and afterwards went to *Chouza*, or *Schewitz*, as some write it; this is reckoned the most antient of all the Towns I have named. There are but few Marks left of its pristine Magnificence, except some old Ruins, which shew that it was large; its Church is a fine Piece of *Gothick* Building, and all that is worth taking notice of at this Time.

Culm.

The History of the *Teutonic* Knights informs us, that it was in a very flourishing Condition under their Government. *Culm* is not above a League and a half further, where we arrived a little before Night, and staid till next Morning. The Merchant, whose Journey ended here, invited us to sup with him and two more Travellers of the same Town.

The *Teutonic* Knights, soon after their Conquest of the *Royal Prussia*, laid the Foundation of this Town at the same Time with that of *Mariembourg*, *Thorn*, and some others, to curb the Pagan *Prussians*, as I have hinted elsewhere. It flourished for a long Time, but is one of those which has most decayed since their shaking off the *Teutonic* Yoke; it was very populous, and an Episcopal See, which is since transferred to *Colmense*; it is built on an Eminence washed by the *Vistula*, and was a Place of no less Trade than *Thorn*, before *Dantzick* got the better of it, as well as of *Mariembourg*, *Elbing*, and the other Towns of *Royal Prussia*, whose Traffick it has so much engrossed, that this River is neglected to that Degree, that it is hardly navigable but for flat-bottomed Boats,

Boats, which require no more Water than just what serves to move the Rudder in; the Churches in this Town have been the best preserved of any Thing in it; the Cathedral, which would be sufficient for all its Inhabitants, is a noble Building of the best *Gothick* Architecture.

Our Boat brought us in less than five Hours to *Thorn*, which, of all the free Towns of *Royal Prussia*, is that which, next to *Dantzick*, has lost the least of its antient Magnificence, notwithstanding the Quarrels and Wars it has been involved in, as well to support its first Masters, as since in Defence of its Protectours. It was in the Year 1459, that it shook off the Yoke of the *Teutonic* Knights, which was done by a League with *Dantzick* and *Elbing*; and these three soon brought not only all the other Towns of *Royal Prussia* into it, but all the Nobility of the Country; they joined Arms with *Poland*, who, jealous of the prodigious Power of the *Teutonic* Order, inspired them with the Design, and encouraged them to undertake it by Promises of Protection, with very considerable Advantages. The Knights could not withstand this united Force, but were soon obliged to yield all *Royal Prussia* to that Crown, and to do Homage for the Province, called at this Time *Ducal Prussia*; which they did not enjoy any longer than the Year 1525, when *Albert*, their Grand-Master, as I said in the first Chapter, embraced the reformed Religion of *Luther*. King *Sigismund*, his Uncle, erected it into a Dutchy in his Favour, and made it hereditary in his Family, the Investiture of which he received by the Treaty of *Velaw*. *Poland* yielded the full Sovereignty of this Dutchy to the Electoral House of *Brandenbourg*; the Prerogatives, Possessions, and Acquisitions of the confederate Towns were not only continued on the Conditions agreed on, between them and the Kings of *Poland*, and secured by several authentick Treaties, whereof many sovereign Princes, both *Catholick* and *Protestant*, became Guarantees; but also confirmed; as I have said before, in the Year 1660, by that of *Oliva*. These Prerogatives, as well civil as ecclesiastical, are like the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom, and comprehended in the *Pacta Conventa*, which all the Kings of *Poland* since *Sigismund* have bound themselves by Oath to observe.

*Thorn* is still the neatest and finest City of all *Royal Prussia*; its Houses, though built after the old *German* Fashion, are better and more regular than those of any other Town in that Country; its Streets better paved, and broader than those of *Dantzick*, to which it yields in nothing but Bigness; its Town-House is a great deal larger and finer, and surpasses, in the Beauty of *Gothick* Architecture and Magnificence, all those of both *Flanders*, where are, without Dispute, the finest of this Kind in *Europe*; its Churches are excellent Pieces of the same Architecture; the finest are *S. James's* and *S. Mary's*; the Chapel of the *Jesuits* pleases very much; its Ornaments of Sculpture and Painting are in a good Taste, and well distributed; the Bridge of *Thorn* is bold, and well built.

built. The Fortifications of this Town were, as they say, of the best fort; but the late King of Sweden, *Charles the Twelfth*, to whom this Town, intimidated by the *Czar* and the King of *Poland*, refused to open its Gates, took it by Force in the Year 1703, and dismantled it; and that not so much out of Revenge, as to prevent its serving his Enemies for a Place of Retreat. This Place enjoyed all its Rights and Privileges 'till the Year 1724, that is to say, 'till the Time of the Tumult, which has been as a Grave to its Liberty. The Inhabitants ascribe this Tumult and all their Misfortunes to the *Jesuits*, whom they accuse, at the same Time; of one of the blackest Pieces of Ingratitude. It is in the following Manner I have heard several of them speak of it. 'Our City had ever since the Reformation refused the *Jesuits*, as ' *Dantzick* had done, to settle within her Walls; they often employed several of the *Polish* Nobility, who were their best Friends, and ' who, they knew, were so of our Magistrates, to obtain a little School ' therein; but these always excused themselves, knowing, by the Confession of the *Roman Catholics* themselves, the ambitious and restless Spirit of this Society, who if they get one Foot of Land to ' Day, will take two to Morrow, and so on: But this unfortunate ' City could not refuse this Liberty to the Prince now reigning, on ' the gracious Assurances he was pleased to give them, not only of his ' royal Protection, after the Example of his Predecessours, but of other ' Marks of his Favour, as Occasions should offer. We were very far from ' fearing, that a Prince, who so well deserves the Sceptre and the Name ' he bears, for his Greatness of Soul, Generosity and other excellent ' Qualities, would be less favourable to us than his Predecessours; we ' were very far from believing, our fore Fathers having been delivered, by ' their Assistance, from the Oppressions of a military Order, that we ' should, under his Reign, be oppressed by a religious one: We cannot believe, even while we see our Magistrates and fellow Citizens ' murdered or banished, their Families reduced to the utmost Misery ' and Poverty by their Estates being confiscated; in a Word, our City ' stripped of its dearest Prerogatives; we cannot believe, I say, that he ' had any other Share in it than by suffering his Justice and Clemency ' to be imposed on, by the Artifices and Misrepresentations of our Enemies; or would have permitted it, if it could have been prevented ' without endangering his Crown, or, it may be, his Person. Our ' Magistrates, say they, had sufficient Reason to deny the Establishment of a little School, since they no sooner obtained it, but they ' made a Colledge of it, which they every Day enlarged. They beheld ' with Spleen and Envy ours frequented and flourishing; they could ' not conceal their Malice, neither could they demand the Suppression ' of it without some Foundation; they wanted a Pretext, and this offered to them, or rather they framed it in the following Manner'.  
This

This is as it was related to me by above 30 Persons, and some of them *Roman Catholics*, at different Times and Places, all separately, and with all the Marks of Impartiality that could be.

The sixteenth of *July*, on which Day the *Roman Catholics* celebrate the Festival, known by the Name of the Holy *Scapulary*\*, of our Lady of *Carmel*, they made their usual Procession round the Church of *S. James*; our Populace and young People, as in all other Places, being fond of Shows of this Kind, ran in great Crowds to see the Procession, which had been made every Year, without any Affront taken or given till that fatal Day, which proved the last to the Liberties of *Thorn*. All the Spectators of both Sexes do affirm, that there was not a Man or Boy among the *Lutherans* but had his Hat under his Arm, although the *Jesuits* maintain the contrary. One of their Scholars came out of the Procession to bid the People kneel, which they refusing to do, he gave them ill Language, and pushed one or two of them in a very rude Manner, who repulsed him with this Answer, That this never had been exacted before from any of their Religion, and in their own Town too; and that neither he nor his Masters had any Right to do it. This was accompanied, without doubt, with such Language as the meaner People treat one another in their Anger. After the Procession, the same Scholar, having filled his Pocket with Stones, and gathered together a Number of his Companions, marched at their Head through the Streets, and meeting some young People together, among whom was one of those whom he would have forced to kneel, he gave him very ill Language, calling him *Heretick*, &c. and received no better, being called *Idolater*; and complimented with some other Epithets, which provoking him, he threw a Stone, that missed the Person aimed at, but wounded slightly one of his Company; from this they proceeded to Blows on both Sides, and were ready to engage in a general Battle, when some Soldiers, who were not far off, hearing the Noise, ran thither, seized the Ring-Leader of the Scholars, and carried him to the Guard-House. The next Day, although the President, *Rosner*, had ordered the Prisoner to be set at Liberty, at the Request of the Rector of the *Jesuits* Colledge, a Body of the Scholars appeared again in the Streets, insulting several Persons, and shewing them naked Swords, with several Menaces; upon which one of them was seized and confined, as the other had been in the Guard-House. They went very boldly to demand his Release of the President, who reprimanded them as they deserved; they were not at all pleased, and resolved to seize the first Man they

*An Account of  
the great Tu-  
mult in that  
City, in the  
Year 1724.*

Y

could

\* The *Scapulary* is a kind of Collar of an Order, the first of which, as many believe, was brought by the Virgin *Mary* herself to *S. Simon Stock*, a Monk in the Monastery of *Mount Carmel*. It consists of two Pieces of brown Cloth, such as the Habit of the *Carmelites* is made of, not so broad as the Palm of one's Hand; upon one of these commonly is embroidered *Jesus*, and upon the other *Mary*, which, being sowed at each End to a Ribbon, is put about the Neck. Many rare Virtues are ascribed to this; such as preserving those that wear it from Fire, Arms, Swords, the Snares of the Devil, &c.

could meet by way of Reprisal: But this escaping by the Lightness of his Heels, they marched directly to the Guard-House, to release the Prisoner by Force; but were repulsed by the Soldiers. As they retired without being pursued, they laid hold of a *Lutheran* Student; whom they found in his Night-Gown at the Door of his Lodgings, they dragged him by the Hair, beating and abusing him all the Way to their Colledge, where they shut him up: Some *Lutheran* Scholars, Apprentices, and other People ran to his Relief, but when they came to the Colledge-Gate, and found it shut, they threatned to break it open; upon which the Scholars came out with Sword in Hand, and wounded some of them, and would have wounded more, or been wounded themselves; or worse, if the President had not sent some Soldiers who drove them into their Colledge; and the Officer who commanded them demanded in his Name, and by his Order, the *Lutheran* Scholar of the Rector; but was answered, He should be restored, when the *Catholic* Student was sent back, who was detained in the Guard-House. The President receiving this Answer, which though none of the politest, without any Resentment, gave Orders to the Town-Clerk for the Exchange of the two Prisoners. In the mean Time the Populace ran from all Parts of the Town to the Colledge, upon the Report of what had happened; This Populace consisted of Workmen, Apprentices, some *Lutheran* Students, and the like; those in the Colledge threw Stones and fired Pistols out of their Windows, which so enraged the Mob, that they broke open the Gate, and were pushing one another in, when the Town-Clerk came with the *Roman Catholic* Scholar. The President hearing of this Violence, which the few Soldiers he had sent could not (the *Jesuits* say would not) prevent, he sent a greater Number; one of the Consuls went also to endeavour by his Presence to appease the Tumult; they marched with such Diligence, that they arrived there almost as soon as the Town-Clerk; they obliged the Scholars to retire, which was done without any further Disorder; the Exchange was made of the two Prisoners; the Colledge-Gate was shut again; and the Consul and Town-Clerk with the *Lutheran* Student went to their respective Homes; the Soldiers, thinking there would be no further Occasion for them, now the Prisoners were restored, which was the chief Cause of the Mob's Rising, returned also: But they were hardly out of Sight, before the Students began again to throw Stones, and fire their Pistols at some young Fellows that remained before the Colledge, which soon brought back those who were going, and many more; and they began to break the Windows with the same Stones that had been thrown at them; then, bursting open the Gate, they entered, broke, tore, burnt and destroyed every Thing that came in their Way; nay, some plundered, and in short committed such Disorders, that no Man of Honour can approve of, or will ever pretend to justify, how great soever the



the Provocation was, that they received from the *Jesuits* Scholars, who now began to hide themselves through Fear. How great soever this Disorder was, it was not so great, add my Informers, as the *Jesuits* have represented it: It is very likely it would have been greater, or worse; (For what is not an enraged Mob capable of doing, in which the Scum and meanest People of a Town never fail to make a Part?) for this Mob, having exercised their Fury on the Pictures of these Fathers and their Saints\*, would very probably have done the same to their Persons, if the Commandant of the Town had not come to their Assistance, with a Detachment from the Garrison, and forced the Mob to retire. The *Jesuits*, it is said, do not disown this; but say, that the Assistance came too late, and when the Mischief was done; but still that Mischief might have been greater; their own Persons and their Scholars are safe, and as to the Damage done their Colledge and Chapel, three or four thousand Florins would repair it; but they have demanded above forty. Would to God, if they had demanded ten times as much, they had had it, and been contented with it, and with the Blood of the Guilty, that the Innocent might have been suffered to enjoy their Priviledges, Liberties, Colledge, Schools, &c. But they pretend it was a Favour done to *Thorn*, to permit half its Magistrates, Aldermen, Officers and Soldiers to be *Lutherans*, and only the other Half to be *Roman Catholics*.

Among a great Number of *Roman Catholics*, who were sensibly touched at our Misfortunes, some even of their own Society, in whose Hearts all Sentiments of Humanity were not entirely extinguished, could not help expressing their Concern, that Matters should be carried to such a Degree of Severity, as to punish a whole City for the Crimes of some particular Persons, and those too the most unworthy of its Inhabitants, whom the rest would think it an Advantage to be rid of: But others, to our Misfortune, the largest and most powerful Number, are not actuated by the same Spirit. Some of us, having quoted the Example of God's great Mercy, who would have spared the City of *Sodom*, if he had found ten righteous Persons in it, were answered, that the Crime of the *Sodomites* was an Offence against their Neighbour, against the Female-Sex, but that that of *Thorn*, whose Inhabitants had broke, tore, burnt and prophaned the Images of the Son of God, his Mother and his Saints, or suffered it's Citizens to commit such abominable Sacrilege, was the Crime of *Lete-Majesty Divine* †. They quoted, in their Turn,

the

\* Several *Roman Catholics* have told me, that the Mob were obstinately bent not only to destroy the Pictures of the *Jesuits*, but those of their Saints, which they saw in the Habit of the Order; upon some of which the Crucifixion was painted, or the Virgin *Mary* holding the Child *Jesus* in her Arms on a Cloud: These are not uncommon, I have seen several such, even of other Orders, and among them *S. Francis*, and *S. Dominic*.

† I could not help thinking, these Sentiments were invented for the reverend Fathers, and said so to those who related the Affair to me; but was assured, by a *Lutheran* Minister, who had the Reputation of an honest Man, that, being in a Place where he could speak freely, in Company with two *Jesuits*, when the Business of *Thorn* was brought upon the Carpet, that they were not ashamed to express themselves in that Manner, and the same has been confirmed to me by some *Roman Catholics*.



the Example of *Adam*, for whose Disobedience God had condemned all Mankind to eternal Death ; in short, they spoke of the *Jesuits*, as if they had dictated the Sentence of the *Assessorial* Court ; which has reduced *Thorn* to that miserable Condition it is in at present : For, I must say it again, it is the Fate of these reverend Fathers to be looked upon, not only by the *Protestants*, but by a great Number of *Roman Catholics*, as the Authors of the greatest Mischiefs and most cruel Persecutions that they suffer: They make our Misfortunes, say the People of *Thorn*, a Merit before God to those Powers whose Consciences they direct. It was not enough to have deprived us, say they, of the Protection of *Poland*, with respect to our Privileges, but have destroyed that Compassion, with which some *Catholic* Powers beheld us, who were to be Guarantees for them, and who gave us some Hopes of recovering them ; and not content yet with this, they have taken from us, by the Means of some of those Powers, the Support of that *Protestant* Prince, who, by the Treaty of *Oliva*, was most solemnly engaged to preserve our Privileges, and who seemed inclined to procure the Restitution of them. That Prince, who was the first to exhort, by his Ministers and Letters, the *Protestant* Powers and others to joyn with him to obtain them from the Court of *Poland*, is the first, who abandons us, and withdraws himself from those Powers, leaving them to use their warmest Endeavours at that Court for this Purpose : But, alas ! how can we hope to succeed, while we have such powerful and implacable Enemies as the *Jesuits* ? They added many other Lamentations on their sorrowful Condition, which I shall not repeat, knowing it can do them no Good, and might not be pleasing to all my Readers. I shall only add something to what I have already said, of the flourishing State of *Thorn*, before I leave it.

The Academy here has produced several great Men ; it was founded by *Henry Stroband*, a rich and learned Citizen, who was Burgo-Master of this City, which he has greatly embellished, and enriched its Library with the best Books, and most curious Manuscripts that he could purchase. It is said, there were formerly in it two of *Tully's Epistles* written on Wax-Tables, which, they believe, the *Swedes* took away with many other good Books and Manuscripts ; but no-body could tell me when. I did not see these Pieces in the Library of *Upsal* ; perhaps Queen *Christina* carried them to *Rome*. It is certain the *Swedes* were more than once Masters of the City of *Thorn* ; they took it from the *Poles*, after a long Siege, in the Year 1655 ; and, after a longer, which lasted above six Months, the *Poles* retook it in 1658 ; the *Swedes* recovered it the Year after, and lost it in 1665, when the *Poles* took it by Surprise. I did not see the Remains of this Library, which, they told me, were put into a Chest, some Time after the Execution of the Sentence of the *Assessorial* Court ; and it was not known, whether the *Lutherans*

*therans* would be allowed to carry them to their new Colledge out of the City, or, as some feared, that the *Jesuits* would get them to theirs.

After four Days Stay at *Thorn*, I embarked again in the *Vistula*, on board a large Boat loaded with Goods for *Dantzick*, which was to take in likewise some Barrels of Mead at *Mariembourg*, where the best is made; I did not meet with so good Company in this Boat as the two Merchants I parted with before; but our Passage was shorter, and we had no need of Horses to draw our Boat, as sometimes they do those that are larger, and more heavily laden, when the Wind is high or against them, or when they go against the Stream; besides the Advantage of having the Current of the River; we had a South Wind, which served us almost from *Thorn* to *Mariembourg*, where I took my Leave, both of the Boat and the Passengers.

*Mariembourg* is situated on the Eastern Arm of the *Vistula*, which, Mariembourg. with another on the West, forms the Island already mentioned. This City, formerly the chief Residence of the *Teutonic* Order, is one of those that, in all *Royal Prussia*, is the most decayed; the greatest Part of its Houses are of Wood, ill built, and inhabited by Fishermen, or others not more considerable, if about thirty Families are excepted; *S. Mary's* Church, from which it has its Name, or rather from the Order, which, as I said in the preceding Chapter, was instituted under the Patronage of the Virgin *Mary*\*, is what deserves the most Attention; it is larger than *S. Mary's* at *Thorn*, but pretty much like it; it was built, as well as the City, by the *Teutonic* Knights; the same Name is given to the Island as the City, viz. *Mariembourg-Island*; on the West Side of the City are some Ruins, which are thought to have belonged to the *Teutonic* Palace.

*Elbing* is not above two or three Leagues farther than *Mariembourg*, Elbing. to which I went by Land the Evening of the same Day that I arrived at the latter, which was in the Morning. *Elbing* is much better preserved than the other, both in its Buildings, and its Commerce; but there are some Ruins, which shew that it was formerly much larger. It is situated on the Mouth of a small River, which bears the same Name, and whose Waters fall into a Gulph formed by the *Frisch-Haff*, where larger Vessels can come up, than the old Yatch I embarked in at *Frederick-Huse*. The Houses in this City are for the most part built with Brick, after the *German* Fashion; its Streets are dirty and ill paved; its Churches partly of Brick, and partly Stone, except the largest and finest, which is for the Use of the *Roman Catholics*, and is entirely built with Free-Stone. Into this Church I saw two Women come, whom the *Roman Catholics* believed to be possessed by the Devil; the *Lutherans* thought them afflicted with the Falling-Sickness; but

Z

\* The *Teutonic* Knights were called *Marian* Knights in all publick Acts, and never called themselves otherwise, when they wrote to, or spoke of, one another.

but for my own part, I looked upon them as mad, or troubled with Vapours: As soon as they dipped their Fingers in the Holy Water-Pot, they began to distort their Bodies and Faces, and make most hideous Outcries, which continued till they had placed themselves upon their Knees before the Altar, in a Chapel dedicated to Saint *Anne*; there they said their Prayers by their Beads with a loud Voice, but distinctly enough till they came to the second *Pater-Noster*, when they began again to be in Agitation, to howl, to roll their Eyes, to tumble about the Floor, and, raising themselves up again, to beat their Faces and Breasts; after which they went to kneel together before the Altar of another Chapel, where, renewing their Prayers, a Priest, who had just finished Mass, put one end of his Stole on the Head of each of them, and pronounced in *Latin*, Part of the Gospel according to *S. John*, which done, he gave them a Cross, embroidered at each End of his Stole, to kiss. As I was going out of the Church, I met a third Woman, who, taking the Holy Water, flung herself into the like Convulsions, and after much Howling, Weeping, Laughing, went to kneel by the others: I cared not to see any more of this Farce, and so left them. There were some *Lutherans*, who, as I said before, called this pretended Possession the Falling-Sickness; but others thought the same of these Women, as of the Nuns of *Loudun*, or, as the famous Physician *Marescot* did of a certain Woman, named *Martha Boissier*, whom he was appointed to examine, and of whose Case he made use of the following Words in his Report, *A Natura multa, plura facta, a diabolo nulla*; She had much from Nature, more from Art, and nothing from the Devil.

All the other Churches in this City are *Lutheran*, one of which yields to the last mentioned in nothing but Bigness. In the Inn where I lodged, I met a *Prussian* Officer, who was going to *Koningsberg*, as well as myself, so we hired a Calash and two Horses to go together to that Town. About two Miles from *Elbing* we passed through a large Village, inhabited only by *Roman Catholics*, who have a finer Church than is commonly met with in the Country.

*Frawenberg.*

We stopt two Hours to bait at *Frawenberg*; this is but a small Town, but seems to have been bigger; it is likewise inhabited by *Roman Catholics*, and is the episcopal See of *Warmia*, whose Bishop is both a spiritual and temporal Lord. This Town is very agreeably situated on an Eminence, at the Mouth of the little River *Shon*, and descends, in Form of an Amphitheatre, to the Eastern Bank of the *Frisch-Haff*, into which the *Shon* discharges itself; there are very few good Houses in it, besides those of the Canons; it has three Churches in it, (too many by two for the Number of Inhabitants) *viz.* the Cathedral, a parochial and a conventual Church; the first is a fine Piece of *Gothick* Architecture; it is rich in Ornaments, in Pictures, and Statues of Saints,

Saints, some of which are of massive Silver; the other Churches are very ordinary. The Bishop of this Place was, as my fellow Traveller told me, the warmest Friend, and greatest Support of the *Jesuits* in the Affair of *Thorn*. The episcopal Palace is very fine, on the top of a Hill, facing the Cathedral; but the Bishop has a finer at *Warsaw*, which is his most constant Residence. Every Man, who is chofe Canon of the Cathedral of *Frawenberg*, must give sufficient Proof of his being descended from a noble Family; but the famous Mathematician, *Copernicus*, a Native of *Thorn*, obtained that Dignity by his own Merit. Near this Place are some very thick and high Walls to be seen, which are the Remains of an old Castle; upon a Stone on the Turret is written A. N. M. XXXI.

We went to lye at *Brownsberg*, about three Miles farther; this Brownsberg. Town, by its Walls, seems to be very antient; a River larger than the *Shon*, which they call *Passeberg*, runs, on the East Side, into its Ditches, which are all dry on the West, and a little lower falls into the *Frisch-Haff*, as at *Frawenberg*. The Inhabitants are all *Roman Catholics* in this Town, which is larger, worse built, and dirtier than that; there are one conventual and two Parish Churches in it, which have nothing more considerable belonging to them, than their interior Ornaments, such as their Shrines, Crosses, Chalices, and Candlesticks of Silver; their Statues of Saints, Altars, &c. This is also under the spiritual and temporal Jurisdiction of the Bishop of *Warmia*. About half a Quarter of a Mile farther, we passed by two Gallowses, one for the *Roman Catholics*, and the other for those of a different Religion, who shall happen to be condemned to Death by the Tribunal of this Place; and a very little farther we went through a small Hamlet, called *Inzell*, which is a Frontier of *Ducal Prussia*.

We dined at *Heligenpely*, about two Miles farther; this is a large Heligenpely. Village with a pretty good Church in it. The Country, which from *Mariembourg*, or rather from *Thorn*, is very pleasant and fertile, ceases to be so here, and the Land, (some few Places excepted) is sandy and altogether barren, from this Village to the little City of *Brandenbourg*, which is about four Miles; and is not much better from thence to *Koningsberg*. As we had not changed Horses, and the Road was bad, our Coachman would go no farther than *Brandenbourg* that Day, and indeed we found that he was in the right, for seven German Miles are a sufficient Day's Journey for the same Horses. This City is situated at the Mouth of a little River, commonly called *Brandenbourg-Stream*, some call it *Pregala*, and others confound it with the *Preghel*; this River runs through the Town to discharge itself into the *Frisch-Haff*, just by, and, tho' but small, is not the less mischievous; for great Rains oftentimes swell it to that Degree, that it causes Inundations very detrimental to the Town and its Neighbourhood; it is long, but very Brandenbourg.  
narrow.

narrow. The Houses here are low and ill built. The Castle, which could be of no great Defence to it, the King of *Prussia* has converted into a Magazine. We arrived early the next Day at the Capital of the Kingdom of *Prussia*; for, I think, *Königsberg* ought to be called so, since the present Electour of *Brandenbourg* has been acknowledged as King of *Prussia*, by all the Powers in *Europe*, notwithstanding the Distinction of the *Poles*, who will only call him King in *Prussia*.

I left this City the next Day, and took the Opportunity of the Waggon of *Riga*, which set out at that Time; I remember it was about the middle of *August*; but I have not noted the particular Day, which will be of no great Consequence to those, by whom I shall have the Honour of being read. For my fellow Travellers I had a Captain, who had quitted the Service of *Prussia*, to go into that of *Russia*; and a *Russian Greek Priest*, who had come to *Königsberg* to be accepted of, by the Merchants of *Russia* settled in that City, to officiate in a Church, which they are about building there. The Roads were so bad, which was occasioned by great Rains and the Richness of the Soil thereabouts, that we did not go above four Miles the first Day, and lay that Night at *Thialafit*; this is a little Hamlet that has not above six Houses in it, where the Waggon, Horses, Passengers and Goods, are put on board a Vessel to cross the *Curisch-Haff*\*. From hence we set sail about four in the Morning, and had so favourable a Wind, that, although the Passage is near twelve Miles over to *Mebmel*, we arrived there by Noon. This Town is supposed to be built by the *Livonian* Knights, and to be taken by the *Poles* in their last Conquest over the *Teutonic* Knights, with whom this Order was united. The *Swedes* afterwards took it from the *Poles*; and it is at length come into the Possession of the House of *Brandenbourg*; it is situated on the Northern Extremity of the *Curisch-Haff*, where the River *Okiana* falls into it, having washed the Walls of the Town. Here is nothing worth seeing but the Cittadel, which is pretty strong, and in the middle of which is preserved an antient Castle, and a pretty good Chapel built at the same Time; the King of *Prussia* had a Battalion in this Cittadel when I was there; as to the Houses they are ill built, the Streets ill paved, and the Churches without any Beauty, of which there are three, two *Lutheran* and one *Calvinist*; the last is the least and the worst built. There was at the same Time a Fair in it, which brought thither a great Concourse of *Prussian*, *Courland*, *Samogithian*, and other *Polish* Merchants.

We left *Mebmel* the next Morning, and went to dine at *Polanghen*, which is a pretty large Village of *Samogithia*. The Commerce of this little Province consists chiefly, as in most Parts of *Poland*, in Corn, Hemp, tanned

\* The *Curisch-Haff* is a kind of great Lake, the Waters of which are not salt, although they are separated from the Sea only by a very narrow Sand-Bank about twelve Miles long; and there is a great deal of Amber gathered on the Side of this Bank next the Sea.

tanned Leather, Copper, Vitriol, Saltpetre, Boards, Amber, and *Lapis Lazuli*, which last is peculiar to it. *Polanghen*, where the King of *Prussia*'s Dominions end on that Side, is inhabited wholly by *Roman Catholics* and *Jews*; the first have a pretty good Church in it, and the latter a Synagogue built of Wood. There is a good Quantity of Amber gathered on the Coasts of *Samogithia* and *Courland*, but not so much, or in so large Pieces, as on those of *Prussia*; this is generally done when the Wind blows South West. That belonging to the King of *Prussia* is watched by Soldiers, and those are punished very severely who are surprized, or convicted of, gathering it clandestinely, whereas it is free for every body in *Samogithia* and *Courland*; and I have seen, at *Polanghen* and other Places, little Boys waiting bare-footed on the Shore, 'till the Waves have thrown it up, or going into the Water, and fighting with those who have taken it before it has been thrown ashore: I myself have taken up several Pieces as I have walked upon the Coast.

There are different Opinions as to the Origin and Substance of Amber; some will have it to be a Mineral, which is brought into the Sea by Rivers that run through the Places where Nature has formed it; others a kind of Bitumen, which, rising from the bottom of the Sea, the Agitation of the Waves flings on Shore, when it has brought it to the Perfection in which we see it; others maintain, that it is the Gum of Trees, chiefly of Pines, which falling into the Waters where they grow, it is hardened by them as we find it: This last seems the most probable, for no one, who is of the other Opinions, has either told us where any of these subterraneous Places are, where Nature forms this pretended Mineral, or produced any expert Diver, who has seen of this Bitumen at the bottom of the Sea; besides, the Flaming of the Amber, like the Bark of the Pine-Tree, when it is held to a Candle, the Flies and Insects frequently found incorporated in it, do all seem to confirm it. If it should be asked me, Why there is no Amber found in so many other Seas, on whose Borders as great a Number of the same Sort of Trees grow as on the *Baltick*? or why not, even on all the Borders of that Sea? I shall answer, That, as, *non omnis fert omnia tellus*, all sorts of Land do not produce all sorts of Things; so all Waters, even in the same Sea or River, have not the same Virtues. The Antients were no better acquainted with this than the Moderns; *Tacitus* only says of it, that the *Prussians* and *Courlanders*, whom he calls *Æstii*, from their inhabiting the Eastern Parts of the *Baltick*-Sea, were famous for their Application and Dexterity in gathering Amber on their Coasts, in which they were great Traders. It is for this Reason, in all likelihood, that the antient Geographers called all the Islands *Eleuθrides*, from the Gulph of *Dantzick* to that of *Riga*. *Ovid* fains Amber to be the Tears of the *Heliades*, deploring the Fate of their Brother *Phaëton*, which al-

A a

ludes

includes more to the Gum of Trees, than to a Mineral, or Bitumen. But I leave the Discussion of this to the Naturalists, that I may proceed on my Journey.

Having gone about two Miles from *Polanghen*, we stopt at a little Hamlet, called *Popenfee*, to see some Curiosities made in Amber by one *Rutzen*, who has the Reputation of a very great Artist in that sort of Work: He shewed us Crucifixes, the Figure of the Virgin with the Child *Jesus*, Sets of Beads, little Candlesticks, Necklaces, Shirt-Buttons, Tooth-pick-Cases, Tweezer-Cases, Snuff-Boxes, and the like, all done with such Art and Exactness, as confirmed the Character we had heard of this Workman. Many of these Pieces were in fine white Amber, especially the Crucifixes, the Virgins, the Buttons and the Necklaces; the Captain, who was with us, bought two of the last, the Colour whereof was almost as fine as that of the Pearls, found in the Muscles of the little River *Curatz*, in *Lapland*, which I took notice of in my second Volume. A Roman Catholick Passenger, who had taken a Place in our Waggon at *Mehmel* for *Libaw*, bought three Sets of Beads, the Crosses and Paters of which were of the same Colour, the rest of yellow Amber; I bought the Head of a Cane myself, in which there was a Fly with its Wings extended, and in which there was nothing wanting but Life. The House of this Artist is worth more than those of all the other Inhabitants, which are miserable Cottages, inhabited by Fishermen and other poor Peasants. We went to lye about two Miles farther, where there is nothing but the Inn that deserves the Name of a House, and that but an indifferent one; this Place is on the Sea-Shore, where I went to walk while Supper was getting ready, and found several Children there looking for Amber. The Poverty of the Country People is almost incredible, they having but just enough to eat to keep them from starving, and but just Cloaths enough to keep them from being naked; the Children, for the most part, have no other Covering than a Shirt or Smock of coarse Canvas; their Bread is but little better than the Bark of the Pine-Tree, which is eaten by the *Dalecarlians*, and other more Northern People of *Sweden*: The only Comfort, that they have in common with them, is the Fish which they catch; yet this Country is fruitful in Corn, Hemp, and other Necessaries; it is the same in *Courland* and *Livonia*, but worse and worse from thence to the Lake *Ladoga*. How fruitful soever the Country is, the Condition of the Peasants is very bad in these Provinces; where the Sovereigns oppress the Nobles, and these oppress the meaner sort; especially in the *Russian* Dominions, where no Slavery is worse than that of the common People: But why do I call it Slavery? it is something worse, if possible. I have been fourteen Years in *Turky*, and never saw a Slave of that or any neighbouring Nation, who would chuse to go back

to

to his own Country after being emancipated, or who would not prefer being a Slave to a *Turk*, rather than Vassal to a *Boyar*.

We left this Hamlet between four and five a Clock the next Morning, and breakfasted in one much larger and better, about two Miles and a half farther, after having crossed a little River, called *Upissa*: In this Place *Courland* begins. The very sandy Roads from hence to *Libaw* Libaw. did not permit us to get there till half an Hour after three in the Afternoon, although we had not above five Miles and a half to go\*. Here we lay, and I had Time enough to view the Town and the Places about it. This Town, which is the first in *Courland*, is situated on a little River, called *Libaw-Strom*, which washes the North Side of it, and which, before it falls into the Sea, forms a sort of Gulph, called *Clein-Zee*, [little Sea] or rather falls into this Gulph formed by the Sea, which makes a pretty good Harbour. Here I went to walk, after having gone over the River by a long wooden Bridge supported on eleven Arches: About 1000 Steps above the Harbour I found several Boys gathering Amber, and I took up several little Pieces myself. *Libaw* is a Town of the greatest Trade in all *Courland*; the antient Geographers, who are copied by most of the Moderns, have placed it on an Island formed by the River *Upissa*, which comes from *Samogithia*, and falls into another kind of Gulph on the South Side of it, which, according to their Maps, has a Communication with that on the North; but if this ever was so, it is otherwise at this Time.

*Libaw* is better built than *Mehmel*, but has neither Walls nor Fortifications; there are some good Houses in it, and only one Church, which is *Lutheran*, but very large and pretty well built. There was posted up, over the Gate of this Church, a Placart or Manifesto from Duke *Ferdinand* of *Courland*, against the Election of Count *Maurice* of *Saxony*, to be his Successour in this Dukedom before his Death. This Duke, whom his Ministers and Counsellours had rendered odious to his People, especially the Nobility, by many Extortions in his Name, was buried alive, as it were, in *Dantzick*; for he never appeared in publick, any more than the Duke of *Mecklenbourg*, retired thither on the same Account, but with this Difference in their Circumstances, that the last, as it is well known, was forced to quit his Dominions, and the other has done it voluntarily, and consumes whatever his Intendants or Agents send him from *Courland*, very much to the Dissatisfaction of his People, who would have his Revenues spent at Home.

Count *Maurice* has offered him an annual Pension, on Condition he will resign his Right to him, which, it is thought, the Duke, who loves

\* It is not only because the Roads are bad, that one travels so slowly in these Waggon, but because the Horses are not changed: The Stages are all fixed and regulated in such a Manner, that if the Waggon comes in at Noon, they go no farther that Day.



loves Retirement, would have accepted, had not his Ministers dissuaded him from it, fearing they should not find their Account in it: At least this is the general Opinion at *Libaw* and *Mittaw*, where the Placart is likewise fixed up, and said to be of their composing. His Friends pity him; and say, he is naturally a good Prince, who has no Fault but in letting himself and his Country be governed by his Ministry; which is such a Fault as has brought Ruin and Slavery on many People; and even Princes themselves have sometimes been sacrificed by it: But it is a great Happiness for a Government, when its Ministry is composed of honest Patriots, and there is a Prince on the Throne that is able to make such a Choice.

We left *Libaw* about five a Clock in the Morning, and took the Road for *Mittaw*; we dined at *Grubby*, a little Town very much decayed, and not to be compared to one of the smallest Villages in *England*, if the Church is excepted, which indeed is pretty enough. We lay at *Derben*, a large and handsome Village; the Roads now began to grow better and better, that is to say, less sandy, and of consequence less fatiguing to the Horses, still as we went farther from the Sea-Shore; the worst Place we met with upon the whole Road, was a Causey of 800 Paces long, which was very ill paved, and full of great Stones, out of their Places, and such deep Holes in it, that the Waggon was every Moment in danger of being overturned, which made the Waggoner advise us to alight, and go over it on foot: This was no more than I had done several Times by Choice in other Places, for the Pleasure of Walking, and having a better Prospect of the Country. At the End of this Causey, is an old Stone-Bridge, half in Ruins, over a little Rivulet, that swells sometimes to that Degree, they say, by Rain or Thaws, that it becomes a River; this falls into a large Pond, on the left Hand, which, they told me, is very full of Fish. Near this Pond stands an old Castle, called *Shovenbourg*, which has been burnt or demolished, as most in this Country have been, by the *Swedes* or *Russians*; the Remains of it are given to the Country People, to repair their Causey and Bridge, and they were actually at work upon it. Having got over the Bridge, my fellow Travellers took their Places again in the Waggon, but I continued to walk on till we came to the Place where we were to lye, which was *Derben*, a large Village; but seems to have formerly been a Town, by some Pieces of Pavement here and there well preserved; the Church likewise, which is finer than those commonly in Villages, confirms this Opinion: There is a Vault under this Church, wherein there are several Coffins, covered with Velvet, and fringed with Gold; by these rich Ornaments one may guess, that this was the Burying-Place of the antient Governours of the Town, or of the Castle before mentioned; the Inhabitants could give me no Account of it; I would have asked the Curate, who ought to

to be the least ignorant of the Affairs of his Parish, but he was gone to *Mittaw*: They only told me, that the Coffins were very old, which I could see by the Rottenness of the Velvet, of which there was nothing left but what was fastened by Nails of Brass gilt; and by which I could see also, they were of Oak; a Wood which, next to the *Egyptian* Sycamore, is the longest before it decays.

As to myself and fellow Travellers, we were lodged in the best Inn, or at least not quite so bad a one as the rest, that we met with from *Mehmel*, except at *Libaw*; the Country is all over rich and pleasant, but indeed, the Country People are neither one nor t'other. The next Morning we went away very early as usual; we dined at a very sorry Village, but do not remember what it is called, and lay at *Grossa-Landchuna*, a long Name for a little Hamlet of four Houses! We had at least the Advantage of meeting with good Inns, and where-withal to eat, from *Koningsberg* to *Riga*; for how indifferent soever the Villages or Hamlets were, where the Waggon stopt, there was always a good House established on that Account; but I cannot say the same from *Riga* to the Lake *Ladoga*. The next Day, near *Shewend*\*, we went by a Stone-Bridge over the little River *Windana*, which is properly but an Arm of the *Wreta*, or at least falls into it not far off. The Day after, having lain at *Nakeron*, a small Village, we crossed this last, on a Float made of Timber, and Branches of Trees tied together, and a little farther, a pretty good Causey of about 300 Paces long, in a very marshy Place; this Causey has two Bridges on it to pass over, being cut through to make Drains for the Water. A little higher we came to the Castle of *Frawberg*, or rather the Ruins of a Castle, which has met with the same Fate as those I have spoke of before; there are some Houses about it, one of which is very good, and belongs to a Gentleman of the Country.

We arrived next at *Doulden*, a Dependency on the Dutchess Dowager of *Courland* †, now Empress of *Russia*; this is a very antient Town, but has no better Appearance than a good Village; the Curate, whose Son we had taken into our Waggon at *Grubyn*, invited us to Dinner, after which he shewed us the Church, which is a pretty good one; the Steeple has four Turrets on it covered with Lead; his own House is the best in the Town; the Dutchess Dowager had caused long Posts to be planted, from hence to *Mittaw*, which is about five *German* Miles, at equal Distances; these Posts are a Kind of military

B b

Columns,

\* *Shewend* is but the poor Remainder of a Village, or Town, where are the Walls of an old Castle burnt and destroyed by the *Swedes* and *Muscovites*, in the Beginning of the last War. The *Russians* burnt even the Church; which not being rebuilt yet, divine Service is performed in the Minister's House.

† Her Name is *Anne Evanoova* [Jane] the fourth Daughter of the Czar, *Evan* [John] *Alexowitz*, eldest Brother of the late Emperour, *Peter the First*. The late Duke of *Courland*, having married her at *Moscow* in 1710, fell sick on the Road, and left her a Widow, some say a Maid, a few Days after his Return.

Columns, called *Wrests* \*; in this she imitated the late Czar, her Uncle, as he seemed to have imitated the *Swedes*, and they the antient *Romans*, with this Difference only, that as the *Romans* placed theirs at the End of every Mile, the *Swedes* were but a quarter of a Mile asunder; but then the *Sweedish* Miles are much longer, one of them making more than six *English* Miles, or two *French* Leagues, as I have observed elsewhere.

Mittaw.

I reckoned sixteen of these *Wrests* between *Doulden* and *Mittaw*, where we arrived in pretty good Time, lay there that Night, and tarried till after ten a Clock the next Morning; this would have been Time sufficient to have seen this Town, if I had not passed through it again two Months after. It is the Capital of the chief Part of *Courland*, which is called *Semigallia*, situated on the Southern Bank of the River *Echow*, where it falls into the *Bolderavia*, which runs to discharge itself into the Gulph of *Riga*, a little below *Kolberon*. The City in general is very ill-built, worse paved, and the Houses are for the most part of Wood: The ducal Palace, in which the Dutchess resided, is pretty well-built, the Apartments in it are large, convenient, and most of them well furnished and adorned with good Paintings: There are represented on the Ceilings the Battle of *Pultowa*, the Taking of *Riga*, *Narva*, besides several other Victories gained over the *Swedes*: The Churches are large and handsome, especially that called the *Teutonic* Church, because it was built by the *Teutonic* Knights: It is as the Cathedral, or Metropolitan Church of all *Courland*; there is a Superintendent belonging to it, who, among the *Lutherans*, is the same as an Archbishop, or Bishop, as I have said in my second Volume: That which is called the *Livonian*, being founded by the *Livonian* Knights, has also its Beauties, though it is not quite so large as the other: That of the *Jesuits*, which is the only *Popish* Church at *Mittaw*, is handsome and richly adorned; their Colledge is likewise very neat: There is also a *Greek*, or *Russian* Church, the Buildings and Paintings of which are not bad.

The Castle, formerly the ordinary Residence of the Dukes, has been quite demolished by the *Swedes* and *Russians*; the first set Fire to it in the Year 1703, to dislodge the other: It is said proverbially in *Courland* as well as *Saxony*, when there is nothing to be met with to eat, *The Swedes have been this Way*. There was, it is said, at that Time a most terrible Slaughter, and incredible Plundering; Fire and Sword were exercised with the utmost Fury. The Chapel is pretty, but neglected; the Woman, who shewed it me, said, it was spared by an Accident;

\* Seven *Wrests* make a *German* Mile; every one of them has an Inscription on it in the *Russian* Language, which is a *Slavonian* Dialect common to *Muscovites*, *Poles*, *Courlanders*, *Livonians*, &c. or, at least, has so little Difference, that they all understand one another. The Names of the Places, to and from whence you go and come, are all wrote likewise in *German*, which is spoke in all these Provinces by every body of Fashion.

cident ; and I asking, What that was ? she answered, By the *Swedes* leaving it to pursue the *Russians* ; or rather, because these last, more accustomed than the other to pillage, without Distinction, Things sacred and prophane, had not Time enough to do it ; and even, said she, the Coffins of the deceased Dukes they would have made no Scruple to plunder, had they known, that some of them were enriched with large Plates of massive Silver, and other Ornaments of Gold and Silver ; which Coffins are of Lead, inclosed in others of Oak, covered with red Velvet fringed with Gold : The Bodies lye in them, dried like Stock-Fish, in Robes of Gold-Brocade, and Ducal Coronets on their Heads : On the Plates are engraved their Names, Ages, and the Days of their Deaths, &c.

We left *Mittaw* between ten and eleven in the Morning, and went to dine at *Guilbert-Crew*, a good Village with a pretty Church in it : In this Place we eat some exceeding good smoaked Salmon ; the *Duna*, which is not far off, abounds with this, and other Fish. After Dinner we passed by three Regiments of *Russian* Troops, encamped on the Frontiers ; they were all tall, strong and well-shaped Men, cloathed in good *Prussian* Cloth, but not after the *Prussian* Manner ; for their Cloaths were full and long, like those of the *Imperial*, *English* and *French* Troops, according to the first Patterns given by M. *le Fort* to the Czar, *Peter the First*, when he put him upon the Design of making a Reform in his military Affairs. We lay at *Kolberon*, over-against *Riga*, which is looked upon as a Suburb to this last mentioned City, although divided from it by the *Duna*. The King of *Poland*, *Frederick Augustus*, called the Fort here *Fredericksburg*, and that of *Dunamuden*, about twelve *Wrests*\* lower, at the Mouth of the same River, *Augustburg*, when he had made himself Master of them in the Year 1700. We lay at *Kolberon*, not only because the Waggon puts up there, but because we arrived too late to be admitted into the City that Night ; but went into it early the next Morning, over a floating Bridge above 1000 Paces long : Of the City I shall speak in the following Chapter.

\* I shall reckon by *Wrests*, now I am entered into the Provinces conquered by *Russia*, as I did before by Miles. I observed in a Note before, at my leaving *Hamburg*, that a *German* Mile makes above five *English* Miles, and is about two *French* Leagues ; and in another Note after. . . . *Wrests* make a *German* Mile.

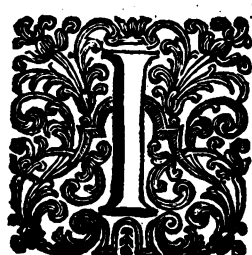
The



The TRAVELS of  
*A. de la MOTRAIE.*

C H A P. III.

*A JOURNEY from Riga to the Lake Ladoga, and from thence to Petersbourg; with Geographical, Historical and Political Observations on the Country, Towns, and principal Transactions, as well in the Life of the Emperour, Peter the First, as of the Empress, Catherine; and on the Rise and Fall of Alexander Menzikoff, &c.*



I HAVE already published, in my second Chapter, Part of what I promise in this; but, as that is almost as long as the first, which seemed to be too long, I shall, in this Place, begin the third.

We have very little Account of *Livonia* before the Birth of *Jesus Christ*, but from the Annals of *Sweden* and *Denmark*; and those inform us only of the Progress and Success of their own Arms, and hardly mention any Thing of the Government and Condition of the Towns in that Country; nay, by their Silence, they have left us entirely in the Dark for some Ages, even after the Beginning of the Christian Era. I will give my Readers, in a few Words, what they tell us of the Conquests of the *Swedes* and *Danes* over *Livonia*.

About 836 Years after *Noah's Flood*, *Berico*, King of *Sweden*, in order to chastize these People, who made frequent Incursions into his Country, marched against them with a powerful Army, and subdued them. They often revolted under his Successors, but the Efforts they made to break their Chains served only to fasten them the stronger, by the Advantages their new Masters gained over them; at least, 'till the Year of the World 3000, when *Frotho*, King of *Denmark*, reduced them under his Dominion, or rather they gave up themselves to him, and









and so changed one foreign Master for another, thinking it impossible for them to be without such an one; but believed, by this Change they should make those Chains lighter which they could not break. *Frotho*, thus strengthened by his new Subjects, attacked the Dominions of *Regnerus*, King of *Sweden*, his Brother-in-Law, at a Time too when he was absent from them; but the Queen his Sister, undertaking the Command of the *Swedish* Fleet, defeated him in a Battle at Sea, took him Prisoner, and generously gave him his Liberty. This very probably was one of those Heroins, or *Amazons*, of *Smoland*, whom *M. Rubeckius* has given an Account of in his *Atlantis*; and God knows what sort of Fleets they had in those Times. But to return, this Prince soon forgot the Generosity he had been treated with, and attacked his Brother-in-Law a second Time, but was more unhappy by Land than Sea, for he lost his Life in a Battle he gave him.

*Regnerus* dying, his Son *Hatbrod* succeeded him, and marched with a powerful Army against the *Livonians*, whom he brought back to the *Swedish* Yoke: They strove more than once to shake it off again under his Successors, but were always kept under till the Reign of *Grimmer*, surnamed *the Tyrant*; who, by his Cruelties, had made himself as odious to his *Swedish* Subjects as to them. They went to War with him with a Vigour and Success equal to their Hatred; and, defeating him in a Battle wherein he was taken Prisoner, they hanged him on a Tree. The chronological Table of *Sweden* makes this unhappy Prince the thirty-second King of that Country, from *Magbg* to the Year of the World 3456. The same Annals tell us, that, soon after the Birth of *Jesus Christ*, *Guetterich*, King of the *Goths*, conquered *Livonia* and *Prussia*, which he gave to his Son *Philimer*; who, by the Assistance of his new Subjects, and some Troops of his own Nation sent him by his Father, he entered *Russia*, and conquered a great Part of it from *Hernito*, the Prince of the Country; but, being obliged to return into *Denmark*, to take Possession of the Throne, become vacant by the Death of *Guetterich* his Father, *Hernito* made so good Use of his Absence, that he drove away all the *Goths* and *Livonians* whom *Philimer* had left in *Russia* to preserve his Conquests.

*Frotho the Third*, or, as some say, *the Fourth*, sent into *Livonia* the valiant Champion *Helsingland Starketer*, a Giant in Strength and Stature. It was nothing for this *Rowland*, this *Alexander* of his Time, who had distinguished himself by his great Exploits, not only in the *North*, but *East* and *West*; in *Russia*, *Germany* and *Britain*; I say it was nothing for him (of whom History relates Things incredible) to subdue the *Livonians*, who were kept by him many Years in Subjection to the *Danes*: But they fell again under that of *Sweden* in the Year 420 of the Christian Era, till which Time none of the *Swedish* or *Danish* Annals, that I know of, have observed any Date from the Beginning





ning of it. *Farmerick*, a King of *Denmark*, subdued the *Livonians*, and killed their King with his Sons in Battle. 34 Years after *Inardus*, King of *Sweden*, was preparing for the Conquest of this Kingdom, (I call it a Kingdom, because the last Article makes it so,) but the Reputation he had of a brave, mild and virtuous Prince made the *Livonians* spare him the Trouble, and submit voluntarily to him; but, whether out of Inconstancy, or because the Ministers and Governours he sent them were not so honest as himself, or being weary of a foreign Dominion, they soon revolted: Whereupon he went in Person at the Head of an Army to reduce them afresh, but fell into an Ambush they had laid for him, in which he perished. Here the Annals are silent again for some Ages, at least till the Year 860, when the *Courlanders* \* shook off the *Swedish* Yoke, as in 862 they did that of the *Danes*, whose Fleet they beat and plundered: But they were reduced to the Obedience of the former by King *Oloph*; and again, in the Year 948, by *Erick Segerf*, King of the same Nation. This Prince kept them in Subjection, as long as he lived, but they recovered their Liberties after his Death.

In the Year 1077 *Canutus*, King of *Denmark*, subdued them, made all *Livonia* tributary to his Crown, and took the Title of Duke of *Estonia*, which all the Kings of *Denmark* bore, till the Reign of *Woldemar the Third*.

*Christianity* had made but a slender Progress in *Livonia*, before the *Germans* were become absolute Masters of it; for the Glory of establishing that, as well as of making a firm and general Conquest of the Country, seemed reserved for this brave and warlike Nation.

But to return to *Riga*, from whence I have insensibly strayed too far, it was *Berthold*, the second Bishop of *Livonia*, who began to build this City, and *Albert*, his Successour, who finished it. This Prelate, standing in need of the Assistance of the Empire to confirm his Authority in *Livonia*, made the Emperour, *Henry the Fourth*, a Compliment of acknowledging it as a Fief of the Imperial Crown; upon which he was not only put in Possession of it, but obtained many great Priviledges, and among the rest that of Coining Money. At length he brought thither the *Livonian* Knights, whose Order he first instituted; and when he was become Archbishop and temporal Lord of *Riga*, they took the Oath of Allegiance to him: Being willing to reap the Fruits of their Valour, and give them an Opportunity of signalizing their Zeal, he proposed to them the Reduction and Conversion of the Remains of the Pagan Inhabitants of the Country, giving them Power to punish those who had apostatized, and, in spite of the Instructions and wholesome Counsels of his Priests and Missionaries, had returned to their Heathen Worship,

\* *Dionisius Fabritius* says, that *Livonia* had formerly two Kings, one of which had his Residence in *Courland*, and the other in *Estonia*: These were very likely two Provinces of *Livonia*, as the latter is at this Time.

Worship, and had some of them washed themselves in the Sea, and others in Rivers, to purify themselves, as they said, and wash off the *Christian Baptism*, which their new Masters had imposed upon them. This Prelate, to encourage the Knights to so pious a Work, gave them his *Verbum Sacerdotis*, that whatever they acquired from the Pagans should remain in the Possession of themselves and their Order for ever. This Promise was afterwards confirmed to them by the Pope and the Emperour, when they were united to the *Teutonic Knights*. The same Promise was made to the latter, on the same Conditions, and as a Reward for their Zeal and Valour.

The Success of their Arms, and the Advantages and Riches they obtained in these spiritual Expeditions, instead of filling them with Acknowledgments to those who furnished them with the Occasions of exerting themselves, served only to excite their Pride and Ambition; for, regardless of their Oaths and Obligations, they made War upon the Archbishop of *Riga*, and would have divested him of his temporal Authority, taken that City from him, and perhaps worse, if the faithful Christians among the converted *Livonians*, and the Strangers, who were settled in *Livonia* under the Protection of the Archiepiscopal See, had not joined with the Metropolitan to oppose them; and indeed their Arms were crowned with such Success, that they defeated these Knights in several Rencounters: Among others, in the Year 1298, they slew *Bruno*, the Master of their Order, under the Grand *Teutonic Master*\* of *Mariembourg*.

I will shew here how *Riga* and all *Livonia* gave themselves up to *Poland*. In the Year 1557 *William* of *Furstenberg*, Coadjutor to the Grand-Master of the *Teutonic Order* in *Livonia*, attacked *William*, Archbishop of *Brandenburg*, and *Christopher*, Duke of *Mecklenbourg*, his Coadjutor, at *Kokenhouse*, and took them both Prisoners; whereupon *Sigismund Augustus*, their near Relation, having used his good Offices in vain to get their Liberty, sent a naked Sabre to *Furstenberg*, declaring, that it was with such Instruments as that, with which he would open the Prison wherein he detained the Archbishop and Duke. The *Polish Army* was in full March to put this Threat in Execution; but, by the Mediation of the Emperour *Ferdinand*, a very advantageous Peace was made for the Prisoners. Worse than all this, the *Russians*, having penetrated into the Country, made Devastations suitable to their Barbarity, the Grand-Master of the *Teutonic Order*, and the Archbishop of *Riga* implored the Assistance of the King of *Poland*, but could not obtain it, on any other Condition than that of annexing all *Livonia* to his Crown. The Nobility joining with them in a Negotiation,

\* The Sovereignty of *Livonia* was afterwards divided between the Great-Master of the *Teutonic Order*, and the Archbishop of *Riga*, who was Metropolitan, not only of all *Livonia*, but of *Courland* and *Prussia*.

tiation, entered upon for that Purpose, and concluded with all the Speed that the Necessity of their Affairs required, they consented to what was demanded of them; but objected to the Oaths, whereby they would have been tied to the *Roman* Empire, and desired to be released from them. They insisted upon the *Livonians* being maintained in the Profession of the Confession of *Ausburg*, and in all their Privileges and Prerogatives, as well temporal as spiritual; and also of the Nobility in their Rights, Possessions and Immunities; that Offices and Employments should be held only by *Germans*; and, above all, that the Grand-Master should for the future have the Title, Investiture and Inheritance of the Dutchies of *Semigallia* and *Courland*, for himself and his Heirs male; but that he should hold them in Fief of the Crown of *Poland*, and be declared perpetual Governour of *Livonia*. These Articles were agreed to, and several other, that were no less in Favour of the People, than of the Grand-Master and Archbishop: They were called, *pacta subjectionis*, the Terms of Subjection. The King of *Poland*, having ratified them, sent them to *Riga* by *Nicholas Radziwil*, who delivered them to the States of *Livonia*, with authentick Instruments of what was agreed to; upon which the Grand-Master resigned his Order with his Habit and the other Ensigns; several of the Knights did the same. After which King *Sigismund* sent Ambassadors to *Stockholm*, to King *Erick the Fourth*, to demand *Revel*, and all that the *Swedes* possessed in that Country. This was that unfortunate *Erick*, whom his Brother *John* deposed, and treated in the barbarous Manner I mentioned in my second Volume. This Prince refused to comply, saying, he had as much Right to what was demanded of him as the King of *Poland*. Duke *Magnus* of *Holstein* made also some Pretensions to this Town, and the Lands belonging to it; but his Demands were rejected as the others had been: Upon which he moved his Brother, the King of *Denmark*, to join with him to force *Erick* to a Restitution; from whence followed a War between *Sweden* and *Denmark*, besides another much more dreadful between *Sigismund* and the Czar, *Evan Wasilewitz*, one of the most cruel Princes that ever reigned. The Archbishop of *Riga* dying in 1563, the Archbishoprick was secularized. *Charles the Ninth*, King of *Sweden*, besieged this City in the Years 1605 and 1609, but was forced both Times to raise the Siege; but his Son, *Gustavus Adolphus*, took it in the Year 1621.

Riga.

*Riga* is the Key and principal City of the whole Country; it is extended very much beyond its antient Walls, and has been considerably embellished, as well as enlarged, by the different Masters it has had since its first Foundation. The *Russians* were at Work to this Purpose when I arrived there; they have built already a pretty *Greek Church* in it, and have raised several other Edifices and Houses; they have repaired and augmented their Fortifications, and made them much more regu-

regular than they were before. There are nine Gates to this City, the most magnificent is *Carle-Port* [*Charles-Gate*]; among other Ornaments on this Gate are a Bust of *Charles the Eleventh, King of Sweden*, with two Slaves in humble Postures, one on each Side; and in two Niches *Minerva* and *Mars*; under the first Statue, in gold Capitals, is the Word *Consilia*, and under the last *Gloria*. The Ditches are large, deep, and well filled with Water; the Approaches defended by good Ravelins, false Brays, and other Works of great Strength. Though these Works are not altogether regular, yet the Ravelins are the Invention of the late Count *d'Albert*, Governour of *Riga*, a good Officer, expert Engineer, and a Gentleman of much Knowledge in other Affairs; he made them to correct the Faults of the Polygons, which otherwise are too much extended; but did not think fit to take them away, so that the Bastions cover the Front of them. At the Entrance by *Carle-Port*, on the left Hand, is a Range of Caserns, for Soldiers to lodge in, a hundred Paces long, which are Bomb-Proof. The Citadel is well placed, and is an admirable Piece of Defence.

The King of *Poland*, who had made himself Master of *Kolbaron-Fort* and *Dunamuden-Skantz*, as I said before, in the Year 1700, and, thinking to keep them, had given them the Names I mentioned, having received Succours from the *Russians*, invested *Riga*, and began to bombard it; but upon the Remonstrances of the *English* and *Dutch* Merchants, who begged him to spare it till they had secured their Effects, he contented himself with cantoning his Troops, to keep the Town in a manner blocked up; and deferred the Attacking it in Form till the Beginning of the next Year. The King of *Sweden*, coming up to the Relief of this Place, caused that Bridge to be laid over the *Duna*, which I promised before to say something more of: It was a little below the Place where it is at present, and where the River is near 1200 Paces broad. They assured me the Bridge was at first of that Length, and this he did in Spite of the Fire of the *Saxons*, which he returned upon them from some Pieces of Artillery, that he had caused to be put in large flat-bottomed Boats with only 60 Men in them. The World is sufficiently acquainted, by many Accounts, of the Success of this bold Enterprize, and the Victory he gained over them. This Bridge is the same that I passed over, only shortened and repaired; to which there is added a sort of Balustrade on each Side: It is put upon Boats, and the Trunks of Trees fastened by Anchors.

The City is large and well peopled; the Houses are pretty good, and built chiefly of Brick, after the *German* Manner; that of the Governour, who is so of all *Livonia*, is the largest, but in the Building Convenience has been more considered than Beauty. Prince *Repin*, who had been Governour since the *Russians* were Masters of it, died in that Post, and was buried in the *Russian* Church the Day before my

Arrival there: General *Bobun* succeeded him in his Authority. The Town-House is not large, but pretty well built; and contains some Curiosities worth seeing: As there is no Exchange in *Riga*, the Merchants meet in a spacious Place before this, and often upon the Bridge before mentioned: The Trade of this Place consists chiefly in Corn, Hemp, Honey, Wax, and *Russia* Leather. The Churches in this City are not ill built; the most considerable are, the *Dome* or Cathedral, *S. John's*, and *S. Peter's*; the Cathedral is the largest and the best adorned, the Foundation of which is said to have been laid by the Archbishop *Albert*, whom I have spoke of already.

Dunamuden-Skantz.

Before I quit the Neighbourhood of *Riga*, I must say two or three Words of *Dunamuden-Skantz*. This is a good Fortrefs, very advantageously situated at the Mouth of the River *Duna*, (the *Rubon* of *Ptolemy*) flanked with six Bastions well covered. A Lieutenant Colonel of the *Swedish* Army, who was with Count *d'Albert* when he took this Fortrefs from the *Saxons* by Capitulation, told me, that the King his Master was so angry at it, that he would have sent all the Men into it again, and have had it taken by Storm, without giving or taking any Quarter; and that it was with much Difficulty he was prevailed upon to revoke that Order. I can the more readily give Credit to this, because, besides Examples without Number of Things more strange, that have been related of this Prince, which shewed, that he esteemed nothing so glorious as what was the most difficult and dangerous; I was myself an Eye-Witness of it in *Turky* and *Norway*. Some of the Officers, who followed him in all the late War, have told me, that it was a sufficient Motive to make him attempt any Thing, to be sensible of the Danger and Difficulty of it: He looked upon it as dishonourable to attack the Enemy with superiour Numbers: Would he have fallen upon the *Russians* at *Narva* with 8 or 9000 Men, if they had not had 80,000? Would he have fought with the *Turks* at *Bender* with 30, or 40 Men, if they had not had some Thousands? Would he have carried an Army of 24,000 Men in *Norway*, in the Year 1716, without any Ammunition, and almost as ill provided as Knight-Errants, and that in one of the hardest Winters, if he had not formed in his Mind the great Glory of fighting, even against Cold and Hunger\*? In short, would he in the Year 1718, the last of his Life, have held his Head over the Parapet, if the Engineer, *Maigret*, had not told him, that there was the greatest Danger in it, and, to use his own Words, that it rained Bullets and Cartridges? Those of his Officers, who have given me numberless Instances of his Intrepidity, have told me, at the same

Time,

\* I have already given an Account, in my second Volume, of the Condition of that Army, which almost all perished of Cold and Hunger; for of 8000 Men, sent to *Drontheim*, without meeting any other Enemies to encounter, there came not 300 back: I have likewise endeavoured to do Justice to the excellent Qualities of *Charles the Twelfth*.

Time, that they thought it a Miracle, that he was not killed twenty Years sooner than he was. The same Lieutenant Colonel told me, that after the Battle fought near *Riga*, he had a Commission to bury the Dead, that he had reckoned 260 of the Enemies and 50 *Swedes*; and that he was ordered to publish, that the Number of the Enemies left on the Field of Battle was 2250; but that the Gazetteers, as they always multiply on such Occasions, had made it 3000. The Publick seems to love whatever is extraordinary; if at this Time only 500 had been named, it would have been looked upon as a Trifle not worth Attention; and, I dare say, if an impartial Subtraction were to be made of the Numbers of Men killed by the News-Writers, during a War of ten Years, three Quarters of them would be found alive, or to have died natural Deaths: But ordinary Things will not go down with the Publick; and a Battle, in which only 1000 Men were killed, would deserve at most but the Name of a Rencounter or a Skirmish. If there is not some uncommon Circumstance in an Event, they will not give Credit to it: And, such is the Prepossession of some Men, that, whatever Assurance is given them, that this very Circumstance was invented, or added, to praise, condemn, or justify the Event, they will not recede from their first Opinion. How many, for Example, have believed, and do still believe, that the King of *Sweden* would never have fought against the *Turks* at *Bender*, if he had not discovered a Plot of the *Pacha* and the *Han* to deliver him into the Hands of his Enemies, the Czar and King *Augustus*? that he was killed by his own People, and the like? I shall add nothing to the authentick Proofs I have given to the contrary in my second Volume; though I dare not flatter myself, that they are sufficient to undeceive them in this, any more than in what relates to the Action and Peace of *Pruth*; in which it is well enough known, how much the Czar was embarrassed; they will have it, that the Czarina was forced to sacrifice her very Jewels to release him from the Danger he was in: Though I was there, and know, as well and certainly as it is possible to be known, that the Vizier did not receive one Jewel or one Penny: I saw, on the Spot, the Presents which were made him, consisting only of some Skins of Sables. It would be impossible for me to beat it out of the Heads of a prodigious Number of People, that this Vizier was strangled for suffering himself to be corrupted, although nothing is more contrary to Truth; for he desired to be dismissed after his Return to *Adrianople*: Upon which the Grand Seignior sent him a Simitar, enriched with precious Stones, and accepted of the Janissan-Aga, as his Successour in the Visorial Office, who was recommended by him: He continued in good Health for three Years after, at his Government of *Lemnos*, which he had chosen for his Retirement, and died there in his Bed, without the Grand Seignior's touching one Penny of the great Wealth he left behind him. I shewed several

ral *Swedish* Gentlemen, who were in this Errour, at *Stockholm*, Letters sent me by considerable Persons; and among others from an Ambassadour at *Constantinople*. I do not pretend to write a fine Style; the many Languages I have learnt, in the different Countries where I have been, having very much corrupted even my native Tongue; but this I will venture to affirm, that there is nothing to be found in my two former Volumes concerning the Action and Peace of *Pruth*, for which I have not unquestionable Authorities, as well as for what I have related of the late King of *Sweden*'s Reception and Stay in *Turky*; his Negotiations, Difference with the *Ottoman* Port, &c.

It has been pretended, that the Governour of *Riga*'s Refusing to shew Prince *Menzikoff* and General *le Fort* the Fortifications of that Place, when the Grand Czarian Embassy passed that Way, was the original Cause of the War declared against *Sweden* by the Czar and the King of *Poland*: It was said also, that, when Prince *Menzikoff* reported this Affair, aggravating the Refusal of the Governour, who, in all other Respects, did all possible Honour to the Embassy, the Czar answered, That he hoped to see the Day, when he should be able to refuse the same Thing to the King of *Sweden* himself. The boundless Ambition and vast Designs of that Prince are well enough known; he had already one Foot in the *Black-Sea* by the Conquest of *Asoph*, and would have had the other in the *Baltick*. He thought he wanted Allies for this Enterprize, and he quickly found them. *Poland*, it is known, had Pretensions to *Livonia*, and, having no Port in the *Baltick*, was obliged to make use of that of *Dantzick* to carry on its Trade. The King of *Denmark* had Pretensions likewise, but what made him most desirous to enter into an Alliance with this Prince was, that the Employment the King of *Sweden* might have on that Side would furnish him with an Opportunity of seizing upon *Schenen*, and other *Swedish*, once *Danish*, Provinces, which his Predecessours, and lately himself, had made vain Attempts to recover. The View the Czar had, in this Alliance with *Poland*, was the Partition of *Livonia* and *Estonia*, &c. This was the Plan formed for the Triple Alliance. It may be said, that the Refusal of a Governour to shew the Fortifications of a Place, with which he was entrusted, seems no just Pretence, or sufficient Reason to declare War against his Master; but what Need is there, at this Time of Day, for Pretences and Reasons, if a Prince thinks himself strong enough to succeed in an Enterprize? But it will be added, that *Poland* and *Russia* had renewed their old Treaties with *Sweden*, and *Denmark* had just made a new one with her; that their Ambassadors had Instructions to assure the King of *Sweden*, that they desired to maintain the strictest Ties of Peace and Friendship with him; and that the Ambassadors did this in the most solemn Manner, at the very Time when the *Saxon* and *Russian* Troops were falling on his Provinces. This at least is what I have been



been assured of by a Number of considerable Persons both at *Bender* and in *Sweden*. If this is true, it is neither surprizing nor new, we having, unhappily, more recent Examples of Treaties not being observed any longer than it was thought advantageous so to do; or where there has not been Strength enough to break them. What signified the Partition stipulated by the Treaty of Alliance between the Czar and the King of *Poland*? Has *Poland* got any Thing by it? Has she got a Port, or an Inch of Ground in *Livonia* and *Estonia*; Provinces to which the Czar\* had no other Right, than that which Force gave him; and has he not kept the whole to himself? On the other Hand, to what Devastations, not to say Robberies, has she not been exposed, by this fatal War, which he drew her into? How many of her Towns and Villages has she seen burnt and pillaged? How many Prayers has she sent to Heaven, to be delivered from her Friends and Allies, as well as her Enemies? Ought not the *Ottoman Port*, by the Treaty of *Pruth*, to have obliged the Czar to have withdrawn his Troops out of that Kingdom? But why do I ask this Question, when I saw the Ambassadors of this Monarch sent to the seven Towers, because this was not done by the Time stipulated; and the *Port* declaring a new War against him, as well on this Article as others, which he had no better complied with?

I heard great Complaints and severe Reflections among the conquered Subjects, but more among the *Russians*, of the Ambition and ill Conduct of Prince *Menzikoff*. The last attributed to him all the past and present Ills and Oppressions which they suffered under the Reign of *Peter the First*, or still suffer under that of *Catherine*; for this Prince had in *Russia* the same Misfortune that those Reverend Fathers, the *Jesuits*, have in some Parts of *Europe*, to be regarded as the Author of all the Ill that is done there: Nevertheless some Gentlemen, to whom I was recommended in that Country, and with two of whom I went a good Part of my Journey from *Riga* to *Novogrod*, assured me, that those Oppressions were not so many, or so cruel under the Reign of *Catherine* as before; and the Reason they gave for it was, that she durst not use the same violent Means to fill her Coffers, for fear of a general Revolution, which might throw her down from the highest Post that ever the Mistress, or Wife of a Sovereign was raised to; and that Prince *Menzikoff* could not forget his being taken out of a Pastry-Cook's Shop†, and raised to the Degree he was in, chiefly for having furnished the late Emperour with those violent Methods of enlarging his own Treasure by the Spoils of some of the richest *Boyars*; and that he perfectly well foresaw, that his Fall must infallibly follow the Empress's, who was governed by him. I have heard even the *Courlanders* say of him,

E e

\* I call *Peter the First*, Czar, till I come to the Time when he was declared Emperour.

† I remember to have heard some *Russians* say, their Emperour was willing to imitate the Creation, by making something out of nothing; for he had made a Prince of a Pastry-Cook, and an Empress of a Country-Woman: This is true, but her Merit has surpassed the most illustrious Birth.



him, that they knew him so well, they feared he might be one Day their Duke; that no-body had done more than he had to prevent the Election of the Count of *Saxony*; and that he had actually animated and armed the *Poles* against it, by the Ambassadors of the Empress; who, as he had been the Instrument of her Elevation, indulged his Ambition, and was still raising him higher and higher.

They spoke as much in Favour of General *le Fort*, although a Stranger, as they did to the Disadvantage of Prince *Menzikoff*; and these different Sentiments were confirmed to me at *Petersbourg*; where it was said, that M. *le Fort* had never given any ill Advice to the Czar, *Peter*; but that, on the contrary, he had saved the Lives, Liberties and Fortunes of a great Number of his richest and most illustrious Subjects: And that Prince *Menzikoff* by his Counsel had occasioned the Loss of an infinite Number, on Pretence of having discovered their ill Designs and Plots, which had no Existence but in his own Malice, Ambition and insatiable Avarice; that he had even brought that Monarch to sacrifice his own Son, and lawful Successor, in that inhuman and cruel Manner which is too well known. Would to God there was no other Prince in the World capable of proceeding to such Extremities against his own Blood, but would imitate him only in those excellent Qualities and glorious Actions, which have made him one of the greatest and most worthy Monarchs that ever has, or ever will sit upon the Throne of *Russia*. If the Emperours, among the *Romans*, were called so, because they commanded their Armies; who can have deserved that Title better than *Peter the First*, who commanded his, as well on the Sea as the Land; and created, as it were, a new People in his Dominions? As to Prince *Menzikoff*, perhaps Jealousy and publick Hatred has laid more to his Charge than he deserved; for, if he had not had some extraordinary Merit, he could not have maintained himself so long in the Esteem and Favour of so judicious a Monarch as the late Czar.

I shall say something in this Place of the late General M. *le Fort*. The several Histories, which have appeared as yet of the Czar, *Peter the First*, have spoke but very superficially of this General, who so largely contributed to the Grandeur of that Monarch; nor almost on any other Account, but on the Subject of the Grand Embassy, which is not the most glorious Part of his Life; or on that of his Death, which is not to be mentioned without Sorrow. They tell us, that such Funeral Poms were ordered for him, as were worthy of the Prince who assisted at them, and who wept bitterly, crying with a loud Voice, *I have lost my Father*. It is certain there was no one, to whom the Czar was more indebted for his Glory: He had given, if I may be allowed the Expression, a military Education to this Prince and his Troops: The Czar had already gathered some of the Fruits of it in his War with the *Turks*; the chief of which was the Conquest of *Asoph* and its Dependen-

pendencies. The Troops commanded by Officers of different Nations; which M. le Fort had procured for him, and some by the *Russians*, which he had formed, did Wonders. This great Prince thought he might exercise them not to his Disadvantage against the *Christians*; and proposed the *Swedes* as a proper Object for that Purpose; he could not have pitched upon braver Men, or those commanded by better Officers, although he did not yet know what this young King was capable of. He had heard enough of their Bravery, and knew by Experience the Difference between them and the *Turks*, who are not better disciplined than the *Russians* were, before M. le Fort came among them: Therefore he did not at first expect the same Success against them; but said to his Generals, when he put himself under their Command; (for he would pass through every Degree in the Army like a common Man,) *I expect my Troops will be beaten and overcome; but they will learn thereby to beat and overcome.* He was in the right in this, but would have been deceived in his Calculation, according to all Appearance, if *Charles the Twelfth*, that young and too valiant Hero, had put in Practice a Maxim of his Ancestours, who could never have a War to last above two or three Years with the *Russians*. If, after he had defeated 80,000 of them, at *Narva*, with only 8 or 9000 Men, he had not been so eager as he was to follow the *Saxons* beaten below *Riga*, but had pursued his Victory over the former, he had not given them Time to get a new Army together, and would soon have reduced them to beg for Peace; and their Troops, for Want of longer Experience, would have been little better than they were. Again, if this Hero, victorious both in *Poland* and *Saxony*, after he had reduced the King of the former, and the Electour of the latter, to renounce the Crown, and to deliver *Patkul*\* up to him, contrary to the *Ashlam* that had been promised him, and exacted some other hard Terms; I say, if, after the Treaty of *Alt-Randstac* was ratified by both Parties, he had generously torn it, and said to the *Polish* Monarch, *Reign still, and let us make another Treaty of Peace and Friendship, as voluntary on your Side as it is sincere on mine*, such an Act of Generosity towards a Prince who so well † deserved it, would have done greater

Honour

\* The cruel Manner, in which Count *Patkul*, that brave *Livonian* Patriot, was broke alive upon the Wheel, is too well known: All the *Swedes* themselves, that I have met with, except two Favourites, were sensibly touched by it; and observed, that from thence might be dated all the Misfortunes that followed this brave Prince to his Grave, who might have been one of the happiest and most glorious Monarchs that ever reigned in the North.

† Those, who have the Honour to know the King of *Poland*, say, that he possesses all that can make a Prince Great and Good, two Qualities, which do not always meet in one Monarch. He is generous beyond Expression; for this I heard him much praised, as I passed through *Poland* in 1726, and not without Reason, since he spends the greatest Part of the Revenues of his Electorate in Liberalities among the *Polish* Nation; who have no Cause to complain, that the Electorate is a Burthen to them: But the People of *Saxony* think the Crown of *Poland* so to them. It was out of Compassion and Tenderness to his People, that he signed that dishonourable Treaty, even when he had gained a great Battle over the *Swedes*; for they were plundered by them, and there had been then above a Million of *Rixdollers* raised on the *Saxons*.

Honour to him, than all the Advantages he got over him. This would have obtained him a grateful, sincere, and incorruptible Friend. In short, if *Charles the Twelfth*, covered with Laurels in *Poland*, had granted the Peace to the Czar, which he sued for; and would have let him name almost his own Terms, he might have been the Arbiter of that between the *Grand Allies*, and *France* and *Spain*, and have prescribed the Conditions of it: But instead of this, nothing would content him but to depose the Czar; for which Purpose he broke into his Country, with an Army of 40,000 Men without Ammunition, contrary to the Advice of his best Officers, through Difficulties that none but himself would have undergone; and with incredible Fatigues lost, at *Pultowa*, in one Day his noble Army, and the Fruits of nine glorious Campaigns. The Czar has more now than he could ever expect; his Troops not only learnt to conquer after they had been conquered, but one Battle gives him all *Livonia*, *Estonia*, *Ingria*, &c. I leave the Enemies of *Charles the Twelfth* to relate, with Pleasure, the rest of the Circumstances, and what followed, as fatal to *Sweden* as advantageous to *Russia*, that I may return to *M. le Fort*, who, being dead before the Beginning of this War, had not the Satisfaction to see to what a Degree of Bravery the *Russian* Troops are arrived.

*M. le Fort* was of a *Genevan* Family, divided between the Magistracy and the Trade; after he had gone through his Studies in the Colledge with good Success, his Father would have had him chuse the Condition of Life he liked best from one of those two States: They both seemed indifferent to him, but he had a strong Inclination to the Army; there was no Exercise or Review but he run to see it, and read all the Books he could find, that treated of War and Fortifications: However, as he saw his Father did not approve of that Way of Life, and was continually pressing him to determine what he would be, he desired to be sent to some Compting-House in *Amsterdam*, which is reckoned the best School for Trade: He pleased his Father very much in this Choice, who sent him to *M. Franconis*, one of the most eminent Merchants in that City. This Gentleman was charmed with his Application to Business, of which in a very short Time he acquired a perfect Knowledge: He had some Smattering of the *German* Tongue, and so learnt the *Dutch* without much Difficulty. As young *le Fort* had a Desire to see some other Countries besides *Holland*, he intreated *M. Franconis*, who loved him as if he had been his own Son, to let him go to *Copenhagen*, in a Merchant-Ship that he was going to send thither laden on his own Account, promising to take particular Care of his Affairs if he would give him Commission: Having obtained his Request, he was intrusted with the whole Cargo, and discharged his Commission in a Manner very advantageous to his Master, and even beyond what could have been expected from one of his Age, and who had been so little a Time in Business.

Business. Although the Profession of a Merchant is not much regarded in the Country where he was, any more than in many others, yet his good Air and personal Merit gained him Access, and rendered his Company agreeable, to those of the best Distinction. Finding himself in a military Country, his Love of Arms began to revive at Sight of the *Danish* Troops, and grow stronger than ever: He made an Acquaintance with some Officers there, who were as much pleased with his Company as he was with theirs; when they exercised he would put himself among their Soldiers, and learnt more in one Day than any one of the new Soldiers could in a Month; till in a little Time he was as capable of exercising the Men as the best Officer. Being one Day where he was told, that the Court of *Denmark* was going to send an Ambassadour to *Moscow*, who was looking out for some Pages that were tall and well made, he, being both; expressed a great Desire to see other Countries, and wished the Ambassadour would accept of him for one. A Person in Company said he was well acquainted with him, and would propose it: Young *le Fort* desired it as a Favour: Upon the Description given of him to this Minister, he desired to see him; he was charmed with his Physiognomy, his easy Carriage, his Freedom of Speech without Want of Respect; and told him, that it only depended upon himself, whether he would accompany him or not. *M. le Fort* thanked him for the Honour he designed him, and said he would write to his Father for his Consent, which was approved of by the Ambassadour; and, he not being to depart in less than two Months, there was Time enough for the young Gentleman to prepare for his Voyage: He wrote to Monsieur *Franconis*, to whom he had already given an Account of all his Effects, to acquaint him with the Resolution he had taken, offering at the same Time to do him any Service he was capable of in regard to his Commerce in *Muscovy*. He not only begged, that he would himself excuse the strong Inclination he had to travel, which was not to be resisted, but that he would join another Letter to that which he had sent to his Father, to obtain his Consent. *Franconis*, who knew by Experience the Hurt which Parents often do to young People by too strongly opposing their Inclinations, especially when there is no Evil in them, sent his Letter to his Father, and with it another from himself, in which he told him, that, from what he had observed in his Son's Conduct, during the small Time he had been with him; and from the exact and advantageous Manner in which he had performed his Commission at *Copenhagen*, he could not but succeed in any Thing he undertook; that as to his Voyage it was not contrary to Trade, but that perhaps he might be encouraged to apply himself to it more closely than ever, when he arrived in *Muscovy*, if he did not find his Account in any other Profession.

F f

M. le

M. *le Fort*, the Father, gave an Answer to this agreeable to his Son's Wishes, and desired M. *Franconis* to give him Credit at *Copenhagen* and *Moscow* for his particular Occasions. As soon as young *le Fort* received this welcome Answer, he communicated it to the Ambassadour, who was very well pleased with it, and gave him all the Marks of his Benevolence and Esteem, which he was worthy of. The Time of his Departure being come, he embarked with his Retinue on board a Man of War, that landed them at *Libaw*, a Town in *Courland*, which I have mentioned in my second Chapter; from whence they proceeded to *Mittaw*, where his Excellency had some Commission from the King his Master to the Duke. They staid here some Time, during which M. *le Fort* applied himself to learn the Language of the Country, which, as I have said, is a *Sclavonian* Dialect: By this Application and the surprising Progress he made in it, he rendered himself so much the more agreeable to his Master, serving him for an Interpreter, not only during their whole Journey from *Mittaw* to *Moscow*, but even at Court, and on other Occasions; for he was no sooner arrived there, but he applied himself to the *Russian* Language, which is a much better *Sclavonian*; he had perfected himself in the *German*, understood the *Danish*, and could make himself understood in that Language.

The Ambassadour, being a Man of very great Merit and Magnificence, was much admired for the last by the Czar, *John*, who, it is known, was but a weak Prince; and for the former was so much esteemed by the Czar, *Peter*, that he often visited him for the Sake of his Conversation; treated him at his own Table, and sometimes eat at his. One Day, when he dined there, he took Notice of the respectful Manner, in which *le Fort* waited behind the Chair of his Master, and especially of his genteel Air and promising Countenance; and, as he served for an Interpreter, and spoke good *Russian*, his Majesty asked him himself, What Country-Man he was? Where he had learnt the *Russian* Tongue? and many other Questions; to all which he made Answers that pleased that Prince so much, that he asked him, If he would enter into his Service? M. *le Fort* replied, in the most respectful Manner, that, whatever Ambition he might have to serve so great a Monarch as his Majesty, he depended on a Lord, who gave him daily new Marks of his Bounty, and without whose Consent, neither Duty nor Gratitude would allow him to promise any Thing: But, said the Czar, *If I obtain your Master's Consent, would thou be willing to serve me?* Yes, said he, but beg your Majesty will be pleased to make use of any other Interpreter, to ask him the Question. The Czar, by one of his Interpreters, said to the Ambassadour, This young Man speaks very good *Russian*; to which the other answered, he has a Genius to learn any Thing; he spoke the *German* but very ill when he came to me, about four Months ago; I have but two in my Train that speak the *German*, and he now speaks

speaks it as well as either of them; he did not know one Word of *Sclavonian*, when he first came into *Courland*, and yet your Majesty yourself says, he speaks good *Russian*. Young *le Fort* had withdrawn to some Distance, when he first heard the Praises his Master bestowed upon him, which being observed by the Czar, it did not a little increase the good Opinion he had conceived of him; for, when they had done speaking of him, turning his Head, and not finding him behind his Master's Chair, cried out, Where's *le Fort*? Let him bring me a Glass of Wine, which, being told him, he did immediately. The Czar asked the Ambassadour several Questions concerning the Court of *Denmark*, which were interpreted by *le Fort*; and said no more that Day; but the next Time the Ambassadour went to Court, he told him plainly, that he should be glad to have that young Man about him; and desired he would ask him himself, whether or no he should be willing to serve him, and if so, he would give him one of his own Interpreters, who should attend him as long as he had Occasion for one; the Ambassadour answered, that the Exchange was too advantageous to *le Fort*, and that he wished him too well, not to consent to it. Well, said the Czar, if he is satisfied with it, let him come to me to Morrow Morning at my Levee. *Le Fort* accordingly went; the Czar, thinking him too tall and too old for a Page, made him his first Interpreter, and he soon became so much his Favourite, that he carried him with him wherever he went, and took Pleasure to talk to him about the Courts he had seen, as *Swed*, *France* and *Denmark*. He asked him Questions upon other foreign Matters that he thought of, and was charmed with his Answers. One Day, talking of the King of *Denmark's* Life-Guards, he asked him, What he thought of his? which were composed of *Strelitz* \*; and bad him speak his Mind freely and without Disguise. He answered, that he thought of them, as he did of all his Soldiers, that they were fine well-made Men, who wanted nothing but to be well-disciplined, and cloathed in a proper Manner; that the long Cloaths they wore, were by no Means becoming to Soldiers, but, on the contrary, were inconvenient and troublesome. The Czar said to him, Couldst not thou let me see some Cloaths then that are more convenient? *Le Fort* told him he would endeavour; he went, without loosing any Time, to the Ambassadour of *Denmark's* Taylor, and made him take Measure of him for a Suit of Cloaths for a Captain of the Guard, and another for a Life-Guard Man; and two Days after he appeared in the first at the Czar's Levee, who was surprized at his Coming into his Chamber, and did not know him 'till he spoke to him: Upon which he laughed, commended his Diligence, and very much approved of the Dress. Two Days after he appeared in the other, the Czar was so well satisfied with them, that he said he would have such for a whole

\* A Sort of Militia, which answered at that Time to that of the Janissaries in *Turky*.

whole Company, who should be disciplined after the same Manner, as in the Courts he had mentioned.

*Le Fort* sent to all the Merchants of different Nations settled at *Moscow*, and went to some himself, for all Things necessary to cloath this Company; taking all the Taylors he could find at the Ambassadors Houses, and those who served the Merchants; he desired an Order from the Czar to have Measure taken of those among the Strelits of the best Shape and Statyre: He then gathered together a Number of Officers and other Strangers, who had some Knowledge in the military Exercise, and were willing to enter into the Czar's Service, or were already engaged in it; and had them cloathed according to the Posts that were given them: At length he compleated and cloathed a Company of fifty Men, which being done, he put himself at their Head, and marched with Drums beating before the Palace-Gate, a little before the Time that the Guard of Strelits used to meet there. The Czar, coming to the Window, was as much surprized as pleased with the Spectacle: *Le Fort* gave them here their first Lesson of military Exercise, in the Presence of that Prince, who came down from his Chamber as soon as it began, and when it was over, he said he would enter into the Company, and learn the Exercise; and thereupon ordered a Suit of Cloaths to be made for him, as for a common Life-Guard Man: He soon excelled in this Exercise, having, as it is known, such extraordinary Talents for every Thing. As for his Brother *John*, he remained in his natural Weakness, contenting himself to be a Spectator, or to maintain the Post of a Czar, while *Peter* was acting the Part of one of his Life-Guards. As he was willing to have all his Troops disciplined after this Manner, he gave Orders to Captain *le Fort*, to procure him all the Foreigners he could, promising to give them all the Encouragement he should think proper; and supplied him with what Money he thought necessary: There were great Remittances made, on this Account, to *Amsterdam*, *Geneva*, and other Places, which M. *le Fort* named, not forgetting Monsieur *Franconis*, who was no Loser by them; and a prodigious Number of Officers and Soldiers were brought by him into the Service of the Czar.

*Alexander Menzikoff*, very well known by his Puffs and Cakes, but more by his Songs, like those of the Water-Boys in *Paris*, had at that Time the good Fortune to please the Czar, *Peter*, by one of his Songs, and by some other Things, so that he became his Favourite, a Prince, and, from one of the poorest, the richest Subject that ever was in *Russia*; built Palaces more lofty and magnificent than all those of the Czar: Of these I shall speak in their proper Place. He was tall and well-made, and would also lift himself into the Company of M. *le Fort*, who put him in a Condition of commanding the Armies after him, and, like himself, in Quality of a General: He has been raised extremely  
above



above his Master, but by Means as shameful as those of this Stranger's Elevation were honourable: This is what I have already hinted at, being informed by the Voice of the Publick. I shall add here, as an opposite Parallel between M. *le Fort* and him, what I have heard concerning them, both in my Travels and since my Return, from Persons of such good Characters, that I could not have the least Reason to doubt of their Veracity.

The shameful Steps, taken by *Menzikoff*, according to these Gentlemen, were the heavy Taxes and Impositions before mentioned, laid on the Subjects of *Russia*; the Confiscations of the Estates of some of the richest; the Banishment, and cruelly Torturing of others, always flattering or enflaming the Passions of the Czar, by his violent and interested Counsels, as much as M. *le Fort* endeavoured to oppose and sooth them by the Disinterestedness and Moderation of his. He persuaded his Sovereign to cut off the Heads of an infinite Number of People, and often with his own Hand; and it was a great Favour, say they, if, before that they did not suffer the severest Tortures: He not only caused him to divorce, but imprison, his first Wife, whose Virtue was never suspected, upon some Reproaches, violent indeed, but not without Cause, and which Jealousy extorted from her, that he carried her Husband among lewd Women, his former Customers for his Cakes. Not satisfied with revenging these Affronts, which reflected upon his old Calling, on the first Wife of the Czar, he carried his Resentment even to the Son, his Prince had by her; whom he prevailed with him to disinherit, to make Way for another to be his Successour, whom he had by his second Wife, which Wife he had presented him with; and, the better to secure the Succession to the last, or any other by this second Venter, he incited the Father to put the first to Death in the most inhuman Manner. Death having taken away the young Heir, he persuaded the Czar to make a Settlement in Favour of the Mother, whereby the Throne was secured to her after his Death, and to what Successours she should chuse after her own. This Settlement the Emperour took care to render inviolable by the strongest and most solemn Oaths from the Clergy and Nobility, which he ordered them to repeat a few Days before his Death, making them lay one Hand on his Breast and the other on the Books of the Evangelists. This Lady, being placed on the Imperial Throne by these Means, still considered Prince *Menzikoff* as her Master, and would do nothing but as he advised, contenting herself with the Title of Empress, but left all the Authority to him. He disposed at his Pleasure of all the great Employments in the State, the Army, and the Fleet; and to his own Creatures only, or such as offered the most for them. Seeing that all the People of *Russia* were desirous to have the Son of the Czarowitz, who was disinherited, and cruelly murdered, succeed to the Throne after the Death of this Lady, and fearing

G g

that



that this might be brought about by a general Revolution, if she should chuse one of her own Daughters, or any other for her Successour, he persuaded her to make her Will in Favour of this young Prince, upon Condition that he should marry his Daughter. This being done, upon the Death of the Empress he became more powerful than ever. The very Day that *Catherine* died, and the Prince was declared Emperour, Prince *Menzikoff* had the Vanity to cause himself to be proclaimed Generalissimo of all the Forces, both by Sea and Land, Great Duke of *Ingria*, &c. He engrossed the whole Government to himself, without allowing any Share to the other *Russian* Lords of the Regency. He made himself so absolute Master of the Person of the young Emperour, that he ordered the Governours he had placed about him to let no one approach him, in his Absence, but those whom he named to them; who, he was sure, were in his Interest, or his own Creatures. Prince *Menzikoff* was, say they, a masked Oppressour under the Reign of *Peter the First*, who, the better to conceal the Informations he gave him concerning the Riches of several of his Subjects, (which was commonly their greatest Crime, though they were punished for others invented by *Menzikoff*) would punish him himself at the same Time, and lay large Fines upon him: Whether or no this was done in Reality, or only in Appearance, to give some Colour of Impartiality to the Justice of his Punishments, great Care was always taken at Court to let it be known, that Prince *Menzikoff* had received so many Blows of the Knout from the Czar's own Hand, and was condemned to pay such and such Sums of Money: Nevertheless he still continued in Favour, and indeed he was too useful an Instrument in filling his Coffers to be parted with. But the same Persons add, that Prince *Menzikoff* took off the Mask under *Peter the Second*. He had this young Emperour wholly in his Power, who was not yet twelve Years of Age, his Son-in-Law, and incapable, as he thought, to examine into or controul his Actions; and therefore resolved to oppress, to punish and plunder, as he thought fit, only making use of his Name. Conformable to this Resolution he began with those among the Subjects of *Russia*, whom he had the most Reason to be jealous of, as being the most capable to overturn his ambitious or avaritious Projects. He was willing to get rid of such troublesome Neighbours, by Death or Banishment, and to enrich himself with their Spoils. With this View he persuaded the young Prince, as soon as he was seated on the Throne, that they were forming dangerous Designs against his Person and Government: He charged his own Crime, concerning the Death of his Father, on them, particularly on Count *Tolstoy*\*, one of his greatest Antagonists; upon

\* I am very well informed, that *Peter the First* gave Orders to Count *Tolstoy* to fetch Home the Czarowitz, who was retired into the Emperour's Dominions to avoid his Father's ill Usage, but he gave at the same Time the Word of a Monarch not to impute to him the Plot that was formed

upon which he caused the following Declaration to be published, the Day before the Marriage of that young Monarch with his Daughter.

Peter the Second, *by the Grace of God, Emperour and Sovereign of both Russia's, &c.*

No-body is ignorant, that his Imperial Majesty, *Peter the First*, our most dear Grandfather, did, in the Year 1722, out of his paternal Care for the Good of this Empire, make a perpetual Regulation for the Succession to the Throne; importing, that the Nomination and Establishment of a Successour depended absolutely on his Will and Pleasure. This Regulation was confirmed in the Year 1726 by her late Imperial Majesty, our dearest Grandmother-in-Law, who ordered the same to be printed and published; and also a Book, printed in the Year 1722, upon this Subject, with the Consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, having for Title, *The Right of a Sovereign with Respect to the Disposal of the Succession to his Throne*: Ordering moreover, that whoever should know of any Person or Persons, who dared, by Discourse or Writing, to insinuate any Thing against the said Regulation published by Imperial Authority, or who should make any sinister Interpretation thereof, they should be obliged to declare it to her Imperial Majesty, who would take Care to reward such Discoverers.

Nevertheless, although several Persons have been already punished, who were accused and convicted, not only of holding such Discourses, but of having clandestinely dispersed Writings against this Regulation, and the Contents of the said Book, it was discovered, during the last Illness of her late Imperial Majesty, our said Grandmother, that the like Rebels and Authours of seditious Discourses have formed Designs against both, as well as against her Intentions; which were to settle the Succession in our Favour.

The Accomplices of these wicked Designs were, *Antony Devier, Peter Tolstoy, John Butturlin, Gregory Shorniakow Pissarew, and Andrew Vuschakow*: The last was declared an Accomplice in the said Crimes, for that he, knowing *Pissarew* to be one of them, had not discovered him.

Moreover, not only the above-named Rebels and Traitours, but also *Alexander Nareskin*, and the Kneez, *John Dolgoroukky*, have been long since disaffected towards us, and have endeavoured to prevent the Effects of her said Imperial Majesty's maternal Affection for us, and in particular with regard to our Marriage with the Princess *Menzikoff*, whom

formed in his Name, whether real or pretended; ( for I have it from very good Hands, that it was all an Invention of *Menzikoff's* ) and that he should look upon him only as the innocent Cause and Pretext of it: The Count had likewise Orders to assure the Emperour of the Observance of this Promise from a Sovereign and a Father, that he might make no Difficulty in letting him bring away the Prince; I am also informed, that Count *Tolstoy* had the same Assurance himself from the Czar, when he received these Orders. All the World know but too well, how cruelly this Promise was broken.

whom we have chosen in the Name of God, and do chuse, of our own Accord, to be our Comfort.

Her Imperial Majesty, being informed of this, established a Tribunal for their Trial, by which they were condemned, and sentenced to be punished as Enemies to her Person and the Imperial Family, viz. *Antony Devier* and *Peter Tolstoy*, as chief of the Rebels, with Death; *John Butturlin* with the Loss of his Estate and Titles, and to be banished to his Lands that are the most remote; *Gregory Pissarew* the same; *John Dolgoroukky* to be removed from Court, and placed in the most inferior Degree of one of the Regiments of Militia; *Alexander Nareskin* the same; *Andrew Vuschakow* to have his Post taken from him, and be placed in some other, as the Court shall think fit.

This Sentence being presented to her Imperial Majesty, she confirmed it with her Signature, with some Mitigations, viz. *Antony Devier* and *Peter Tolstoy's* Sentence of Death was changed into the Forfeiture of their Estates and Honours; the first, after receiving the Knout, was to be sent into *Siberia*; the other, with his Son *John Tolstoy*, to the Cloyster of *Salawetskoy*: *Butturlin* was only to be deprived of his Honours and banished; *Gregory Pissarew* to forfeit all his Estates and Honours, to receive the Knout, and be banished; As to *John Dolgoroukky*, *Alexander Nareskin*, and *Andrew Vuschakow*, the Sentence of the Imperial Tribunal shall be executed.

But as these Mitigations proceeded only from the peculiar Clemency of her Imperial Majesty, no one ought to flatter himself with Hopes of the like for the future; on the contrary, whoever shall offend against the said Regulations by misinterpreting them, shall be punished to the utmost Rigour of the Laws; and whoever shall discover the Offenders, shall be graciously and generously rewarded. Given at *S. Petersbourg*, the 26th of *May*, 1727.

On the 27th of the same Month the Espousals of the Emperour, *Peter the Second*, with the Princess of *Menzikoff*, were celebrated with the greatest Magnificence. Prince *Menzikoff*, raised to this Height, and wanting nothing but the Title of Emperour, thought to strengthen his Power and Authority by taking away the principal Employments in the State, the Army, and the Fleet, from those Lords, to whom *Peter the First* had given them, and who only were able to balance this Power and Authority, to bestow them on Creatures of his own: But it was this that hastened his Fall, and reduced him to the Nothing from whence he was taken; which happened in the following Manner.

The young Emperour, a Prince of Judgment and Penetration much above his Years, had already conceived some Disgust against Prince *Menzikoff* on Account of the Authority which he exercised in too despotick a Manner, even over himself; of which this is an Instance.

The

The Citizens of *Petersbourg* in a Body, or rather the chief of them in the Name of the whole Body, went to pay their Duty to his Imperial Majesty, and wish him Joy upon his Accession to the Throne. They accompanied their Compliment with a Present of 5000 Ducats, new struck of his own Coin; this Monarch received them in the most gracious Manner that could be, promising them his Protection, and giving them all the Marks of his Favour that were possible. As the Emperour had an extream Affection for his only Sister, the Princess *Nathalia*, who resembled her Mother in every Respect, and in whose Veins, and those of this dear Brother, the whole generous Blood of that virtuous, and never enough to be regretted Lady, seemed to be preserved, he sent the Citizens Present to her, by a Gentleman of his Court. It happened as this Gentleman was going to wait on her, followed by a Servant who carried the Ducats in a Silk-Bag, which he held with both his Hands, he met Prince *Menzikoff*; the Prince, asking him where he was going with that Bag, and what was in it, when the Gentleman told him, he ordered him to carry it to his own Treasurer, without giving himself any Trouble to give an Account of his Message to the Emperour; adding, that he was going that Instant to his Majesty, and would tell him the Reason, why he had given such Orders. The Gentleman did as he was ordered by the Prince, whom every one obeyed; but he himself took not any Notice of what had passed to the Emperour. The next Morning, the Princess *Nathalia* coming into her Brother's Apartment, and being alone with him, he was surprized that she said nothing of his Present, and asked her, How she liked the new Ducats he had sent her the Night before? She was as much surprized at the Question, and said, she had neither received nor seen any. His Majesty ordered the Gentleman to be called, and asked him, What were become of them? Who relating what happened, the Emperour, after reproaching him for preferring Prince *Menzikoff's* Orders to his, bad him withdraw. As the Princess went out of the Emperour's Apartment, she met Prince *Menzikoff* going in, who saluting her, she returned the Salute, but they spoke not one Word to each other; but when he came in to the Emperour, he asked him with some Warmth, Why he had intercepted the Present he sent to his Sister? Prince *Menzikoff* answered, he could not see what Occasion she could have for such a Sum of Money, and therefore thought it ought rather to be employed for his Majesty's Use, or the publick Service of the Empire; and added, that the Imperial Treasury was very much drained. To which the Emperour replied, with more Warmth, Who is it has drained it? It is not I; this Money was not drawn from thence: Know, that I will not be treated in this Manner. Prince *Menzikoff*, without giving him Time to go on, said, he thought he had acted for the best, but since his Majesty did not think so, he would give Orders that Instant,

H h

to

to send the Money to the Princess. This satisfied the young Emperour, who was extremely good-natured, and would have affected Prince *Menzikoff* very little, if he had been able to set Bounds to his Ambition and Avarice, or had not continued his Oppressions, and the Exercise of his Tyranny, even over the principal Persons in the Army and the Fleet; but he carried Matters to that Height, that all the Nobility took a Resolution of destroying him at the Hazard of destroying themselves; but the first happened for the Preservation of the latter a very short Time after. He had undertaken to displace Admiral *Apraxin* from his Command in the Fleet, who was a Gentleman of 70 Years of Age, but of a vigorous and hail Constitution, and generally looked upon as the properest Person for that Employment. This good old Man was much beloved, which created a Jealousy in *Menzikoff*, who was for putting him out of the Way, and therefore gave him the Command of the little Fleet in the *Caspian-Sea*. He sent his Order to him in Writing, which the Admiral read with Surprise; but, finding Means to get at the Emperour, he asked him, Whether it was his Will, that it should be so or not? He begged him to have the Goodness to consider his long Services, which had not been disagreeable to his Imperial Majesty, *Peter the First*, nor to the late Empress; and added, that he did not expect, under his Reign, to be sent into a kind of Banishment in his old Age; that, if his Majesty did not want his Service any longer in the Command of his Great Fleet, he desired he would let him end the small Remainder of his Days among his Friends and Relations. The young Emperour was as much surprized at this Order as the Admiral himself; he told him he had not the least Knowledge of it, desired him to keep his Post, and promised him to reprove Prince *Menzikoff* as he deserved; which he did not fail to do as soon as he saw him. This Prince, observing some Heat in his Words, pleaded again the Goodness of his Intentions for his Majesty's Service, and the Importance of such a Command; but, since it was not pleasing to his Majesty, he would revoke the Order.

If the young Emperour, who was already made sensible of the arbitrary Power that Prince *Menzikoff* assumed over him, as it is said, by one of his Governours\*, if not both, shewed his Resentment in a lively Manner on this Occasion, he did so much more on the Account of the Prince and Velt-Marshal *Gallitzin*, who gave the finishing Stroke to Prince *Menzikoff*'s Disgrace. This last, designing, by his own Authority, to remove him from his Command of the Army in *Ukrania*, and give it to one of his own Creatures, sent an Express for that Purpose, with an Order, signed by himself only, for him to come to Court. The Velt-Marshal

\* It is generally thought, that Baron *Osterman*, one of his Governours, who was a Man of Honour, had had an Interview with the Admiral, and put Words into the Emperour's Mouth to reproach Prince *Menzikoff* on his insolent Conduct.

Marshal made no Answer to it; he sent him a second, which likewise he returned no Answer to: But receiving Advice, by a trusty Person, that Matters were ripe for pulling down the insolent Usurper of the Imperial Authority, and that his Presence was wanted; he then wrote to him, that having heard, that the late Empress had, in her Will, appointed a Regency during the Minority of the Emperour, he thought he could not quit a Post of so much Importance as that with which he was entrusted, without an Order signed by every Member of that Regency. Prince *Menzikoff*, who had but just revoked the Order sent to the Great Admiral, and thought the Emperour appeased, began to fear he should not come off so easily, with respect to that which he had sent to Prince *Gallitzin*, a Man very powerful and popular, and generally esteemed. He was so far from shewing any Marks of Resentment upon his Silence, that he presently put several of his Relations into Places at Court; and with great Diligence sent an Express to him, with a Letter wrote in the most obliging Terms, assuring him, that he was very far from having a Design to make any Alterations that should be prejudicial to him; but that his sole View in sending for him was to propose to, and concert with him, a Match between Count *Gallitzin*, his Son, and his second Daughter; and that was the Reason why he had not communicated his Order to the Regency, and especially as he was sure the Emperour would approve of the Match. This Pretence might have served at any other Conjunction of Time.

The Contrivers of Prince *Menzikoff's* Ruin had placed some of their Friends, or waited themselves, to meet with the General at his Arrival in the Neighbourhood of *Petersbourg*; they were so vigilant, that they spoke to him before the other knew of his being arrived. They advised him to keep himself *incognito* in a House near the Court, till the Emperour should be brought to him; in short, it was not a Quarter of an Hour before Baron *Osterman*, taking the Opportunity of Prince *Menzikoff's* Absence, conducted his Imperial Majesty thither, under Pretence of going to take the Air. The General informed him of what related to himself, and the others represented so eloquently all the Oppressions and irregular Practices of Prince *Menzikoff*; his presumptuous Usurpations on the Imperial Authority; the Indignity done to his Imperial Majesty by espousing him to his Daughter, &c. that the young Emperour told them he was come on purpose to redress their Grievances, and do them Justice. And that very Evening an Order was drawn up by Baron *Osterman*, and signed by his Majesty, to arrest the Person of Prince *Menzikoff*, carry him into Banishment, and seize his Treasure; which was accordingly put in Execution. Never was any Joy so general as that which the Publick shewed at the News of this Act of Justice, done by his Majesty to his Subjects; in attempting to procure which some Hundreds of brave and noble Patriots had lost their Lives, or been

been ruined under the two preceding Reigns; especially under that of *Peter the First*. They were flattering themselves with Hopes of seeing the happiest and justest Reign that *Russia* ever knew, when Death snatched away this young Prince, whose good and august Qualities had inspired those Hopes; their Sorrow was very much augmented by the Loss of his worthy and beloved Sister, who did not survive him above three Months. It is a great Consolation to them to have a Princess for their Empress, whose hereditary Right had been interrupted, or rendered uncertain, by the Regulations above mentioned, and whose Loss is very much regretted in *Courland*, on Account of her personal Merit and excellent Qualities; and for her Liberality and Generosity in every Respect.

I return now to *M. le Fort*, to mention some of the remarkable Qualities which he was endowed with, and which are praised to this Day, in Opposition to those of Prince *Menzikoff*. Far from furnishing the Czar, *Peter the First*, like the last, with violent and oppressive Means to support the Expence of his vast Projects, he helped him to some that were sufficient, and, at the same Time, an Ease to the People. As the Czar was extremely pleased with the Foreigners he had already procured him, he was resolved to have a greater Number, and of People expert in every Profession, that he might introduce Arts and Sciences into his Dominions: But *M. le Fort* told him, that his Finances wanted to be reformed as much as his Troops or any Thing else; that he had taken notice, that his Revenues would not answer to the Expences which his great Designs required, and the Support of that prodigious Number of Foreigners which nothing was capable of drawing into his Service, but the great Advantages he proposed to them, and a regular Pay. The Czar answered, that he should be advised by his Counsel in this as in other Affairs. He shewed his Majesty, that the Reason why his Revenues were so inconsiderable in ready Money, that even his own Table, and those of the Officers of his Court, and his Ministers, were served with Provisions in *Natura*, instead of the Money his Subjects should bring in for their Contributions, was, the Height of the Taxes on all Sorts of Goods, which made the Merchants study all the clandestine Ways they could to cheat him of his Customs, and which they did but too well succeed in. He persuaded him to reduce his Duties from 10 *per Cent.* to 4 or 5, and to order severe Penalties to be inflicted upon those who should attempt to defraud him of them. He did according to this Advice, and found his Revenues increased near two Millions of Rubles\* the first Year.

*M. le Fort*, having thus put it in the Power of the Czar generously and regularly to pay the Foreigners he had brought to him, an infinite Number

\* A Ruble passes for near the Value of an *English* or *French* Crown, which formerly passed but for three *Livres*, but now for six. The intrinsic Value of it is not above 50 Pence *English*.



Number of all Nations came over; especially *Germans*, *Scots*, and *French*; not only Officers and experienced Soldiers for his Army, but able Men in all Professions; some of which acquired immense Fortunes. It was told me as a kind of Wonder, that there were *Taylor*s, who, by cloathing the Regiments, and making Cloaths for the *Russian Boyars*, were reckoned worth 100,000 Rubles; to which I made Answer, that I knew in *England* a *French Woman's-Taylor*, said to be worth 600,000 Crowns.

*M. le Fort*, to take away all Cause of Jealousy and Envy from the *Russian* Subjects against the Foreigners, recommended to the Czar, for Preferment; those among the first, whom he himself and other Foreigners had made capable of filling the most lucrative Posts. *Alexander Menzikoff*, who was still crying his *Piragi Podovi*\* about the Streets of *Moscow*, when *M. le Fort* arrived there, is an Instance of this; for he not only made him fit to hold with Reputation the different Employments he had in the Army, before he was made a Prince by the Favour of the Czar, but recommended him to them. *M. le Fort* was generous and disinterested to that Degree, that he never would accept of any Presents from those whom he had advanced: Nevertheless he got Riches enough; but as it was by his Merit, his Services, or other Means that were just and honourable, he possessed them without any Envy from the *Russians*, who looked upon him as their Father. He saved the Lives of an infinite Number of *Boyars* and other rich Persons, to whom the Czar would have given the Knout †, or beheaded with his own Hands: When he was going to do this, many Times on trifling Occasions, *M. le Fort* would present his own Head or Shoulders to him, saying, cut or strike here, but spare this innocent Person. The Czar, being disarmed of his Ferocity by such generous Acts, would kiss him, and sometimes the Victim whom he was ready to sacrifice to

I i

his

\* This is a Sort of Pastry-Ware, made of Raisins and other dried Fruit, mixt with minced Meat, which is cried about the Streets. I was told, that Prince *Menzikoff*'s Master had the Reputation of making the best of any body.

† The Knout is a Whip, the Lash of which is made of the Skin of an old Ass, boyled in Vinegar and Mare's Milk, and is about an Inch broad. The Patient strips himself to his Waste, taking off his Shirt, and leaves nothing on but his Breeches; or if a Woman, nothing but her Petticoat: This done, he ascends a sort of Scaffold, where his Feet are fastened to the Floor; his Hands are put over the Shoulders of a strong Man, who with his holds them fast to his Breast, so that he cannot stir; then the Executioner advances three or four Steps, as if he was running, till he comes within Reach of the Offender, and gives his first Stroke on the middle of his Back; then he retreats three or four Steps, and comes forward again, always with the same Quickness as at first, striking sometimes one Shoulder and sometimes another; and always with such Dexterity, that he never gives two Strokes upon the same Place: He repeats this Motion as many Times as there are Blows ordered to be given by his Sentence, the Blood running in Abundance all this while from the Patient's Back. This is the moderate Knout. When the Sentence orders the Knout between the moderate and the severe, one may see small Pieces of Flesh taken off at every Stroke of the Executioner. When it is ordered to be given with the utmost Severity, it is often mortal; for then the Executioner, striking the Flanks under the Ribs, cuts the Flesh to the very Bowels.



his Passion. *M. le Fort* married into a very rich Family, the Head of which he had saved, in this Manner, from the Rage of his Prince. He left, when he died, near a Million of Rubles in Land and Money.

If Prince *Menzikoff* had not all the good Qualities of General *le Fort*, as his Disinterestedness, his Humanity, Justice, Sobriety, &c. he had some of the most shining among them: He distinguished himself by his Bravery against the *Turks*, in *Poland* against the *Swedes* and their Partisans, and in *Livonia*, to the Reduction of which he very much contributed; in *Ukrania*, and especially at *Pultowa*, he shewed great Generosity to the Officers and Soldiers.

He had lost, when I saw him at *Petersbourg*, that Comeliness in his Make and Complexion, and that Strength of Body which I had heard much of before; for he was then lean, pale, and of a tanned Complexion, such as the Painters give to *Don Quixot*: This was attributed, by those who love Scandal, to his long and frequent Visits to a great Lady, with whom, they say, he used to be shut up whole Days together: But might not that be on political Affairs? Or ought we not to ascribe this Alteration in his Person to the Fatigues he underwent with the Czar in a long War? Besides, those who saw him in *Poland*, assured me, that he was at that Time brought to the Condition in which I saw him at *Petersbourg*: Moreover it is observeable, that violent Exercise, and the greatest Fatigues generally contribute to the Health of Persons of a robust and strong Constitution; not to mention an infinite Number of Instances I could quote, to prove the Truth of this Observation, I think the late King of *Sweden* was the most remarkable one; and I have found, by a long Experience myself, that I never enjoyed so perfect a State of Health as when I have endured the greatest Fatigues, and been exposed to all Weathers. I have not felt the least Indisposition in 33 Years Travelling by Sea and Land; what Illness I have had was, when I had all Conveniences, and lived at my Ease. May it not be supposed, that the Complaisance that Prince *Menzikoff* had to drink the strongest Liquors continually to an Excess, with this Lady's Husband and herself, may have caused so great an Alteration in his Constitution, since it is generally reported, that this was the Occasion of both their Deaths? Some say, that it was he that first brought them to hard Drinking, and that strong Liquors were become so familiar to them, that they would drink perpetually without being any Way concerned at it, especially Prince *Menzikoff* and she: Of this I saw a notable Instance at a Supper this Lady gave; which was followed by a Ball. As soon as she was sat down to the Table, she was served with a large Glass of strong Liquor, after the Manner of the Country, which she drank off to shew a good Example to the Company; then every one else was served round, except some young Persons who had small Glasses: *Spanish* and *Portugal* Wines circulated very fast all Supper-Time,

Time, nor had the Welcome \*, of more than a Pint Bumper, been forgotten; I say *Spanish* and *Portugal*, because that Lady preferred them to *French* Wines, which were too weak for her Stomach; except *Frontignack* and *Burgundy*, which were served in less Quantities than the others. At Rising from Table there were only herself and Prince *Menzikoff*, who seemed to be sober, although they drank larger Glasses than any body. Some of the Ladies were so drunk, that they could not take above one Turn in a Dance, and were every Moment in Danger of falling; one of them did so, and two of the Noblemen, to the great Diversion of Prince *Menzikoff* and the Lady; and it was not without the Assistance of their Servants, that many of them were able to get Home.

I dined that Day with a foreign Minister, who was invited to this Supper, which he excused himself from on Account of an Indisposition, which he had but too frequent Causes to complain of, though not at that Time, but only to avoid, as he said, the Bumpers with which they assassinate their Guests at the *Russian* Repasts, and which are not to be refused; for they do not wait till you call for any Thing, but you must drink whenever the Glass is given to you, which is very often; at least as often as the Person drinks who gives the Entertainment. I have been invited to some of their Treats, where I was used in the same Manner: This Minister, by whose Means I had Admittance to the Supper I have just mentioned, added, that no body went to Court but when they were invited; and that was always to be drunk, (that was his Expression) or when they had any Business of Consequence from their own Court; and then they got an Audience by a kind of Petition.

As to the Lady, such is the Difference of Constitutions, she was a great deal fatter than when I had seen her fifteen Years before; but had lost her fine Complexion, and appeared puffed up, as if her Skin had been blown. Prince *Menzikoff*, on the contrary, had lost his good Plight, the Strength of his Body and Complexion, and was become lean and fallow. When he was at the Height of his Power in *Russia*, some of his Creatures endeavoured to give him an Extraction not so mean as I have mentioned: They would have it, that he was descended from a Family, considerable formerly in *Poland*; but since he has been stript of his Title of Prince, his Dukedom, his Estates, and his blue Ribbon of S. *Andrew*, the noblest Order of *Russia*, of which he was made, as I have said elsewhere, the first Knight, by the Emperour *Peter the First*, all People agree in the Obscurity and Meanness of his Birth. Some Persons, who pretended to be well informed of it, assured me, that his Parents were Vassals of the Monastery of *Cosmopoli*, on the Western  
Parts

\* I have already explained, in my second Volume, what the Welcome is, on Occasion of my Journey to the Mines of *Sweden*.

Banks of the River *Wolga*, of which I shall speak hereafter. As their Condition was very miserable, they could give him no better Education than their own, and he could neither write nor read any more than themselves; but, being arrived at the Age of 13 or 14, he left them, without saying any Thing to them, to seek for a Service at *Moscow*, and was taken into that of the Pastry-Cook I have before spoken of.

But it is now Time to return to *Riga*, from whence this historical Digression had carried me, where I left the King of *Sweden* victorious, after having laid his Bridge over the River to beat the *Saxons*, to pursue them, to overtake them, to beat them again with the *Muscovites* at *Kokenbusen*, to conquer every where in *Poland*, and at length to be conquered himself at *Pultowa*: Or rather, it is Time for me to leave *Riga*, to continue my Travels.

The Author  
leaves Riga.

I departed from that City on the 14th of *August* O. S. \* with the Company I have already mentioned: At one Wreft Distance from the City we passed by two Wheels, upon which were two Servants, who had been broke alive the Day before for murdering their Master and Mistress; and a Gibbet, whereon a Soldier was hanged by one Foot for having killed himself. The same Day, a little more than eight Wrefts farther, we passed the River *Teghela*, by a wooden Bridge of 139 Foot and a half long. The Land is almost every where very sandy, and covered with Wood for the greatest Part, till within nine or ten Wrefts of *Rop*, which is a little Town, very ill-built and ill-peopled, with one Church in it, very old and decayed: Here we lay; and near this Town is one of the *Swedish* Columns, on which is to be read 10 *M. till Riga*, that is, ten Miles to *Riga*. The Land hereabout is very rich, but there are very few Villages to be met with on the Road, but only poor Hamlets, such as those, which I have mentioned, between *Polanghen* and *Libaw*. The Peasants cannot be poorer than they are; their Houses are as ill-furnished as they are ill-clothed themselves; they have neither Beds nor Chairs, two Boards, fastened to the Wall, serving them for both: They make use of the Bark of Pine Trees, and other fat Wood, to light them in the Night; it is rare to see a Candle, even in some of their Towns. The Distance they are from the Sea reduces their Nourishment to brown Bread, as bad as that which I have already mentioned. *Rop* is situated near a Branch of the River *Treiden*, which falls into the Gulph of *Riga*. We saw but two Churches between *Riga* and *Rop*, except at *Absonst*, a tolerable good Village, about eight Wrefts from the first: These two Churches stand by themselves, are very ruinous, but escaped the Fury of the War, which burnt all the Houses about them. The Parishioners withdrew to a great Distance; many who belong to them and others, are often fifteen or twenty Wrefts off, to avoid the Ravages and Plundering of the Soldiers;

so

\* I follow the Old Stile here, which is observed all over *Russia*.

so that to this Day there are very few Hamlets to be met with on the Road, where there is Conveniency of Lodging. I did not find it much otherwise all over *Livonia* and *Estonia*, nor in *Ingria*, through which I passed in my Return. The greatest Part of these Churches are half in Ruins; and in some there is only the Choir standing, which has been preserved, or repaired, for the Performance of Divine Worship: We passed by such a one about 27 Wrefts from *Rop.*

We went at Night to lye at *Wolmar*, which is about eleven Wrefts beyond this Church. *Olarius* tells us, that, when he passed by this Town, the *Poles* and *Muscovites* had destroyed it to that Degree, that the Inhabitants were obliged to raise little wooden Buildings, on their own Houses, to shelter them from the Inclemencies of the Weather: It is not in a much better Condition at this Time, if you except five or six Houses, which are pretty good. As to the present Inhabitants they seemed in better Plight than most of those in the other Towns; but we saw them in the best Light, for, it being Sunday, they had all their best Cloaths on: I may say the same of the Country People round about, who come thither to Church. The Women had their Hair hanging in Tresses, like those of *Moldavia* and *Wallachia*, whom I mentioned in my second Volume; but with a black Hat, having a Band round it, made of divers coloured Ribbons, and tied up in a Knot in the Form of a Rose, not unlike that of the Ministers of the Church of *England*. They had large Mantles on, fastened about their Necks with silver Clasps, on the top of which was a sort of Capuchin-Hood. It was not very cold yet, but it rained much that Day. This Mantle was adorned with woollen Fringe, and Knots of Ribbons about the Edges; their Stockings did not cover their Legs but just a little above their Shoe-Latchets, so that their Feet were bare within: These Shoes were tied with Ribbons, which made two other Roses like what the *Spaniards* wear: Their Smocks were fastened above their Breast with a silver Buckle: Most of them who came pretty far were on Horse-back, riding astride like Men. The Women of the Town wear a short Cloak like those at *Koningsberg*, and a Cap somewhat in the Form of a Grenadier's: But it is not to be supposed, that they are all so well equipt, it is enough, if we suppose a fourth Part of them are so; and this is less to be ascribed to the Fertility of the Country, than to the Humanity of the Lord of the Manour; who, if I am not mistaken, was Lieutenant-General *Lesley*, a *Scotchman* by Birth; to whom, I was told, the late Emperour, *Peter the First*, gave this Lordship, in Consideration of his Services in conquering the Country; but, be that as it will, such Humanity is very uncommon there, and much more so in *Russia*.

As to *Wolmar*, there are not above 25 Houses in it that deserve that Name; there are Abundance of Ruins with some little wooden

K k

Huts,

Huts, which answer *Olarus's* Description of them, and some considerable Remains of an old Castle on a small Eminence behind the Church, which Church is large enough, but ill-built, and worse repaired. This Town is situated on the East of the River *Treiden*, or *Valdava*, which here loses this last Name, and takes the former: The People of the Country call it *Haba*.

Some are of Opinion, that it was *Woldemar the Second*, King of *Denmark*, that built *Wolmar*: The Nearness between this Name and his in the Sound may very well have given Occasion for such a Conjecture. They pretend also, that it was in this Place that he gained the famous Battle of 1219, against the *Lettians*, the *Esians*\*, the *Lithuanians*, and *Russians*; by which he became Master of almost all the Country. *Pontanus* tells us, that at the first Onset the *Danes* lost their great Standard, on which was represented an Eagle, which very much damped the Courage of his Soldiery; but the King, observing it, ordered them to be told, that there was another Eagle fallen from Heaven, with the Addition of a Cross to it; and causing such a one to be displayed, they believed it; their Courage was re-animated, and they won the Battle. It is from hence perhaps the *Danes* use the Cross on their Pavilions and Ensigns. It is generally agreed, that he built *Revel* a little after, and that the Generals he left in *Livonia*, after his Departure, built several Towns, among which was *Narva*, in the Year 1223; and perhaps *Wolmar*, in Memory of this Battle. The History of the Amours of this Prince says, that having an Intreague with the Countess of *Swerin*, Count *Henry*, her Husband, surprized him with her, and kept him Prisoner for three Years, 'till he paid him a Ransom of 45,000 Marks in Silver, by which he obtained his Liberty: But he lost all the *Danish* Conquests in *Livonia*; for the *Livonian* Knights, taking the Opportunity of his Captivity, drove away his Troops.

Although these Knights were very brave, and had signalized themselves on many Occasions, yet their Enemies were too powerful, and too many for them: Their second and last Grand-Master, *Schenck*, being killed by the Pagans of *Lithuania* in a great Battle in the Year 1238, they resolved to unite with the *Teutonic* Knights, as I have already observed; and this Union was confirmed by the *Roman* Pontiff the same Year, viz. the 35th of their Institution.

There are others, who, founding their Conjectures on the Resemblance of the Name of *Wolmar* with that of *Woladimer*, a *Russian* Prince, make him the Builder of that Town; saying, that the first Name is a very natural Contraction of the last: But I have not been able to learn, that this Prince ever made himself Master of any Part of  
*Livo-*

\* That Part of *Livonia* from the River *Dwin* to the River *Salis* was called *Lettia*; and from this River to *Narva*, and the Western Shore of the Lake *Peipus*, *Esponia*.

*Livonia*; therefore, if I was to decide this Question, I should declare for the former: What we read of, that does greatest Honour to the Memory of Prince *Woladimer*, is, that the Propagation of the Christian Faith in *Muscovy* and *Russia* is owing to him; for, though the *Muscovites* pretend, that *S. Andrew* brought it into, and preached it himself in several Parts of their Country, there is no doubt, even if this is true, but that before the Year 989, when this Prince undertook so pious a Work, *Christianity* was very much debased by Heresies; or almost extinct, by the Falling-off of the greatest Part of those, who had embraced it, to Paganism. It was in that Year, at *Constantinople*, that he agreed on this religious Design, with the Emperour, *Basilicus Porphyrogenetes*, whose Daughter he had married.

After quitting *Wolmar*, we crossed a very fertile Country, where the Harvest was just ended, which was very plentiful, but had suffered much by the Rains. About eighteen Wrefts farther we met with a great Variety of Woods; arable Lands, and Pastures, though but few Villages, for the Reasons I have already mentioned. This Variety continued for near 60 Wrefts; after which the Country was more open and more fruitful in Grain for about ten Wrefts farther, where we left the Lake *Worthsy* on our left Hand. This Lake has 30 Wrefts in Length, and but three in Breadth, where it is broadest. We found from hence to *Dorpt*, which is about 35 Wrefts, the same Variety as before, only not quite so many Woods. *Dorpt* was in as bad a Condition as *Wolmar*; the *Russians*, to make themselves Masters of it the shortest Way, had burnt it to Ashes in the Year 1704, and destroyed even it's Churches with their Cannons and Bombs: They have rebuilt very few of their Houses, but some of those, which they have, are pretty good. The antient Cathedral, if one may judge by what remains of it, was a large and stately Building, both in Height and Circumference; I counted 95 Paces in Length, and above 40 in Breadth within Side. It's two Towers, which are the best preserved of any Parts of it, are at least as high as those of *Notre-Dame* in *Paris*: They are each 30 Paces square within.

This City has been often taken and retaken, and is one of those which has suffered very much by the Rage of War. The *Muscovites* possessed it in the Year 1230, when the Grand-Master of the *Teutonic* Order took it, who first made it a Bishop's See. The *Muscovites* retook it in 1558 from the *Poles*. A Gentleman of the Country, named *Rosen*, undertook to put it into the Hands of *Magnus*, Duke of *Holstein*, by the Help of a good Understanding he had with some in the Town, and a few Troops which he had gathered together; but was discovered, and he and his Party defeated, in 1571. It was given again to the *Poles* by the Treaty of 1582, and the *Swedes* took it from them in 1625. This City is situated on the River *Eimbeck*, which

which comes out of the Lake *Peipus*, at about 22 Wrefts Eastward of it, and, after running through the Suburbs of this City, discharges itself into that of *Worthsy*.

The general Voice of the Country said, it was on the Banks of the Lake *Worthsy*, in a Village called *Runghen*, that the Heroine, who filled, when I passed that Way, the Imperial Throne of *Russia*, drew her first Breath, and not in the Neighbourhood of *Dorpt*, as those, who have wrote the Life of that Empress, in divers Languages, would make us believe. These Writers, to make her Extraction the more illustrious, have some of them given her for her Father a Lieutenant-Colonel of the Family of *Abendel*, others Colonel *Rosen*. But the common Report is, that he was a Vassal of this Colonel, who, dying when she was but four or five Years old, as her Mother did soon after, there was nothing left for her Subsistence; for it is rare that the Vassals of the *Livonian* and *Russian* Nobility leave any Thing to their Children, as may be imagined from what I have already said: And that the Parish-Clerk, who kept a School, took her as his own, 'till Doctor *Gluck*, Minister of *Marienbourg*\*, happening to come to that Village, liked the Girl; and, being willing to ease the Clerk, whose Income was very small, carried her Home with him. Our Writers agree pretty well as to this Circumstance, and the miserable Condition, in which young *Catharine* was left, which is suitable to that of a Vassal, such as her Father was; but not of a Lord of the Manour, as they would make him: For is it natural to suppose, that, if she had been the Daughter of M. *Rosen*, or was acknowledged by him as such, he would have left her nothing in his Will when he died? or that his Heirs and Relations, if he had married her Mother, would have taken no Manner of Care of her? Is it not better, and more agreeable to Truth, to let *Catharine* owe her Greatness to her own Merit, and to the Czar, *Peter the First*? The meaner her Birth is, the more glorious and honourable is her Elevation. But I am now going to follow her to M. *Gluck's*, to admire her Behaviour there, and relate what has been told me by Persons who pretended to be very well informed of it. He treated her almost in the same Manner that he would one of his Daughters, and his Wife, finding her endued with good and virtuous Inclinations, loved her as much. As she seemed naturally to hate Idleness, she was employed in Works suitable to her Age, as Spinning, Sowing, &c. She did every Thing well that she undertook, and many Things in the House of her own Accord, which could only be expected from the very best Servants. She had learnt to read of the Parish-Clerk at *Runghen*. When she left that Place, she spoke only the Language of the Country, which is a *Sclavonian* Dialect; but at M. *Gluck's* she learnt the  
Ger-

\* *Marienbourg* is a Town built by the same Grand-Master of the *Teutonic* Order, who took *Dorpt* in 1230, and is about 91 Wrefts distant from it, towards the South.

*German* Tongue to Perfection, of which she knew only a few Words before; and employed all her vacant Hours in Reading. They added, that a *Livonian* Serjeant in the *Swedish* Service fell passionately in Love with her; and that she liked him so well, that she agreed to have him, if he would ask the Consent of M. *Gluck*, without which she would do nothing. He followed her Advice, and M. *Gluck*, who was not very easy in his Circumstances; (for the Reformation, which allows Priests to marry, has very much impoverished them, especially in *Livonia*, where the Revenues of the Church are less considerable than in any other Country.) I say M. *Gluck*, on this Account, gave his Consent more readily than otherwise he would have done; this Serjeant was of a pretty good Family, had a small Estate of his own, and was in a fair Way to Preferment; being already known to be a Man of Bravery and Sobriety. It is reported as a certain Truth through all *Livonia*, that M. *Gluck* performed the Marriage Ceremony himself. The next Day the *Muscovites*, under the Command of Lieutenant-General *Baur*\*, made themselves Masters of *Mariembourg*, which is of itself but a weak Place, and was then defended only by a few *Swedish* Troops. This General, perceiving *Catharine* among the Prisoners, and observing, notwithstanding the Tears that fell from her Eyes, a certain *Je ne sçai quoi* in her Face, that struck him very much, he asked her several Questions concerning her Condition, to which she made Answers with more good Sense than is usual in Persons of her Rank. He bad her fear nothing, for he would take Care to see, that she was well used: Accordingly he that Instant ordered some of his People to conduct her to the Place where his Baggage was, where were some Women who washed his Linnen, and did other Works agreeable to that Sex; and, finding her afterwards very proper to manage his Household-Affairs, he gave her a sort of Authority and Inspection over these Women, and the rest of his Domesticks, by whom she was very much beloved from her Manner of using them, when she instructed them in their Duty: And the General has said himself, he never was so well served as when she was with him. It happened, that Prince *Menzikoff*, who was his Patron, having seen her one Day, observed something very extraordinary in her Air and Behaviour; and for that Reason asked him, Who she was, and in what Condition she served him? The General told him all that I have related, and at the same Time took Care to do Justice to the Merit of *Catharine*. The Prince said he was very ill served, and had Occasion for such a Person about him; General *Baur* replied, that he was too much obliged to his Highness to have it in his Power to refuse him any Thing he had a mind to. He immediately

L 1

called

\* Lieutenant-General *Baur* was a Man of a very mean Extraction in *Holstein*, only a Corporal, if I am rightly informed, when he first entered into the Service of the Czar; but signalized himself in many great Actions, and was at length promoted to the Post of a General by the Recommendation of Prince *Menzikoff*.



called *Catharine*, and told her, that that was Prince *Menzikoff*, who had Occasion for a Servant like herself; that he was able to be a better Friend to her than himself; and that he had too much Kindness for her to prevent her Receiving such a Piece of Honour and good Fortune: She answered only with a profound Curtesy, which shewed, if not her Consent, that it was not then in her Power to refuse the Offer that was made her: In short, Prince *Menzikoff* took her with him, or she went to him, the same Day. He kept her in his Service till the Year 1703 or 1704, when the Czar saw her one Day as he was at Dinner with him, and spoke to her: She made a yet stronger Impression on that Monarch, who would have her. The rest is known to all the World, therefore I shall say but little of it.

I am sensible it will be asked, What became of her young Husband? But this is very uncertain; the Character, or Post, he had in the *Swedish* Army is not less so, from the different Accounts that have been given of him. One, for Example, printed at *Jena* in 1724, tells us, that he was a Cadet, that, after he was married at *Mariembourg* in 1702, the *Muscovites* attacking that Town, he gave such signal Proofs of his Bravery, that he was made a Lieutenant-Colonel; and some have thought, that, if every one had shewn as much Courage as he, they could never have taken it. If this be true, which I heard nothing of in the Country, he had, besides the Preservation of the Town, a particular Interest which his Companions had not, *viz.* the Liberty of a beloved Wife; and it is well known, what Love is capable of undertaking: But this Account says nothing of what became of him after his Advancement, or whether he made any Attempts to recover this dear Spouse. Some will have it, that he was only a Corporal; others a Dragoon; and add, that the Marriage was never consummated, he being obliged the same Day to rise from Table to go to *Riga* with a Detachment that was ordered to secure that Place: Others will have the Marriage to have been consummated, and send him eight Days after, with other Dragoons, to *reconnoitre* the Enemy; and say, that the next Day after his Departure the Town was invested, and taken the Day following. I could be assured of nothing, from the common Report of the Country, concerning the Fate of this new-married Man, it being related so variously: One while I was told that he was killed in the first Attack of the Town; another, that he was in the Number of those, who, not being able to hold out against the Efforts of the Enemy, retired to *Riga*. Those, from whom I heard the last, added, that he was inconsolable for the Loss of his beloved *Catharine*, whom he despaired of ever seeing again; and that he said to some of his Friends, that he would never go to that Place, where, for a few Days, he had been the happiest of Men, as he was now the most unfortunate; but would seek for Death in *Poland*, where his Master would give him Oppor-

Opportunities enough to meet with it: For the King of *Sweden*, despising, as I have said before, the *Muscovites* after the Battle of *Narva*, and that of *Kokenhusen*, whither he had pursued them, went into *Poland* to find Enemies, who, in his Opinion, were more worthy his great Courage. Count *Dalbert*, before he left *Kokenhusen*, had represented to him all, that his long Experience in War could dictate to him, to divert him from that Design; and when he saw the Progress of the *Muscovites* under good foreign Officers, such as *Lesley*, *Baur*, &c. He could not help saying, that the King, his Master, had left them with a Handful of Men only to exercise the *Muscovites*, and teach them how to beat them; and wished he had lost the Day at *Narva*, which might have kept him among them, and prevented the Loss, that he foresaw, of the greatest Part of *Livonia*.

Perhaps the Husband of *Catharine* had less Hopes of seeing her again, as he had heard, that the *Muscovites* had already sent many Families Prisoners into *Russia*; and sold several young Girls, of the *Swedish* Nation, in their Markets for Slaves to *Turky*, as I have mentioned in the Article of *Bender*. The *Swedes* redeemed some of them, and the Girl, whom I bought of the Janissaries, after the Action of *Warnitz*, was one that the Chancellour, *Mullern*, had redeemed. She knew *Catharine*, and told me several Particulars relating to her, which have been confirmed to me here.

Although the Taking of *Mariembourg* was a Misfortune to the young Husband of *Catharine*, yet it was to her the Epoch, from whence she was to date the greatest Happiness that a Mortal could aspire to. By her Complaisance and engaging Behaviour, she made herself Mistress of the Heart and Affections of the Czar; she accompanied him every where, and shared with him in all the Dangers and Fatigues of the War: It has been observed, that Enjoyment, and even Marriages which often prove the Grave of Love, served only to augment his: She had in some Sort the Government of all his Passions, and even saved the Lives of a great many more Persons than *M. le Fort* was able to do: She inspired him with that Humanity\*, which, according to the Complaints of his Subjects, Nature seemed to have denied him. A Word from her Mouth in Favour of a Wretch, just going to be sacrificed to his Anger, would disarm him; but, if he was fully resolved to satisfy that

\* This Monarch, among his other excellent Qualities, was very judicious, and would willingly receive good Advice. A *Scotch* Officer, who had a great Share in his Favour and Confidence, told me, that one Day making his Remarks to him, with his usual Familiarity, upon his bloody Executions, and some Exactions, which to him seemed oppressive; and telling him, that he had always observed, that those Princes, who used their Subjects with Humanity, by that Means made themselves Masters of their Hearts and Purse: He answered him, that That was true in Respect to his own Nation, to *Germany*, and perhaps every other *European* Nation, but not to his: For, if he had not treated them with the Severity he did, he should, long before that, have lost the *Russian* Empire: or never have made it what it was.

that Passion, he would give Orders for the Execution to be done when she was absent, for Fear she should plead for the Victim. She acquired the Love and Esteem of every one; Soldiers, Sailors, &c. She would often go herself, before or after an Engagement, followed by some of her Servants, with Bottles of strong Liquors, and filled out several Glasses to give them with her own Hands. The Czar's extraordinary Love for her, very far from abating, as I said before, by Marriage, after the Ceremony was performed with the utmost Magnificence in the Year 1713, to eternize the Memory of it, he instituted, in the Year 1715, the Order which I mentioned in the first Chapter: The Motto of which, *Through Love and Fidelity*, seems dictated by Love himself. He could not have chose one more proper; for never was Lover more tender and faithful to his Mistress, nor Husband to his Wife. Some Persons, who have been almost always about this Prince, ever since the Year 1704, have assured me, that he had a perfect Indifference for all other Women; and that he never shewed the least Jealousy but once, and that was a few Weeks before he died; when he looked upon her as the innocent Cause of it: For, having suspected his Chamberlain, who was one of the handsomest Men of the Country, of having some presumptuous Design upon her Honour, because he saw him kiss her Hand one Day, as he gave her his Arm to help her out of her Chaise; and supposing, that his Sister, who was one of her Maids of Honour, favoured this bold Attempt, so contrary to the Respect due to her Majesty, he went out alone one Morning to the Monastery of *S. Alexander Newsky*, and left Orders to seize the Chamberlain and his Sister; to hang the first, and give the Knout to the other under the Gallows, and banish her; to cut off the Chamberlain's Head and expose it on a Post: which was put in Execution in less than half an Hour after his Departure. This was told me at my Arrival at *Petersbourg*, by Persons who saw the Execution; and added, that this Monarch the next Day went with the Empress to take the Air, and ordered the Chaise to pass, both in going and coming, close by the Post: But nevertheless, as a Proof of his having no Suspicion of her Virtue or Fidelity, he caused the Nobility and Clergy, a few Days before his Death, to renew, or confirm, in the Manner I have already mentioned, the Oath which he had obliged them to take; to acknowledge her as Sovereign of all *Russia* after his Death, as well as whoever she should name to succeed her. As she always preserved a great Stock of Goodness and Clemency, as soon as the Czar died, she recalled the Sister of the Chamberlain from her Banishment, and replaced her about her Person. She did not forget her Benefactors in the Midst of her Grandeur, but gave a Pension to *M. Gluck* and his Family, as soon as she had it in her Power so to do; which was continued to them when I was at *Petersbourg*:

Half

Half a Day would have been more than sufficient to have seen *Dorpt*, in the Condition it is, but my Fellow Travellers towards *Novogrod* had some Business there, which kept us two Days: They were useful to me for the Language of the Country, in which I wrote down what I thought needful after they left me. One of them understood *Latin* pretty well; and the little *German*, that I knew, helped me with the other; which, with their Complaisance, was the Reason why I kept with them as long as I could, though I went somewhat out of the direct Road I should have gone, if I had travelled alone: But by that Means I had the Sight of *Pleskow*, which otherwise I should not have seen. There is no Part of the Country more fertile than the Land between *Dorpt* and the Lake *Peipus*, whither we went to embark for *Pleskow*; and nothing more pleasant than the Borders of this Lake: I could almost compare them to those of the Lake of *Geneva*, excepting indeed, what are its richest Ornaments, the great Variety of Towns and Villages, which are not to be met with on the Lake *Peipus*: Neither can I commend the few that are there; for the best of them is not to be compared to the least Hamlet on the Borders of the Lake of *Geneva*; there is hardly a Town worth so much as one good Village is in the other, at least not so well built: I know not whether I could except *Pleskow*, only for its Churches, which are pretty good and large. Before we came to the River *Velika*, on which *Pleskow* is situated, we passed by four very agreeable little Islands.

This City, which was formerly the Capital of a powerful Republick, Pleskow. is one of the dirtiest and worst built that I ever saw: The Streets of it are something like those of *Mittaw*, for Nastiness, and Part of the Pavement: The lowest of them are paved with Beams and Planks of Wood, such as their Houses are built with, only with this Difference, that they are a little better put together in their Buildings than in the Pavement of their Streets: I say the lowest Streets, but might have said the lowest Towns; for *Pleskow* may be called the *Tessaropolis*, or *Quadruple* City, being divided into four walled Parts; two whereof, which are situated on the Southern Bank of the *Velika*, are much lower than those on the Eastern. The Walls are old, but indifferent good; the City is commanded by a Castle seated on a Rock, and has nothing remarkable in it but what I have mentioned, only that it is well peopled, and carries on a pretty good Trade in Corn, Hemp, Linnen, Honey and Wax; and is agreeably situated at about two Wrefts from the Place, where the River comes out of the *Peipus*; which, from the Islands, is called *Pleskow-Lake*: Neither has it any Thing more despicable; the Places about it are very pleasant. I observed there a very large Plain, which answers very well to the Description, given by *Lancelavins*, of that whereon the Czar, *Basilus*, lost the famous Battle in

1500, or 1501, against *Walter of Plettenberg*\*, Grand-Master of the *Teutonic* Order; after which the Czar desired Peace of the Conquerour; who granted him one for 50 Years, which was concluded and sworn to on the Spot. This Plain has more than 15 Wrefts in Compass: *Pleskow* was at that Time a Republick, governed by an elective Duke and Senate, like that of *Venice*. This Republick had particular Laws, according to which neither the Duke nor the Senate could do any Thing of Consequence, relating to Treaties of Alliance, Peace, making War, Levying Taxes, &c. without Consent of the People.

There happening soon after a Diffention between the Senate and People, the *Russian* Clergy implored the Assistance of *Plettenberg* in the Name of the Senate, against the People; but he refused it, out of a Scruple of Honour, thinking it would be a Breach of the Peace which he had concluded with *Muscovy*: Upon which they applied themselves to *Basilus*, who was not so scrupulous, but went, in the Year 1509, with a numerous Army, before *Pleskow*; and, being privately introduced into the City by the Clergy, he made himself Master of it, sending the principal Persons, as well among the Senators and Ecclesiasticks as Citizens, Prisoners to *Moscow*; and united this Dukedom to his own Dominions. Thus *Pleskow*, seeking a Protector, found a Tyrant, and fell from the highest Degree of Liberty to the profoundest Depth of Slavery in one Day and a Night.

I staid two Days at *Pleskow* to have the Company of four Merchants and a *Russian* Priest, who were going to *Novogrod*. My two fellow Travellers, to encourage me to come with them to this City, had often assured me, that I should not fail of Company here to go with me to the others: They recommended me to two of these Merchants, who were their Acquaintance; but in the whole Company there was but one that could speak *German*; the others understood only the *Sclavonian*. I knew before, that the *Russian* Priests, although they professed the *Greek* Religion, knew nothing of the *Greek* Tongue, and therefore, in my Journey, I was forced to have Recourse to what I had wrote down in the *Sclavonian* Language, and the little *German* I was Master of. We arrived at *Novogrod* in less than three Days, although it is near 200 Wrefts from *Pleskow*, and the Roads were very bad; especially when we came within 20 Wrefts of the Lake *Ilmen*. We had crossed at least 30 Wrefts of Wood; our Company was divided in two light Waggon, drawn by three Horses each, which were strong, though but small. The Land from *Pleskow* to *Novogrod* is pretty near the same

\* *Lancelavius* says, that *Basilus* had an Army of above 100,000 *Muscovites* with 30,000 *Tartars*; that the Plain, which he makes 60 Stades in Circumference, was covered with dead Bodies; that 80,000 of his Men, at least were killed, and but one of *Plettenberg's*, who had but 12,000, though they were much wounded by the Arrows of the *Muscovites* and *Tartars*: But he allows, that the Soldiers of the latter were armed with Cuirasses, which gave them a great Advantage over the Enemy, besides having Artillery which the others were not used to. Other Accounts of this Action make *Basilus's* Loss to be 100,000 Men, and *Plettenberg's* one Battalion.

same of that between *Wolmar* and *Dorpt*. There are many Fields of Corn, Hemp, Flax, and good Pastures; there are more and better Villages than about *Pleskow*.

There is nothing more deceitful than the Prospect of *Novogrod* at five or six Wrefts Distance: Its Extent, the Number and Height of its Towers and Steeples, seem to promise one of the finest Cities in *Europe*; but, coming nearer, the Walls and Houses are found to be of Wood, and those Houses very ill-built, that is, of Beams and Planks coarsely put together, and laid a-cross at the Corners: The Streets are no better paved, nor otherwise, than those of the two lower Quarters of *Pleskow*. There are only the Churches, and a very few of the Houses, that are built with Stone or Brick, besides an old Castle well stored with Artillery, and, in the Form of it, pretty like that of *Pleskow*, but much larger: It is on the other Side the River *Wolgha*, is surrounded by pretty good Walls, and has a Communication with the City, by a wooden Bridge 408 Paces long. The finest Churches in this City are those of *S. Sophia*, which is the Cathedral, *S. Andrew*, *S. Michael*, *S. Nicholas*, and *S. Demetrius*.

I have already observed, in my Account of *Turkey*, that the *Greek* Religion does not allow of any graven Images, that it may not break the Commandment against it in *Exodus*: There are very few Pictures in the Churches I have named, or any of the rest, worth seeing: There are about 80 or 85 Churches in *Novogrod*, reckoning those of the Monasteries. Some Writers tell us, that there were 70 Monasteries in this City; but that must have been, when it was in its largest Extent: For the Ruins of some Walls, Towers and Steeples, shew not only, that its Walls were formerly built with Stone, but that it was much larger than at present. This was perhaps before the Tyrant, *John Basilowitz*, made himself Master of it, as he did in the Year 1477, and placed a Governour over it. This Tyrant, or his Successour, came a long Time after in Person, and, on the bare Suspicion of a Revolt, plundered the City, and exercised the greatest Cruelties upon her Inhabitants; near 3000 of whom he slew, without reckoning a great Number of Persons trampled to Death by his Horses, without Distinction of Age or Sex. After he had pillaged their Monasteries, he caused the Abbots and Monks to be drowned, sparing only the Archbishop, and some few of the Clergy, whom he carried to *Moscow*; with the rest of the Inhabitants, who had escaped the Rage of the Soldiers; and ordered *Muscovites* to be sent thither in their Stead. He was not contented to put into one of his 300 Waggon, that were loaded with the most precious Spoils of the City, all that was valuable in his Palace; but commanded the Archbishop himself to ride on a white Horse, with a Fiddle about his Neck and a Flagelet in his Hand; and led him in that Manner to *Moscow*, in the middle of some other Ecclesiasticks very ill-mounted;

mounted; the greatest Part of them without Saddles, Boots, or Spurs. Indeed he gave them there some Places in the Church, but much inferior to what they had before; and this was the only Act of Humanity that he shewed on this Occasion.

I say, there might have been 70 Monasteries within the Walls of *Novogrod* before that Time, and even since that City was united to the *Russian* Empire; but it is well known, how much *Peter the First* reduced their Number as well as their Revenues, and those of the Clergy in general. That great Prince, whose extraordinary Mixture of Qualities, whose vast and universal Genius, as well as his great Actions, will hardly gain Credit, when they shall be mentioned to Posterity, seems to have taken from the Nations he visited, especially *England* and *Holland*, the Foundation and Model of the Reformation he made in the *Russian* State; which those, who have wrote his History, have called a new Creation. After the famous Battle of *Pultowa*, which was followed by the Conquest of *Livonia* and *Ingria*, besides an infinite Number of other considerable Advantages over the *Swedes*; after this Battle, I say, or at least the same Year, he seized upon the Estates, which belonged to the Metropolitans, and Bishops, and reunited them to his own Domains, with those of the Patriarchat, after he had suppressed that Dignity, and those of the Monasteries, leaving to the Metropolitans, Bishops and Monks, what he thought sufficient for them to live upon soberly. The Monks, after his Death, solicited *Catharine* for the Restoration of them; a good Part of which she consented to, for Fear of a Sedition.

The *Muscovite* Religion had no less Need of a Reformation than the State; it hardly deserved the Name of the *Christian* Religion: For the *Russians*, like the *Greeks* of the *Levant*, made it consist of Lents, Fast-Days, and a Number of ridiculous Miracles, and superstitious Devotions, invented by the Avarice of the Priests and Monks. These severe and frequent Fastings that Prince thought very prejudicial to the Body politic, as being incompatible with the Fatigues of War: And, to remedy such Abuses, he abolished the Patriarchat, a spiritual Authority, which he looked upon as an Obstacle to the Project he had of establishing, in the Room of it, an Ecclesiastical Government under the Name of a Synod. For this Purpose he sent for the Bishops and Divines from *Novogrod*, *Kioow*, and other Places, who had studied in foreign Countries, and, in a Word, all who he thought were best able to advise him, how to reform the Abuses crept into Religion. He laid before them the Ignorance of the Clergy in general, the Conduct and bad Oeconomy of the Monks, &c. He joined the Senate to this spiritual Assembly, in which he presided himself. This Synod was held, for the first Time, in the Palace of *Petersbourg*, in the Year 1721; a second Time at *Moscow*, in 1722; and a third in the new Monast.

nastery of *S. Alexander Newsky*, in the Neighbourhood of *Petersbourg*: He ordered the Establishment, and Convocation of it to be published in the following Manner.

*By the Grace, Mercy and Love of God towards Mankind, and by the Command of the most wise, most serene, and most powerful Peter the Great, Emperour and Sovereign of all the Russia's, &c. is settled, concluded and established, in the holy Orthodox Church of Russia, a spiritual Synod for the Regulation of spiritual Affairs, with the Advice and Consent of the Russian Clergy, and of the Senate, in the Metropolitan City of Petersbourg, &c.*

When any Regulation was published, there was no other Change made in it, but that of his or her Imperial Majesty.

All the Members of this Synod obliged themselves by several most solemn Oaths, swearing by Almighty God on the Holy Evangelists, to declare their most sincere Sentiments as dictated by their own Hearts, according to the best of their Knowledge and Understanding in the Scripture, to conform to the Regulations which should be there made. They swore in the same most solemn Manner, that they would acknowledge themselves to be, as they were obliged, both by Duty and Conscience, the faithful Subjects and Servants of the Emperour, *Peter the First*, who was their natural, true and lawful Sovereign; and after him of whomsoever his Majesty, by his absolute and indisputable Authority, should declare his Successour in his Will; (they swore the same to *Catherine Petrowna Alexowina*\*, ) and that they would venture their Lives and Fortunes in his Service, and would discover any evil Design against his Person or Government, as soon as any such should come to their Knowledge.

The Person, who took this Oath, kissed the Words, which were written, and a Cross that was offered to him; and then subscribed them with his Name.

The Emperour, *Peter the First*, having thus caused himself to be acknowledged sovereign Pontiff, or Chief of the *Russian Church*, and of Consequence first President of the Synod, he opened it, after he had published a Declaration; the Preamble of which, or pretty near the Substance of it, is as follows.

*We Peter the First, by the Divine Grace, Emperour of all Russia, &c. among the many Cares, which the Empire, committed to us by the Almighty, requires for the good Government of our Kingdoms and Conquests, we have cast our Eyes on the spiritual State thereof; and, finding many Disorders and Irregularities, we should think ourselves wanting in our Duty, and guilty of Ingratitude; if, after we have so happily*  
N n
succeeded

\* When the Czar had resolved to marry her, he caused *Petrowna Alexowina* to be added to her Name.



*succeeded, by his holy and gracious Assistance, in regulating our military and civil, we should neglect the spiritual State, &c.*

Having declared in general Terms the Motives that induced him to establish the Synod, he proceeds to enumerate many Abuses and Superstitions, and to shew the Necessity of having them enquired into and remedied; and to remove the Cause by degrading, and lopping off from the Service of the Church, such Priests and Monks as have introduced or encouraged them, through Interest or Ignorance, forbidding any Person to be admitted to the Priesthood, for the Time to come, who had not Qualities requisite for it; who was not well read in the Holy Scriptures, the Fathers, Canons, and Ecclesiastical History; whose Life was not exemplary, and who was not as capable as desirous to undeceive the People. To this End he ordered the Establishment of Colleges and Seminaries in the capital Cities of *Russia*, as there are in other Christian Countries.

Among the Abuses and Superstitions already come to his Knowledge are the following.

The Prohibition, or Scruple of Working on a *Friday*, under Pretence that the *Panitza*\* is angry, and will punish those with Misfortunes, who do not observe this Feast in Honour of her; and the like.

The Tradition of the Monastery of *Pekersky* in *Kiow*, according to which a Man, that is therein buried, shall be saved, although he dies without repenting of his Sins.

The shameful and ridiculous Practice of sending Prayers in Caps, by Messengers, to People who live at a Distance.

That of some Bishops and Abbots, (which he calls Anti-Apostolical Vanity,) to suffer the People, and even their subaltern Brethren to prostrate themselves before them with their Faces to the Ground.

The ridiculous and fabulous Notion of double Halleluja's, of *Ephrosim* from *Pleskow*, wherein, he is informed, there is concealed the double Heresy of *Nestorius* and *Sabellicus*.

The Custom of People to visit, on certain Days of the Year, the Graves of their deceased Relations, to cry and howl there for some Hours, and to leave at parting Flowers, or Branches of Trees, with Bread, Meat, Brandy, Mead, Beer and other Liquors; believing, that the Dead have occasion for these Presents, for the Comfort which they wish them, when they bid them Farewel with loud Voices and great Outcries,

\* I was assured as a Truth, that in the District of *Starodub* they lead a Woman with dishevelled Hair, every *Friday*, in an ecclesiastical Procession, under the Name of *Panitza*; and that the People bow down before her at Church, and make her Presents, in Hopes of great Benefits, which, the Priests flatter them, they shall receive from her. This Superstition may owe its Original perhaps to *Friga*, one of the Persons of the Northern *Trium-Deas*, which I have spoke of in the Article of *Sweden* in my second Volume, from whom *Friday* took its Name, as *Wednesday* and *Thursday* from two others, viz. *Woden* and *Thour*; which Names are preserved to this Day by the *Swedes*, the *Danes*, the *Germans*, the *English*, &c.

Outcries, but are taken home by the Priests as soon as they are gone.

*N. B.* The *Greek* Priests of the *East* act with more Civility, or Generosity, with their People on these Occasions, as I have observed in my Account of *Turky*; for, after the Howling and Praying is over, they sit down with them near the Graves, and eat together what they have brought, and drink, as it were, to the good Repose of the Deceased.

That of some Monks to erect Oratories in the High-Ways in the Neighbourhood of several Monasteries with Images in them, before which Passengers bow down, while the begging Brothers present a Box to them for their Pious Contributions. This Custom was abolished by *Peter the First*, but it was soon renewed in several Parts of *Russia*, where the Bishops and other Persons, invested with the Authority of the *Synod*, were less strict and severe.

The profane and mercenary Practice of some Priests to carry People, in many Parts of *Russia*, into Forests, to pray there under Oak-Trees, like the antient *Druids*; and to bless them by shaking the Branches over them; from whence, they make them believe\*, that some Benefits will fall on them.

He relates many other Examples of superstitious Abuses, and of false and ridiculous Miracles invented by the Avarice of the first Monks, to delude the People, and be able, through their Credulity, to build sumptuous Monasteries, and enrich themselves, in which Delusions and Superstitions their Successors have but too well succeeded, to find from thence Supplies for their Avarice, Idleness, and Debaucheries.

On the Subject of false Miracles he mentions that of *S. Anthony* of *Novogrod*, of whom the Tradition of the *Muscovites* says, that he came from *Rome* to *Novogrod*, all the Way by Water on a Mill-Stone, going down the *Tyber* to *Civita-Vechia*; then crossing different Seas to the Mouth of the River *Neva*, going up that, and through the Lake *Ladoga*, and afterwards up the *Wolkga* to this City; that besides this supernatural Voyage, which was an extraordinary Proof of his Faith, he did a Number of other Miracles; the first was as soon as he arrived at his Landing, and near the Place where stands the Monastery of his Name, he ordered some Fishermen, he found there, to fling in their Nets, which they did, and, in less than two Minutes, they drew up, besides a large Quantity of Fish, a Trunk and Box, which, according to the Tradition, contained several Church-Ornaments, sacred Utensils, and priestly Vestments, for celebrating the Liturgy, and other Cloaths for his own particular Use; I say the Liturgy, for so the Tradition is, and the *Russians* believe, as well as the *Eastern Greeks*, that Divine Service was first celebrated at *Rome* in the same Manner, and with the same Ceremonies

\* This superstitious Custom is not much unlike that which I mentioned in my Account of *Circassia*.

Ceremonies as they themselves use at this Time. It is added, that the Saint ended his Days in a little Cell, which he himself built in one Day, in the same Place where his Chappel now stands; that he was buried in it; and that his Body remains uncorrupted, \* and as fresh and entire as at the Instant of his Death: This at least the Monks have made the People believe, without shewing to any body only a Mill-Stone, set up against the Wall of the Chappel; which they would have thought the same on which the Saint came from *Rome* to *Novogrod*; and to which an infinite Number of People paid their Devotions, and made Offerings till the first Year of the Pontificate of the Emperour, *Peter the First*; or rather till that Prince had made *Theodosius*, the last Abbot of *S. Alexander Newsky*, Archbishop of *Novogrod*, a Man of Learning, and a great Enemy to Superstition, who discovered, and preached publicly against, the pretended Incorruption, against the Veneration of the People for the Mill-Stone, and other superstitious Devotions. This worthy Prelate was deposed and banished by the Empress, in the Year 1725. I shall give an Account hereafter upon what Pretence, and by whose Influence. The present Archbishop, if he is not dead; or deposed since I left the Country, is *Theophanes Procowich*, a Man of some Learning, but great Bigotry; who is said to have preserved much of his Monastick Education, and to be much more favourable to the Monks than his Predecessour was: I say Monastick Education; for as the Prelates are not allowed to marry by the *Greek Church*, they are commonly taken out of the Monasteries. Some of the superstitious Customs, abolished by order of *Peter the First*, soon revived after his Death, and according to all Appearance the greatest Part of them are likely to do so. The People are too much accustomed to them, and the Clergy find too great Profit in them to part with them willingly: The latter had began already, when I was in *Petersbourg*, to solicit the Re-establishment of the *Patriarchat*, and were not without Hopes of obtaining it, by the Influence of Prince *Menzikoff*, who was a great Friend to the Monks, and had as good as persuaded the Empress *Catharine* to ease herself of that spiritual Care.

It was by meer Accident that this Dignity was introduced into the *Russian Church*; which, till the Year 1588, acknowledged the Patriarch of *Constantinople* for hers; and this was by the Means of one *Herouimo*, who was degraded, and deposed by the Clergy from that antient Patriarchal See, which he had very unworthily filled for some Years. One of those *Greek Prelates*, and wandering Beggars, who pretend to have been unjustly persecuted by the *Turks*, such as have been running through all the Kingdoms and Provinces in the Christian Parts of *Europe*, but one of the cunningest and boldest that lying *Greece* ever produced.

\* The Body remaining uncorrupted is looked upon, by the *Eastern Greeks*, as a Sign, that the Person died excommunicated, as I have remarked in my Account of *Turky*.

produced. This *Hieronimo*, to revenge himself of the Clergy of *Constantinople*, and fill his Purse, proposed to the Czar, *Theodore Ivanowitz*, among other Projects (one of which was an Alliance of *Muscovy* with *Spain* and the Pope, against the *Turks*) to make *Moscow* the Patriarchal See of all the *Greek* Church, and to resign his Dignity to whomever his Majesty should be pleased to name, or caused to be elected. He brought that Prince the more easily into this Design, since by it he would save a great deal of Money, which was sent every Year to *Constantinople*; upon which he assembled his Council, and the principal Members of the *Russian* Church, who all applauded the Proposal; and the 15th of *January*, 1588, was appointed for the Ceremony: Conformable to which *Hieronimo* went, in great Pomp with the *Russian* Clergy, to the Metropolitan Church of *Prechebsta*, [*our Lady*] where he made an Oration; after which he delivered his Patriarchal Staff and Tiara into the Hands of the Metropolitan, *Jacob*, who was immediately installed with great Solemnity. He afterwards drew up an Instrument of Resignation, which he gave him in Writing; and received, before he left *Moscow*, a prodigious Number of valuable Presents, in Gold, Silver and rich Furs, from the Czar, the Nobility, the new Patriarch, and the Clergy; being splendidly entertained all the while he remained there: But thinking it not convenient to stay long after his being so well rewarded for the Resignation, he had made, of a Dignity, which was neither in his Power nor Possession, he went to *Rome* with his Booty, very probably to endeavour to chouse the Pope by some other Piece of his Industry.

*Theodore Ivanowitz* was a weak, credulous and vain Prince, who inherited the Avarice of his Father, *John Basilewitz*, though not his Cruelty: For, as no Prince ever invented and put in Practice more Extortions; so no one ever exercised greater Cruelties, on slighter Pretences, than that Tyrant on his Subjects. It oftentimes happened, that, when he walked out, or made a Progress through his Provinces, if he met any one, whose Mien displeased him, he would order his Head to be struck off, or do it himself.

This Family was the first, whose Princes took the Title of Czars, being Descendants, according to the Tradition of the Country, from the *Roman Cæsars*: History draws the Original of it from the Royal Family of *Hungary*, named *Beola*. *Theodore's* Father was the first, who made himself, if I may so call him, the sole Merchant, and universal Caback, or Tavern-Keeper, all over the *Russian* Dominions, which makes, to this Day, one of the principal Revenues of the Crown. I was told at *Novogorod*, that there were no less than 4000 Imperial Taverns in that City. There are still as many at *Petersbourg*. He was the first *Russian* Monarch, who reduced the Revenues of the Clergy and the Monasteries, and annexed their best Lands to the Crown; which Extortions on the

Clergy, the Nobility, and the People, were made to no End but to satisfy his own Avarice, and to impoverish his Subjects.

*Peter the First*, on the contrary, has polished his Subjects, in all his Dominions; he caused Learning to succeed Ignorance; and introduced into them the most useful Arts and Sciences, the Names of many of which were hardly known in *Russia* before his Reign. He disciplined his Armies, built Fleets, Cities, Castles, Fortresses, Academies: He converted many Monasteries into Colledges and Seminaries; he removed, and lopped off, from them a great Number of young Monks, who were ignorant and useless to the Publick, and in their Room placed a smaller Number of others, who were learned, and had studied, by his Order or their own Inclinations, in foreign Universities, and were thereby able to instruct the Youth of *Russia*, as the *Jesuits* do those of *France*. Thus these Retreats of Idleness, these Nurseries of Ignorance and Superstition, as he called them, by his Orders became Schools of Literature and Christian Theology. These Monasteries are vast Edifices, solidly built; the most antient are surrounded with embattled Walls, and Turrets, something like those old Castles that are still seen in *Germany*, *England*, &c. Among the Church-Pictures are always to be found those of the favourite Saints of the *Greeks*, as *S. George*, *S. Demetrius*, *S. Nicholas*. The oldest Monastery of *Novogrod* is that which is called *Perunsky*; it is dedicated to *S. George Palicafrite*, the same Saint that I mentioned in the first Chapter on the Subject of the Order of the *Garter*. The general Opinion of the Country is, that it was built on the Ruins of the Temple of *Perun*, the God of Fire; which false Deity was particularly honoured in this City before *Christianity*, under the Figure of a Man with a Thunderbolt in his Hand: His Priests were obliged, on Pain of Death, to keep a perpetual Fire of Oak-Wood before his Altar.

After staying three Days at *Novogrod*, I embarked for *Petersbourg*, in Company with some *Russian* Merchants, to whom I had been recommended by those I came with from *Pleskow*; this was on board one of those Vessels, which they call *Carbasses*; she was laden with Honey, Wax, and *Russia* Leather; of which the best Sort is prepared in *Novogrod*.

The Borders of the *Wolkga* are very agreeable; a great Variety of Gardens, and Fields of Corn, Hemp, Flax, &c. make the Prospect on each Side, as far as one can see. We passed by Old *Ladoga* about 100 Wrefts below *Novogrod*; it is situated on the Western Bank of the River, and was, they told me, a considerable Town, for the Number of its Inhabitants and its Fortifications, before *Peter the First* built *New Ladoga*. There remains at this Time but a small Number of the old Houses, the greatest Part of which are inhabited by Fishermen and Peasants: Its antient Inhabitants were scarce any better inclined to quit

### CHAP. III. *A Journey from Riga to the Lake Ladoga.*

quit it for the new Town, than the *Russians* in general were to cut off their long Beards, and change the Fashion of their Cloaths, which was ordered to be done throughout all that Prince's Dominions, at first by written Orders sent to the Magistrates : But that not answering entirely, he went in Person with a Number of Troops, and forced them to it.

Their Houses being built only of Wood, like those I have mentioned before, he obliged all, who had any that were tolerably good, to pull them down, and send the Timber on Floats to the new Town : He obliged others to build new ones there, in the Manner he prescribed to them ; which was in the modern Fashion, and more or less magnificent according to their Circumstances. By these Means the old Town became a Village ; and the new one, that before was only a poor Village, is now become a Town.

On the other Bank is situated the Monastery of *Cosmopoli*, which, as also are the others about the Lakes *Ladoga* and *Onega*, is large and strongly built, but much older than any of them.

About 40 Wrefts below this, we came to the new City of *Ladoga*. This City is situated on the East of the Mouth of the River *Wolkga*. It is very large, populous, and well built, except a few Houses, which remain of the old City, and are rebuilt in the same Manner. The first and chief Design of *Peter the First*, in building so large a City here, where there had been formerly but an inconsiderable Village, was to make it a kind of Castle or Magazine of Provisions, and other Necessaries for the Use and Convenience of a prodigious Multitude of Men, which he drew from several Parts of his Empire, to cut the Canal represented in Plate II. If so many Princes, as well antient as modern, have received the Compliment of *the Great*, &c. for bold and difficult Undertakings, and extraordinary Actions, which they only begun, or executed but in Part, and which were often a whole Age in finishing ; what Character and Epithets are due to *Peter the First*, who alone begun and finished so many different Works besides those which I have already mentioned, and all this during a Part of a very short Reign ? What other King but he would have undertaken, or could have built, in so short a Time, so large a City as *Petersbourg*, in a desert Part of the Country, all covered with the wildest Trees, barren, and marshy, and inaccessible even to the Beasts ? This was an Undertaking which obliged him to cut a great Number of Canals, as in *Holland*, in order to drain and consolidate the marshy Land ; the Execution of which cost him the Lives of above 80000 Men. To carry on such a Work it was necessary that he should be Master of a Country as extensive and populous as his, with an absolute Authority as his was, that he might not only oblige such a prodigious Number of his Subjects to quit the most fruitful and distant of his Provinces, in order to work at his Canals, but even many of his richer Subjects, to leave their native Habitations  
about

about *Moscow*, and even beyond it, situated in an agreeable Climate, and to build Houses here, and settle in a Climate so very unhealthy and disagreeable as this. How many Rivers has he joined together, and made navigable for the Convenience of Trade, by cutting Passages through Hills and Necks of Land? How many Canals has he cut, and how many Sluices has he made from the *Volga* to the River *Wolkga*, and from *Archangel* to the Lake *Onega*, in Order to open a Communication between the *Caspian*, the *White* and the *Baltick* Seas? What a Variety of Fatigues he underwent in visiting, in Person with his foreign Engineers and Mathematicians, those Mountains and Necks of Land, which he marked for cutting his Canals through? He took along with him amongst others M. *Coulon*, a *French* Engineer, and M. *Lane*, a *Scots* Gentleman of great Experience in Navigation, for the Canal by the Lake *Ladoga*. The latter assured me, that he founded that Lake at several Times, in the Presence of this Prince, during the Calms and moderate Winds. He discovered the Causes, and acquainted him with the Reasons, besides those of Storms which happened, why above an Hundred Ships were lost every Year one with another in crossing that Lake. He found that the Waters rose and fell at such different Times, and in so irregular a Manner, that it was almost impossible for Sailors to know the proper Periods when they were deep enough, and when too low. This Consideration induced him to make this Canal, in order to open a Communication between the River *Wolkga* and the *Neva*. M. *Coulon* drew the Plan of it from a little above the Fall of the former into the Lake, to that Part where the latter flows from it. There were employed in this Work 12000 Men about the latter End of the Year 1718. But this Number must have been exceedingly augmented afterwards; for I have been assured, that there perished in it above 60000 Men, from that Time to the latter End of 1724. It wanted about 30 Wrefts of being finished, when I passed by it in 1726: However, there was opened in the mean Time a Communication between this Canal and the Lake; so that the Vessels had no occasion to pass through the latter as far as that Place, that is, within 30 Wrefts of the *Neva*, as they were obliged to do before; by which Means they avoided the most dangerous Part of it. There were but a few Men then at Work below this Communication. They had raised a kind of Bank or Dyke, to prevent the Waters of the *Wolkga*, which they had drawn into this Canal, from overflowing, and to turn them into the Lake, till the whole Canal should be finished according to the Line, which M. *Coulon* had drawn for it. I am of Opinion, that it would have been most prudent not to have dug any further; for, besides the Consideration that they might already avoid the most dangerous passage of the Lake for above 70 Wrefts, if the Waters of the *Wolkga* were carried into the Channel of the *Neva*, it is evident, that, according to the Plan of M. *Coulon*,

*Petersbourg,*



*Petersbourg*, which has already suffered so much by the Inundations of the latter River alone, must some time or other inevitably be drowned from this prodigious Accession of Water from the other. I was shewn when I was in that City, that after a Storm the Waters rose eight Feet, and overflowed in several Places. With respect to the small Number of Men, who were employed at the Canal, I was told this was occasioned by Want of Money, or of that absolute Authority, which *Peter the First* maintained; the Empress *Catherine*, not judging it proper to make use of the same violent Methods to enable her to carry it on. It is easy to imagine the Reasons of her Conduct. This Canal is about 8 Fathom deep, and 70 broad, (seven Feet to the Fathom) and above 100 Wrefts in Length. 'Tis evident that the Views of *Peter the First*, who was a Prince of a very enterprising Genius, were, by these prodigious Works, to draw to *Petersbourg*, which he made the Capital of his Empire, all the Trade of the *Caspian* and the *White Seas*. His Designs in all Respects were boundless. The maritime and trading Powers, from whom he learnt Navigation, Building of Ships, and so many other Arts unknown to *Russia* before his Reign; and of whom he borrowed so many skilful Workmen of all kinds, perceived too late, that they had raised themselves a very potent and dangerous Rival. He was about discovering a North-East Passage to *America*, when Death put a Stop to the Course of his vast Undertakings. He had already sent two Ships from *Archangel* to make this Discovery; one of which was never heard of afterwards, and the other was hindered by the Ice. But these Difficulties did not deter him; he ordered two other Ships to be built for the same Design, according to the Directions of Captain *Barring*, a *British* Subject; who set sail in the Year 1724 with a 100 Men for a second Attempt. The Account he had from them in 1726 was, that they had seen Land; and they gave him some Expectations of Success. I have heard nothing of it since that Time. He likewise undertook to shorten the long Journey of the *Russian* Caravans to *China*, and there is no doubt but, if he had lived a Year or two longer, he had succeeded in it.

Passing down this new Canal to the Communication above mentioned, we entered into the Lake *Ladoga*, and in less than five Hours arrived at *Notebourg*\*, which is called *Shutelbourg* since 1702, when the *Russians* took it from the *Swedes*. This Lake is very extensive; it is said to be above 120 Wrefts in Breadth, and 220 long. It produces great Quantities of Fish, especially Sturgeons and Pikes.

Lake Ladoga.

P p

There

\* The Principality of *Novogrod* extended formerly as far as *Notebourg*, which was the last Town on that Side: It was built above 400 Years ago by the Princess *Morfa*, who was Sovereign of it. She called it *Oreska*. It fell with *Novogrod* under the Power of the *Russians*. *Gustavus Adolphus*, having taken it from them, is supposed to have changed its Name to that of *Notebourg*. The Czar *Peter the First*, having retaken it in 1702, gave it the Name of *Shutelbourg*, from *Shytel*, which in German signifies a Key; and in effect it has been the Key which opened a Passage to his Conquests over *Sweden*.

There are several Islands in it, which appear very agreeable : But what I saw of the Borders of it, is far from being so ; for it is a barren marshy Soil, covered almost with Woods, which, they say, are infested with Wolves and Bears. *Stutembourg* is situated a little below the Place, where the *Neva* passes out of the Lake. It has a strong Fortress with high and thick Walls, flanked with six Bastions, well stored with Artillery ; it stands almost in the middle of the River, so that its Cannon commands the Passage out of the Lake, and both Sides of the River. Baron *Cronyort*, who commanded there when the *Russians* attacked it, burnt the old Fort with Part of the City, when he saw there was no Possibility of defending and keeping it any longer. This Account I had from his Son Baron *Cronyort*, whom I knew at *Bender*. It was afterwards repaired to Advantage, and put in the Condition wherein I saw it from our Vessel ; for we did not stop there. . . About fifteen Wrefts down the River, on the South Side of it, stands the magnificent Monastery of *S. Alexander Newsky*, of which I shall speak hereafter. Near this Monastery runs a pretty deep Rivulet, which falls into the *Neva*. If one has a mind to go from hence by Land to *Petersbourg*, there is a very fine, large, well-paved Road in the *Roman Manner*\*, not above three or four Wrefts long ; whereas the Windings of the River *Neva* make it above six by Water. About two Wrefts lower on the other Side we passed by the *Nie-Scantz*, an antient Fort, which was taken soon after *Notebourg*, and demolished. Almost over-against it, about a Quarter of a Wrest N. W. lie the Mill-Intrenchments, called so from the great Number of Mills for grinding Corn, sawing Planks, and cutting Straw, situated on the little Rivers, *Theoma* and *Retzka*. The former of these Rivers runs from *Kexholm Carelie* to the N. E. and the latter from *Finland Carelie* to the N. W. and they unite in one Channel a little lower, and fall into the *Neva* under the Name of the former. Here this River brought us by Windings in the Form of a *Greek Omega* about 14 Wrefts long to great Imperial Brew-houses, situated on the same Side a little below. There the River, dividing itself into several Branches, forms those Islands, upon which *Petersbourg* is for the most part built. There were but about four or five Fishermen's Huts, when *Peter the First* went thither to found the River, and to view the Islands, in order to lay the Foundations of his new City, in the Beginning of the Year 1703. He built the first House, if we may call a little low Hall so, made only of Planks and Joists, to secure himself from the Weather, and to rest in. But in Memory of this Event it has been preserved since by inclosing it with a wooden Gallery raised upon a Wall three or four Feet high. I cannot say the same of the Banks of the *Neva*, which I did of those of the *Wolkga*.  
Nature

\* The Czar, *Peter the First*, had a Design to make and pave such a Road, where it was necessary, from *Petersbourg* to *Moscow* ; but it never was, and probably never will be executed.

Nature has been unfavourable to the former, as she has been liberal to the latter. They are very marshy, covered for the most part with Woods and wild Trees, especially Birch-Trees; so that, wherever there is any Spot of Ground that can be called fertile, or agreeable, it is entirely owing to Art. It produces nothing for the Subsistence of Man, and scarce any Thing even for the domestick Animals. For 100 Wrefts from *Petersbourg*, not only upon the Banks of the *Neva* from *Slutelbourg*, and higher up along the Canal of *Ladoga*, but even down the River below *Cronstat*, there are no Stones to be found proper for building or paving; so that they are obliged to fetch them from a prodigious Distance, and at a great Expence. And even the Materials, of which their Bricks are made, are so bad, that the Houses, which are built of them, want to be repaired every three Years. Some ascribe this to their building in Winter. The Timber, which this Country produces in such Plenty, is by no Means fit for building Ships with; for which Reason they bring their Timber from the Parts about *Novogrod*, and the Kingdom of *Casan*, especially Oak. I left my Karbasse in the Harbour, which is called *Frigat-Port*, just by the Fortrefs, which is built upon the smallest of those Islands; and I landed on the Island of *Petersbourg*, which is generally called *Trinity-Island*, since there has been a Church built there of that Name. This Fortrefs is an oblong Hexagon and very irregular; the Reason of which is the Form and the Smallness of the Island, which it covers entirely: But it is well situated almost in the Center of the City. The Walls are supposed to be 30 Feet high to the Parapet, and very thick and strong, having been built of the Materials of *Nie-Scantz*. It is well fortified with large Brass-Artillery in the middle of its Building, one of the most considerable of which is the Dispensatory. There is a magnificent Church, dedicated to *S. Peter*, which was not then quite finished for Want of Money; and this was the Case of divers other Works begun before the Death of *Peter the First*, especially of the Men of War and Galleys, which were laid by afterwards, because the Empress *Catharine* durst not attempt to raise Supplies by the same violent Methods, which he used, for the Reasons which I have suggested. This Church was built upon the Designs, and by the Direction of that excellent Architect, Signor *Tressini*. The whole is worthy of his exquisite Genius. The Body of the Building is of Brick, except the Pillars, the Corners, and Shoulderings. All the Ornaments of Architecture and Sculpture appear throughout the whole, disposed with the greatest Judgment and Elegance. The Steple is all of Stone, except the Spire, which is of Timber, covered with Copper, gilt towards the top of it. It is raised upon four Rows of Pillars, one above another; two of the *Ionian*, and two of the *Corinthian* Order. There is a very good Chime in it; the Portico of the Church is noble; the Pillars are of hard free Stone, very high, and of the

the *Tustan* Order. The Catafalco of the late Emperour is still to be seen there; it is covered with Cloth of Gold, raised upon a Floor of five Degrees, spread with purple Sattin, under a Canopy of the same Silk and Colour, laced with Gold; with his own Name, and that of his Infant-Daughter, who died a few Days before him, embroidered in Cyphers with proper Devices. This Catafalco was attended with four Statues of Wood, painted white; two at the Feet, and two at the Head, with four large Candlesticks, in which were white Wax-Tapers as big as one's Thigh. The Statues, which were at the Head, represented *Hercules* and *Alexander*; and those at the Feet Religion and *Russia*. Besides the two Guards at the Door of the Church, by each Taper was placed a Soldier in a black Cloak, with a Halbard in his Hand: On the left Hand of this Catafalco hung a branched Candlestick, with only one little Taper, burning Night and Day. All this, they told me, was to continue in this Manner, till the Parts or Ornaments of a magnificent Monument of Marble were brought from *Italy*. Marble indeed is not Proof against Length of Time, but his Actions, which have procured him the Title of *Peter the Great*, have secured him an immortal Honour. We may say, that he died the Death of the Righteous, as of the Heroe, if we may credit the Story which I am going to mention. This great Prince, during his last Sickness, in Spite of the most exquisite, and continual Pains of a Strangury, spoke of Affairs to the last Day of his Life with the same Tranquillity and Acuteness of Judgment, which his Excellency, the present Grand-Pensionary of *Holland*, shews in the severest Fits of the Gout. Among other Things worthy his incomparable Genius and Spirit, when the Senatours and Bishops, who visited him, and mentioned the Obligations which the *Russian* Nation lay under to him, for raising it to so considerable a Figure, by reforming of such a Variety of Abuses and bad Customs, and introduced so many useful Arts and Sciences, &c. he told them, ' That he forgot to reform one of the most important Points of all, the Administration of Justice; that among all the Arts and Sciences, which he had borrowed from the Christian Powers, and in which they infinitely excelled the *Turks*, he had considered, that the latter as far surpassed the former in their Administration of Justice\*; because Law-Suits in *Christianity* last for Years, and even Ages together, with an infinite Expence; (whereas in *Turky* they are determined in a few Days, and with very little Charge;) and all this is occasioned by the tedious and litigious Pleadings of the Lawyers, who perplex human Laws in the same Manner, as too many Divines do the Law of God, instead of

\* I have spoken very fully concerning the speedy Manner of Administring Justice among the *Turks*, in my Account of *Turky*. I have an Interest in wishing, that there was here such a Regulation made as was ordered by *Peter the First*, a few Weeks before his Death. I have had a Law-Suit protracted for above Four Years, with two Persons, who have wronged me in a Manner that shocks every Gentleman who are acquainted with it; and I know not when it will be determined

‘ explaining it. To remedy this, he determined, that Causes ( as among the *Turks* ) should be carried at first to the Tribunal of the Magistrate, or ordinary Judge ; that Proofs in Writing, and Witnesses should be produced, and the Characters and Behaviour of the latter should be particularly examined, and so an impartial Judgment should be pronounced ; all which would be finished in a few Hours. But if the Party, condemned by that Court, should think himself injured, that he might appeal from this Sentence to the Senate, or Synod ; and, even after a second Judgment against him, to the Sovereign himself.’

Those that were present applauding this Scheme, he commanded an Order to be drawn up, which he signed and dated from his Bed, and was sent immediately to all the Courts of his Empire. This Order limits the Determination of all Causes to the Term of eleven Days ; and in consequence of it, all the Suits then depending, were decided before he closed his Eyes in Death. When he observed his End approaching, he ordered the Oath in favour of his beloved Empress *Catherine* to be again administered to the Clergy and Nobility. He was attended to his last Breath with the Prayers and Ceremonies of the Religion he professed, and gave them all the Proofs imaginable, that he esteemed it the best. The principal Prelates and Abbots prayed by him, and he joined in Prayer with them the 27th of *January*, 1725, the last Day of which he saw the Light of. The Bishops of *Pleskow* and *Twere*, anointed him with the holy Oils. He shewed all the Marks of a perfect Resignation, and expired on the 28th at 3 o’ Clock in the Morning, having evidenced, ’tis said, through his whole Sicknefs, an absolute Contempt of Death. His dear and afflicted Consort was immediately proclaimed Empress of *Russia*, with all the Titles belonging to it, and all the Clergy, Nobility, and chief Citizens, who were present, took the Oath of Allegiance to her. This Oath being drawn up and printed, was sent to all the Provinces of the Empire, to be taken by Persons of all Ranks and Degrees, except the Boors, who are not reckoned in the Number of Citizens.

They go in and out of the Cittadel by two Bridges, which are distinguished only by a Guard-House, into a large Place of *Trinity-Island*, called by some *Petersbourg-Island*. This Island is of the greatest Extent of all. On the right Hand, and almost in the middle of it stands the Church of *Trinity*, built for the most part of Wood, very large, with a Chime played by Hands every Hour. At a little Distance from this Church, upon the same Place, there was still standing a triumphal Pyramid, made of Wood, and painted ; which was raised, ’tis said, in 1719, on occasion of the *Russian* Fleets having taken four *Swedish* Men of War. Amongst the Paintings, which, for the most Part, were defaced by the Rain and other Injuries of the Weather,

Q q

there

there was one still preserved, representing a Mountain with a Mouse coming out of it, with this Motto,

*Parturient montes, nascetur ridiculus mus.*

They told me, that after the *Te Deum* was sung in the Cathedral, with the Ringing of Bells, and other Marks of Thanksgiving in all the Churches of the City; there was in the Evening noble Fire-Works in this Place, which *Peter the First* gave that and the two following Days, with a splendid Entertainment for the Nobility and other Persons of Distinction; in which they drunk in the *Russian* Manner. Besides this, there were Balls and Masquerades, in which the mock Czar, and the mock Patriarch \* signalized themselves in their different Characters. I shall just mention a few Particulars of a Cavalcade. The former was dressed in royal Robes, and crowned in the Manner the Painters represent King *David*, with a little Harp hanging by a Scarf, made like a Belt. The other personating the Patriarch was dressed in such Robes as were used by the Patriarchs of *Russia* before the Suppression of that Dignity. The mock Czar held the Stirrup, while the other mounted on Horseback, as the Czars formerly did to the Patriarchs of *Russia*. I suppose this was designed to ridicule that Custom. The Masquerades had generally very odd and whimsical Dresses. The Czar himself appeared as a *Dutch* Skipper, and his Admirals, and other Sea and Land Officers were some of them dressed in that Manner, and others differently. The whole Cavalcade was masked, and followed by a great Number of Ladies in Coaches, Chaises, and Chariots, in Variety of Habits. The greatest Part appeared in the antient *Russian* Dresses; the Czarina *Catherine*, the Princess *Menzicoff*, and several other Ladies of prime Quality, were dressed like Country Women in *Friesland* and *Zeland*, and attended with Musicians, and a great Number of Vizors, who danced as they marched. In short, the whole Entertainment, as it was represented to me, resembled very much the Cavalcades in Carnival Time, which I have given an Account of in my Description of *Rome*.

About fifty Paces from this triumphal Pyramid towards the N. E. is a row of Houses, for the greatest part of Wood, and well built; which extending from the chief Branch of the River *Neva*, towards the N. W. encloses a great Part of the Place on that Side. About the middle of these Houses stands the Chancery-House, which is very large, but has nothing remarkable. Passing along this Branch of the River to the other, which encloses the Island from the Brew-Houses abovementioned by running N. W. and falling S. E. into the former a little below the Cittadel, we see several very fine Houses, some of which

\* A *Russian* Boyar told me, that the Czar, *Peter the First*, had a Buffoon, to whom he gave that Title after the Suppression of the Patriarchat, in 1709; and that he wore upon his Breast, instead of the patriarchal Cross, a little Gibbet with the Effigies of *Felzer Maxzeppa*, who, as it is well known, revolted to the King of *Sweden*, with a Body of *Cossacks*.

which are of Brick ; the chief is that built by the Baron *Shaffiroff*. This House is a Proof of the Badness of the Bricks, which I observed above ; as there was no Care taken to repair it after his Disgrace, and it was seized with the rest of his Estate, the Walls were become rotten, like those which have stood for some Ages together. However, as they are very thick, they are decayed only in Appearance, and may stand many Years longer. Here the Imperial Academy, which was formed upon the Plan of the Royal Academy of *France* sat, and gave Lectures, till the magnificent Edifice, which *Peter the First* had founded for that Purpose, was finished.

The Baron *Shaffiroff* was generally allowed to be the most able Minister that *Peter the First* ever had. He was the principal Person in all *Russia* for the Knowledge of foreign as well as domestick Affairs ; and as much esteemed by that Emperour, as Prince *Menzikoff* was loved. But he was one of those who endeavoured the most vigorously, and even publickly for a long Time to destroy that Favourite ; but the Attempt ended in his own Ruin. They had in 1723, so violent a Dispute with each other, while the Czar was at *Astracan*, that he could not avoid, on his Return, taking a more particular Notice of this Difference between them, than he had of any of the former. The Baron accused the Prince to his Face, of the most flagrant Extortions for his own Profit, which appeared so evident from the Proofs which he gave, and the Complaints of the injured Parties, that the Czar gave the Knout to the Prince with his own Hand : But in Consideration of his extraordinary Talents for raising Monies, which he wanted for the Execution of his great Designs, he still continued him in Favour. The Prince remonstrated to his Majesty in so pathetick a Manner, that whatever he had raised upon his Subjects, was not only at his Service, but that all that himself possessed, which he confessed was owing to his Majesty's Bounty, was likewise at his Disposal ; so that the Czar embraced him very affectionately, and kissed him, and in a Manner asked his Pardon. The Prince, to revenge himself the more advantageously of the Baron, who was very rich, especially in ready Money, which was his greatest Crime, accused him in his Turn, of embezzling the publick Treasure : The Czar believed the Accusation, or at least seemed to do so, in order to seize upon his Riches. He condemned him not only to lose all his Estate, but his Head likewise. Accordingly he was led to the Scaffold, and the Executioner was preparing to behead him, when his Majesty graciously changed his Punishment to Banishment, out of regard to the great Services he had done him upon the Banks of the River *Pruth*\*, and afterwards at the *Ottoman* Port.

As

\* The Baron *Shaffiroff* was raised by his Merit from an ordinary Writer in one of the Courts of Justice at *Moscow*, to the Dignity of Chancellour. It was solely to his Ability, and not to any pretended Presents of the Czarina, that the Czar owed his Deliverance at *Pruth*, as I have observed in another Place. I was well informed by the *Pacha*, with whom I was then, and by other

*Turks,*



As the Czar knew no Person more qualified for the Office of Chancellour, than Count *Tolstoy*, though he was no great Friend to the Prince, he gave it him immediately. The Empress *Catherine*, for Reasons which are differently reported, recalled him from Banishment soon after her Accession to the Throne. 'Tis said that the Czar himself, who foresaw the Occasion she would have, as a Stranger, of faithful Friends, and able Ministers to support her Interest, advised her a few Days before his Death to recal and employ him again. Prince *Menzikoff*, having lost his grand Support against his Enemies, his dear Master and theirs, though he was secure of the Continuance of the Czarina's Favour, did not oppose this Design; nay, 'tis reported that he endeavoured to make a Merit of his Service in it to the Exile himself. But the latter, who could not pardon him for the Loss of all his Estate and Fortunes, having answered his Compliments with Contempt, and even Reproaches for what had passed, the Czarina thought proper to remove him, though without any Marks of Disgrace; and gave him the Government of *Archangel*. *Peter the Second*, having banished Prince *Menzikoff*, in the Manner which I have mentioned above, designed to have fixed him again in his Chancellourship; but the Death of that young Monarch soon after prevented it.

The House of Baron *Osterman* is not far from this: There is nothing remarkable in it, but its being very convenient. But the Master of it is a Person of so much Merit, as exceeds all the Compliments I can possibly pay him. I had the Honour of being known to him in the Year 1719 at the Congress of *Lofto*, one of the Islands known by the general Name of *Aland*, which is the largest of them. This Minister and the other *Russian* Plenipotentiaries entertained me and Mr. *Barkley* in the Manner which I have mentioned in the 20th Chapter of my second Volume; and he treated me in an obliging Manner during my Stay at *Petersbourg*. He is one of the ablest Ministers, and of the most extensive Genius, which *Russia* ever had.

Leaving the main Branch of the River, by which stand the two Houses I have described, with a great many others less considerable, and among them the first House, which *Peter the First* built, when he came to lay the Foundations of this new City, upon a Spot of Ground as disagreeable as I have mentioned; we may pass along the Southern Bank, opposite to that on which the Brew-Houses stand. Upon the Key, which is extremely agreeable, is a long Row of very ordinary Houses, the greatest part of Wood. Passing along this Key to a little Canal towards the N. W. which forms a small Island, in

*Turks*, even Enemies to the Vizor, of what passed there, and of the Presents which were made: All that the Czarina did (for she was already called so, though not yet married to the Czar,) was to carry to him, when he was retired to his Tent, and would see none but her, the Counsels and Methods, which that great Minister suggested, in order to a Treaty, and to induce him to agree to them, and to give him a full Power of acting.

in which is the Physick-Garden; we see upon this Branch of the River a great Number of Karbasses, unloading Hemp, Corn, Honey, Wax, *Russia* Leather, and other Commodities, into the Imperial Magazines, which stand on the same Side as the Brew-Houses. Some of these Karbasses set sail with us, and followed us from *Novogrod* through the *Wolkga* and the new Canal of *Ladoga*. This Physick-Garden is almost opposite to the two farthest of the Magazines to the North. It stands upon an Island called the *Dispensatory*-Island, which makes a Part of that of *Trinity*, and is separated from it only by a little Canal or Branch, that runs from an Arm of the River *Neva*, which I have just mentioned, and falls into it again to the S. W. Before I enter upon it, I shall just speak a Word or two of the Bathing-Houses, which stand a little lower along the Key. There is no Comparifon between these and the Baths of *Turky* for Elegance or Grandeur. These are very ill built of Beams and Joists laid a-cross the Planks. There are so many Accounts already published concerning the different Manners of Bathing in *Russia* that I shall not repeat them. These Baths are always full of People; who bathe constantly twice a Week at least, and are obliged to pay each of them more every Time to the Crown, than they do in *Turky* to the Proprietors of the Baths, though they have no Servants here to rub them as in that Country. Those who have Baths in their own Houses are not exempt from this Tax; which is one of the chief Branches next to the Taverns of the publick Revenues. The *Russians* are used as much to Bathing as to Eating or Drinking: 'Tis a kind of universal Medicine to them. The Physick-Garden is well stored not only with *European* Plants, but even those of the most Northern Countries, and the least known, which were discovered by the most skilful Botanist, whom the late Czar invited from several Parts, and encouraged by his Generosity; but likewise with the Plants of *Asia*, as far as *Persia* and *China*. These exotick Plants succeed here surprisngly. the Ananastes itself grows ripe here, as in its native Climate. I must do this Justice to this Spot of Ground, though it owes much to Art, as well as to that on which the Brew-Houses and Magazines stand, to say, that it has been most favoured by Nature, and is not so low, as the others about *Petersbourg*, and consequently less exposed to the Inundations of the River. At the Bottom of the Garden to the S.W. stands the Dispensatory, which gives Name to the Island. It is a fine Building well stored with Medicines. *Peter the First* has not only established a Colledge of Physicians and Apothecaries at *Petersbourg*, but likewise at *Moscow*, and other considerable Cities of the Empire, in order to supply his Armies as well as the People with Medicines. This Island is so large, that the Garden, though of a very great Extent, does not take up above a third Part of it. *Peter the First* had a Design to have extended his City to this Place, and covered

vered the rest of this Island with Houses, as well as the other Islands, which are not yet built over. It was here that the *Swedes* took, as it were, their last Farewel of *Ingria*, in 1705, whilst their Master was gathering Laurels in *Poland*, and destroying one King at the same Time he was raising another. I have been assured by several Persons, that, when this King heard that the Czar was building a City upon these Islands, and another upon that of *Rethuzary*, he replied, ' Let him amuse himself in that Employment, and build for us: We shall very soon take them from him, and keep them, if they are worth it; if not, we will burn them. ' They report, that the Czar had no less than 30000 Men employed in digging the Canals, and Building; besides the Workmen hired by the *Boyars*, and others of his rich Subjects, whom he obliged to build at their own Cost. And they say, that from the Beginning of *May*, 1703, to the latter End of the Year 1705, there had perished no less a Number of Men for Want of Provisions, and by the Unhealthiness of the Climate. The *Swedes* (who seemed in this Affair, as well as their King, *Charles the Twelfth*, to have been too negligent of that excellent Maxim in Physick, *Principiis obsta*; Always observe to stop the Disease at the Beginning; a Maxim of great Importance in Politicks as well as in other Matters;) came hither with a flying Army, and soon perceived, that what they, after the Example of their Master, had treated as a chimerical Undertaking, was far from being so in Reality. They found, that the Fortress, which they begun with, was already finished, and mounted with Artillery; and that it would be extremely difficult to hinder the Building and Enlarging of the City. They found likewise a strong Body of Troops to oppose them, commanded by good Officers, which guarded the Parts adjacent, and attacked them in so vigorous a Manner, that they were obliged to secure themselves by a Retreat. I was informed, that those, who were killed in the Fight, were buried in the Place, where the *German Lutherans* have a Burying-Ground, near the Physick-Garden. Thus, in about 23 Years Time, *Petersbourg* was raised to be a very considerable City, and contained, upon a moderate Computation, 70000 Houses, when I was there in 1726. I shall not enter into a particular Description of it, since that has been done already in several Languages. I shall only mention a few of the principal Buildings in it, and some Particulars relating to the History of *Peter the First*, as I have already done in this Chapter.

I shall therefore leave the *Apothecaries-Island*, and return to *Trinity-Island*; the chief Buildings of which are the Colledges of Trade, the Mines, the Market, the Bourse, the great Imperial Tavern, and the Printing-House. They are built for the most part of Wood, like the rest, and have nothing considerable, but what is transacted in them. It is well known, how much *Peter the First* did for the Encouragement and

and Advantage of Trade, as I have observed before. Before his Reign there never were any *Russian* Ships seen in the *Mediterranean*. He sent a great Number thither, freighted with the Product of his Countries. An *English* Gentleman, a Counsellour of Trade, told me, that he had sent more than were for the Interest of the other trading Powers. This Gentleman had a fine House near the Baths, which he often invited me to, and entertained me in the most obliging Manner, as he did several Merchants of his Nation, who lived for the most part on the other Side of the Water. Those Gentlemen complained very much of the Decay of the *English* Trade in *Russia*, especially since the Year 1717, when the King of *Prussia* engaged with the Court of *Russia*, to cloath the Army, and supply the whole Country with Cloths and other woollen Stuffs of his own Manufactures. Besides *Peter the First* has established in *Russia* the Manufactures of Linnen, Silk, Cloth, &c. so that they are now obliged to pay in ready Money for the Commodities of that Country, whereas formerly they paid for them with their own.

The Colledge of Mines was established in 1718. These Treasures, which were hid under Ground, and unknown before through the Negligence and Ignorance of the *Russians*, were at last discovered by Foreigners skilled in the Knowledge of Metals, whom *Peter the First* had invited and encouraged by his Liberality for that Purpose. They have brought these Metals to the Perfection which we see; and would probably have carried them to much greater Perfection, and discovered more of these Metals, if he had lived longer to promote such a Design. Besides a great Number of Works of Copper, Iron, and Steel made in that Country even by the *Russians* themselves, who have learned from the foreign Artisans to equal, if not excel, their Masters; I was shewn Medals of *Siberia* Gold, as good and fine as that of *Mexico*, and as beautifully coined as can be in any other Part of *Christendom*: Among several others are the following.

One struck for the Coropation of the Empress *Catherine*; on one side of it was her Head joined with that of the Czar, in the Manner in which King *William the Third* and Queen *Mary* of *England* are represented upon their Money and Medals. On the Reverse the Czar appears in the Habit of a Roman Emperour, placing an Imperial Crown upon the Head of the Czarina, with this Inscription in the *Russian* Language and Characters, *Crowned at Moscow, MDCCXXI*. The Legend gives him the Title of *Peter the Great, Emperour of all Russia*.

Upon another Medal, struck on Occasion of the Peace concluded with *Sweden*, are represented on one side *Petersbourg* and *Stockholm*; and on the Reverse *Noah's Ark*, with a Rainbow over it, and a Dove carrying in its Bill a little Branch of Olive, and flying towards the Gate of the Ark, with this Inscription in the same Language and Characters, *He*  
gave

*gave his Consent to the Peace*; in the Exergue, *Of our own Country Gold*, M DCC XXI.

Upon another Medal, struck upon the Death of this Emperour, he is represented in the Habit of a *Roman*, with his Head bare, and raised to Heaven by Religion, who holds him by the Hand: On the Reverse is the Empress sitting and Weeping. In the Exergue, *Obiit 28 of January, 1725.*

The great Market-Place, called in the *Russian* Language *Lavoesky*, stands N. W. of Trinity Church, and faces a great Part of the Place. It is very much like, with respect to the Use of it those Hans, or rather the Bistins, of *Constantinople*, which I have mentioned in my Account of *Turky*; for they deposite and sell here as in the other all sorts of Merchandize; but with this Difference, that the Bistins are splendid Buildings of Free-Stone, and well cemented against Fire, whereas this Lavoesky is all of Wood. It is a large square Building, enclosing a spacious empty Court with four Gates. There are two Stories of Ware-Houses for Goods, and Shops below to sell them in: The Building is very regular, and surrounded with four Galleries at each Story, two without and two within, but lesser. At the four great Gates are Centinels placed, who are relieved every two Hours: The Crown has very large Rents for these Ware-Houses and Shops; for it is not allowed to the Subjects to lay their Manufactures, nor to sell them, but at such Imperial Markets, nor any others, but in the Imperial Magazines: Whereas in *Turky*, it is free for every Person to do both where he pleases. The Bourse, which is another Building entirely of Wood, stands N. W. of the Place; but it is not frequented now; for the Merchants meet near the Lavoesky, where they walk under one of the outward Galleries, that faces the Place, in bad Weather. Near this are the Silk and Woollen Manufactures. The great Kabacke, or Imperial Tavern, stands in the Way to the Bridge of the Fortrefs. On the right Hand is the Printing-House, a very bad Building; but there was designed to be one of Brick in the new House, which was building for the Academy in the Island of *Vasloftroff*, (S. *Basil*.)

Leaving this Part of *Petersbourg*, which is almost wholly built of Wood, and crossing the main Arm of the River, which alone is much larger than the *Seine*, we pay at Landing two or three Coupiques \* to the Imperial Box; and then we find ourselves upon a Key 800 Paces long, and 30 broad, upon which stands a Row of fine Houses, or rather Palaces. The *Russian* Nobility have built these Palaces, as well as a great many other fine Houses in the other Parts of *Petersbourg*, with several publick Edifices, by the Order of *Peter the First*, who obliged  
about

\* There are Collectors at all the Landing-Places to receive the Money for Passing the River. This with another Tax upon Vessels and Yachts is a Branch of the Revenues of the Crown, which brings in clear of all Charges of Collectors and Boat-Men, 200,000 Rubles. I have before observed that the intrinsic Value of a Ruble is 100 Coupiques.

about 200 Families to come and live in them, as he did a vast Number of inferiour Rank of several Professions, especially Merchants, whom he allowed to build with Timber. He marked, or caused to be marked out for them, the Places to build upon, which he gave them *gratis*. And as he ordered every one to pave before his Door, and even directed them in what Manner to do it, the Streets are every where well paved, and in an uniform Manner, and are very regular and large. I have measured several, which were from 20 to 30 Feet broad.

Among the most considerable of these Palaces, that face the Arm of the River abovementioned, is the Imperial Winter-Palace, a vast Building, which they were repairing and enlarging slowly, as they did every Thing else then. This Palace is wholly of Brick, except some few ornamental Parts, as the others are. Here are also the Palaces of the Admirals *Apraxin*, *Crewys*, of General *Czerenutoff*, and that in which his Royal Highness the Duke of *Holstein* lived. This Prince, whom I had the Honour of being known to at *Stockholm*, received me very graciously, when I went to pay my Respects to him. That Palace stands almost at the End of the long Row of Houses abovementioned to the S. W. The Imperial Summer-Palace, in which the Court resided the whole Year, till the Winter-Palace was fitted up in the Manner ordered by *Peter the First*, stands 300 or 400 Paces beyond the other End to the N. E. Between this Palace and that which was built for the Prince of *Moldavia*, *Cantemir*, mentioned in the first Chapter of my second Volume, and which is the first House of the Row of Palaces on that Side, is a Place of very great Extent, and well paved, with the Post-house, which is a good Building, and several others about it, though not very considerable. Passing along the River to the N. before you enter into the Summer-Palace, you find a little Canal, with a Bridge over it that leads to the Palace. This Canal communicates with a larger more Northwards, and forms a great Island, of an oblong circular Figure, extending from the N. E. to S. W. as far as the Fall of the *Neva*, into the Gulph of *Finland*, about a Wrest on this Side of *Catherine-Hoff*, a Pleasure-house of the Czarina. About an 100 Paces below the Imperial Palace to the East, is a little Yatch-Port. The Imperial Yachts are almost as beautiful and fine as those of *England*, being made by *English* Men. I saw one there which King *William* made a Present of to the Czar, when he was in *England*. About this little Harbour, there are several very good Houses and other Buildings, though, for the most part of Timber. Among others, the College and Church of the *Jesuits*, which is very neat and finely adorned. A little further stand the Imperial Stables, a vast Building, almost entirely of Stone and Brick, and very regular. At a small Distance higher up than these Stables, stands that Part of the Summer-Palace, called the Imperial Garden-Palace, because of its Gardens; and it is

S f

sepa-

separated from the other Part of the Palace, by a Branch of the great Canal. This Branch being joined to the little Canal, forms the *Admiralty-Island*, which encloses the Row of Palaces abovementioned. It is a Building very ordinary, but regular, and the Gardens, much neglected; give it a very rural and pleasant Air. Passing over to the other Part of the Palace, by the Bridge abovementioned, we met with a green Court-Yard, which we pass through by an Allay of Trees, and then enter another Court-Yard; on the right Hand of which stands a great Hall built of Timber, on Occasion of the Marriage of the Duke of *Holstein* with the Princess *Anne of Russia*, who died in *Holstein* in 1728. The late Czarina gave there very often Entertainments and Balls upon extraordinary Occasions, as upon the Arrival of the Bishop of *Lubeck*, to marry the Princess *Elizabeth Petrowna*, her second Daughter, while I was at *Petersbourg*. This Hall, I was told, was built in three Weeks. It is adorned with very curious Paintings, Part of those which the late Czar bought in *Germany*, *Holland*, and *France*. That Part of the Summer-Palace, which stands by the River, is not much more magnificent than the other which is on the Gardens; it is less regularly built; what is most considerable is the rich Furniture, and the excellent Paintings.

Leaving this Island, and passing over the great Canal, you enter upon the Continent to the N. E. where you must go and see the Imperial Library with the Antiquities and Curiosities of Nature and Art. Mr. *Areskin*, a *Scots* Physician, was the Keeper of them; and since his Death, Mr. *Shumacher*. For above a whole Wreath beyond this, you'll scarce see any House but what is made of Timber, except that of Baron *Bruce*, a *Scots* Gentleman, and grand Master of the Artillery, &c. which is one of the best built in all *Petersbourg*. I intended to have made him a Visit, having had the Honour of being known to him at the Congress of *Aland*, in 1719, but he was then at *Moscow*. Mr. *Shumacher* is well known by his personal Merit, and a Work which he has published. His Politeness and Civility are very much commended by all curious Foreigners. I was recommended to him by Baron *Stamke*\*, whom I knew at *Stockholm*, when he was first Secretary to Baron *Goerts*. Mr. *Shumacher's* House is of Timber, but very neat and convenient, near to that, in which the Imperial Curiosities are deposited, which is of Brick; for there is but a Court-Yard between them. These Curiosities were to remain there, till the new Building for the Academy was finished, to which they were to be carried. The Narrowness of the House, in which they were then, would  
not

\* He was at the Congress of *Aland*, when the Baron *Goerts* was arrested; upon which News he put himself under the Protection of the *Russian* Plenipotentiaries, who sent him to *Petersbourg*; of which I have given a full Account in my 2d Volume. The Duke of *Holstein* made him his Chancellour after his Marriage; and the Empress created him a Baron, and gave him the Order of *S. Alexander Newsky*.



not suffer the whole Library to be placed in Order so as to be seen exactly. The Books and Manuscripts were to be digested into their proper Classes, by ranging those together which treat of the same Subject, in a great Hall of the new House, as in that of *Mazarin-Colledge* at *Paris*, and those of *Oxford* and *Cambridge* in *England*. There was a small Number already put into that Order in the House they laid in, under the following Titles, *Regnum Historicum*, for the Books of History; *Regnum Typographicum*, for those upon Printing; *Regnum Geographicum*, for Geography; *Regnum Astronomicum*, for Astronomy; *Regnum Minerale*, for those upon Minerals; *Regnum Vegetabile*, for those upon Vegetables; *Regnum Anatomicum*, for Anatomy. I saw several of them, though but superficially.

Among the Historians, the History of the *East* and *West Indies* in different Languages, with a great many excellent Plans drawn by able *English* Engineers, and finely engraved in *France*, in three large Volumes in Folio.

Among those that treated of the Art of Printing, *Annales Typographii*, the first Edition of which was bought by Mr. *Shumacher* in *Holland* for the late Czar.

Among those upon Geography and Travels, the Description of Eastern and Northern *Tartary*, by *Witsen*.

Among those upon Astronomy, a Treatise of the Sphere and mathematical Instruments, by the famous Mr. *Rowley*, the last and best Edition in *English*. Mr. *Shumacher* shewed me a great Number of the most curious mathematical Instruments, which were bought by the late Czar in *England* and *France*.

Among those upon Vegetables, *Metamorphosis Insectorum, Plantarum & Florum Surinamensium*. This Book is the Work of *Sebastian Merian*, if I remember right; it treats of the various Changes of Insects, Plants and Flowers. It was printed, I think, at first in *Germany*, and then reprinted in *Holland*. Mr. *Shumacher* has procured for the Library the first and rarest Edition. Mrs. *Merian* has painted a great Variety of Plants and Flowers to the greatest Perfection, which he shewed me; and they were then engraving, with a particular Account of them ready for the Press. With respect to these Changes, they are observed in some Insects, Plants, and Animals, and may be divided, I think, into three Kinds, *accidental*, *apparent*, and *natural*. I saw among the Curiosities of Animals a Fish, which resembles very much that which the *Germans* call *Guappen*, and the *Swedes*, *Simpla*; it is pretended, that this Fish was originally a Frog, and that the Change happened thus: The Tail lengthens in Proportion, as the Feet grow shorter: The Truth is, that the Fish has naturally the Mouth of a Frog. It is a common Prejudice, or rather a vulgar Errour, that the *Chameleon* changes its Colour, or assumes those of the Objects which  
it

it is applied to. I have seen a great many in *Turky*, especially about *Smyrna*: If they are laid upon the Grass, they appear indeed green; and so they take the Colour of other Objects, which they are applied to; but this only happens when the Sun shines; otherwise they keep their natural Colour, wherever they are laid. Mr. *Eaton*, an *English* Physician, who lived in that City, accounted for it in this Manner: 'That there is a glutinous Humour, which transpires from the Body of the Animal; and that the Rays of the Sun falling upon it, and upon the Objects which it is applied to, or which are near it, there is a Reflection, which seems to communicate the Colours of the Objects to the Animal'.

Mr. *Shumacher* told me of a Plant, found upon the Banks of the *Boristhenes* and *Volga*, near *Samara*, and in other Parts of *Russia*, called in *Latin*, *Agnus Scythicus*\*, or *Zoophytum*, from two *Greek* Words, *Zoon*, signifying an Animal, and *Phyton*, a Plant. Some are of Opinion, that it is both of a Vegetable and Animal Nature, and that there grows upon it an Animal like a Lamb, which feeds upon the Grass round about the Plant to which it is joined. He added, that *Peter the First* sent one to the King of *Poland*.

Among the Books of Physick and Anatomy, were *Gulielmi Pisonis Medicinæ Apothegmata*, *Ruschii Thesaurus*, &c. *Observationes Anatomicæ Dominici Santorini*. This Book is dedicated by the Author to *Peter the First*, and printed at *Venice*. It is richly bound, and gilt on the Edges.

This Library is very copious and considerable: It consists for the most part of that of the late Duke of *Courland*, who married the present Czarina, and of that of the Duke of *Holstein*, which *Peter the First* took away with the famous Globe of *Gotorp*, after he had assisted the King of *Denmark* in seizing upon that Dutchy. What a Variety of Designs that Emperour undertook and executed! What Art and Science has he not introduced into his Empire! And what more great Undertakings might have been expected from him; if he had been favoured with a longer Life! He established publick Lectures of Anatomy, which his Subjects scarce knew even the Name of before his Reign. He purchased the Cabinet of the famous *Ruisch*, which contained a prodigious Variety of instructive and curious Preparations and Dissections.

Among these anatomical Preparations Mr. *Shumacher* shewed several *Corions*, or the first *Fœtus's* formed in the *Matrix*, with its natural Liquor,

\* It is, according to the most famous Botanists, a Kind of Melon, which very much resembles a Lamb. It grows upon a certain Stack, which serves as a Sort of Navel to it; and changes its Place, as far as that will permit. It dries up the Grass where it grows; and this is probably the Reason why it is imagined to feed upon it. They add, that when it is ripe, the Stack dries; and it covers itself with a kind of soft Wool, like that of a young Lamb, which may be used as other Furs, &c. See *N. Lemery's Universal Dictionary* in the Letter Z.

quor, preserved by an artificial one, and the *Ova* of Generation impregnated and dissected with others not impregnated; some, wherein the *Fœtus* was not formed; others in which it was formed or taken out. He shewed me the several Parts and Degrees of Generation; the Situation of the Child in the Womb, from the first 15 Days to nine Months; and the Organs of Generation of an *Hermaphrodite*, in which only the female Parts were sufficiently formed and proportioned. It is said, that there never is but one of the Sexes compleat in an Hermaphrodite. I saw likewise a little *Catmouck*-Child of about nine Months old, with two Bodies and two Heads; and all its Parts well formed, and its Heads almost separate from each other. A humane *Fœtus* of a female *Moor* four Months old; with its *Glitoris* hanging out as long as the privy Member of a Boy of that Age, and its Head much larger than its Body; and besides these a Variety of other *Fœtus*'s of Apes and other Animals.

The Skull of a *Frenchman*, all of one Piece, without any Sign of Separation of the Parts. He was very subject to the Head-Ach; his Heart and Stomach were extremely large, and his *Penis* small; he eat and drank as much as four Men, and was above seven Feet high. He was born at *Calais*, and called himself *Bourgeois*. The Czar brought him from *France* to *Petersbourg*, where he died 42 Years old, and left a Widow with two Children, who was married again to one of the Emperess *Catharine*'s Heyducks. The Hand of a Man, who died by excessive Drinking, with all its Blood stagnated in the Veins. A pretended flying Dragon, an imaginary Serpent, of which a thousand strange Stories are told, and as many ridiculous Representations made as of the Devil himself, who is generally drawn in the Shape of it. It is a kind of Lizard with Wings too small to raise him from the Ground, and which seem much more proper to swim than to fly with. A Salamander, of which we have many chimerical Accounts; as of his Living in the Fire without any Harm. Naturalists, who pretend to have made the Experiment, tell us, that this Animal does indeed resist the Fire much longer than any other; and they assign this Reason for it, that it transpires a certain Moisture, or Oyl, peculiar to itself, which causes it to keep its Form in the Flames; but this continues no longer than this Transpiration of the Oyl lasts. We may therefore compare the Salamander to a lighted Candle, the Cotton of which does not lose its Form till the Tallow ceases to moisten it.

I saw there Serpents of all kinds, also Rattle-Snakes, with many other Sorts of Animals and Insects too tedious to mention, so well preserved in a Liquor prepared by *M. Raifsch*, that there seemed to be nothing wanting to them but Life.

Among the dried Animals I saw a kind of Hare, whose fore Feet were much shorter than those behind. An *Indian* Animal called *Mantuka*, whose Head is very much like that of common Foxes, but the

T t

Tail

Tail not so long nor hairy: You may see an Account of it in *Gulielmus Piso*. A Bird of *Paradise*, which they say has no Feet; but this is a vulgar Errour, for he draws them into his Body or under his Skin, as the Tortoise does his Head. A *Casuarinus*, an *Indian* Bird, of the Shape and Bigness of an Ostrich; but instead of a Crest of Feathers, it has a kind of hairy Cap: Its Eggs likewise are not so round, but longer than those of an Ostrich.

Among the antient, modern, and artificial Curiosities, I saw several little Ships and Galleys with every Thing proper to them, very beautifully made; — a Sun or Ostentorio, wherein the *Roman* Catholics put the consecrated Host, of Silver gilt, very large and curiously wrought, so that we may say of it, what *Ovid* said of the Palace of the Sun, that the Workmanship excelled the Matter. It represents the Portico of a *Gothick* Cathedral. I was informed, that the Grandfather of the late Czar took it from the *Teutonic* Knights; but this is contrary to Chronology, for that Order was extinguished long before that, under the Reign of *Evan Wasilewitz*, surnamed *the Tyrant*, the second of the Family of *Beala*, who bore the Title of Czar. I have already given some Account of the Depredations he carried on in *Livonia*, which he made tributary to him. The Bishop of *Dorpt* was obliged for his Part to pay him an annual Tribute of 1000 Ducats of Gold. He took in 1560 the Fortrefs of *Pelin*, and carried, as in Triumph to *Moscow*, the old grand Master *Furstembourg*, who had retired thither after his Abdication.

I was shewn some Gold Mineral from *Siberia* very rich, and some Gold-dust found about the *Caspian* Sea\*; some Iron Ore found about the Lake *Onega*, of which they made as good Cannons in every Respect as those of Brass; a Silver Key of *Derbent*, which you have described in Plate II. Letter C; an Urn of a singular kind of Marble, with blueish and reddish Veins; this was found in *Siberia*, with other Antiquities. It has several Crosses upon it. By this they pretend to prove the Antiquity of Christianity in that Country; but I cannot admit of that Proof, since it is acknowledged by the greatest Antiquaries, that this Figure of a Cross is found upon Monuments, which were erected long before the Birth of *Jesus Christ*. I have mentioned and described these Crosses in my 2d Volume, as they are found upon the Money of the Pagan Kings of *Gothia*, and other Parts of *Scandinavia*, and upon the *Runick* Stones, which are met with there very commonly. See Print 32 of the 2d Volume. I saw also a great Number of Idols, Utensils, and Vessels for Sacrifice, the greatest Part found about the *Caspian* Sea, with Characters unknown, or unexplained

\* I was assured, that a pound Weight of this Dust produced 14 Ounces of pure Gold; and confirmed in what I mentioned doubtfully in my 2d Volume, that this Dust was found in great Quantities in the River *Daria*.

plained hitherto. I have found some very like them in *Noghian Tartary*, which are represented in Plate 32 of my 2d Volume in *English*, and the 4th of the same in *French*. I have also given an Account there of the Map (C) of the *Caspian* Sea, the Plan of which was taken by the Order of the late Czar; so that we have now its true Form and Situation. There are likewise in this Collection a great Number of Medals, but for the most part very common.

The House, where these Curiosities are repositied, stands almost opposite to the great Imperial Brew-Houses, which are, as I have observed, on the other Side of the *Neva*, upon the Continent, in *Finland Carelia*. *Trinity-Island* may also be ranked among those that belong to that Continent, since it is nearer to it than to that of *Ingria*, upon which we now are. *Peter the First* caused to be marked out several Streets on this Side, as far as over-against *Nie-Scantz*, and even higher up; but there are but few Houses built yet; and I doubt they will scarce ever be filled up with them; for the Court seems to be much more pleased with residing at *Moscow*, than *Petersbourg*. After you leave Mr. *Shumacher's* House, you may go and see the Founderies, and the Forges, where they make Anchors and other Iron Works in the greatest Perfection, which stand at a small Distance from it; or you may pass to the high Road, which *Peter the First* designed to have extended as far as *Moscow*. Mr. *Farkinson*, a *Scots* Gentleman, drew him the mathematical Line for it, which was to cross that of *S. Alexander Newsky*. I returned that Way from Mr. *Shumacher's* to *Petersbourg*, whereof that Part which I left can be considered as only a vast empty Suburb, by reason it might contain three times as many more Houses according to the Plan. I stopt at the House of Mr. *Evans*, an *English* Merchant, of whom I received a great many Civilities. His House stands upon this Road about a Wreft from the City, near the great Canal. It is well built, and has a Garden belonging to it, which renders it very agreeable. There were found in digging it a great Number of the Heads of those poor People, who died in working at the Canal, and were buried upon the Spot wherever they fell down. I was informed, that, upon this Canal alone, there perished above 8000 Men. You cross this Canal by a Drawbridge, in the Place where it cuts the high Road of *S. Alexander Newsky*. This Bridge is above 50 Steps long, including the two Parts between which it is fixed. It is made in the *Dutch* Manner, as are all the others upon the several Canals. There is a little Ditch on each Side of this Road, with Lanthorns after the *English* Manner upon Posts, from 45, to 50 and 60 Steps from each other. The little Canal, which forms *Admiralty-Island*, cuts this Road about the middle of this Suburb, and you cross it by a Drawbridge almost as long as the other. This Road, which is every where equally broad and well-paved, ends at the Admiralty. On the left  
Hand

Hand is a Market-Place very much like that which I mentioned in *Trinity-Island*, with two Rows of Shops, but much lower and less, where they sell Old Cloaths, Furniture, Iron, Cordage, &c. to the highest Bidder, or by exposing them to Sale in the middle of the Market-Place, or carrying them about in their Hands, especially on Market-Days. On the right Hand is a square Place of above 1000 Paces in Circumference, in Part of which is kept the Hay-Market. Between this Place, and two Rows of Timber-Houses, one to the East, and the other North, and the back Parts of the Palaces of Brick above mentioned, to the West stand three Streets, almost as broad as the Road which I came through. I saw upon this Place the Knout given to eighteen Persons, and among them two young Women of above twenty Years Old, one of whom had already been knouted, the Executioner \* having used her the most cruelly. They were sent to spin and beat Hemp in the New Linnen-Manufactures, settled by *Peter the First*, about 3 Wrefts from hence, where there were the *Dutch* of both Sexes employed in instructing the *Russians* to make fine Cloth after their Manner. I owe this Justice to that Nation, that they have generally a very quick and solid Apprehension, and retain easily what ever is shewn them; but I must add this, that some Severity is necessary to them, much more than other People, which was the Observation of the late Czár, and he acted upon it in many Instances. These *Hollanders* were employed there in his Time; but now there is but one or two of the Women remaining.

Passing along the great Road of *S. Alexander Newsky*, S. W. you see on the left Hand another Place longer than the former, but not so broad; Part of which it faces, and is enclosed from N. to S. by a Row of fine Houses for the most part of Brick; among the latter is that of *M. le Fort*, Envoy of *Poland*, whose incomparable Civility I shall always remember with Satisfaction. His Lady likewise has all the Politeness and Affability imaginable, with all the Charms that can enter into the Composition of even a *Circassian* Beauty. This Place is enclosed on the the other side with a Church built of Timber, and very ordinary, and several Houses of Wood; between which and the Admiralty runs a fine well-paved Street, besides the Ditch, with which the latter is surrounded. To the East it is enclosed with some better Houses, and some very bad. Here were placed upon three Posts the Heads of three Commissaries for Victualling the Fleet, whom *Peter the First*,

\* I was told that his Predecessor was put out of his Office, and that he succeeded him upon the following Occasion. The Czár having condemned a *Russian* Nobleman to this Punishment, placed himself Incognito near enough to see the Executioner perform his Office; and, observing that he spared the Offender, he went to the Place of Execution, and taking the Knout in his Hand, he gave him several Strokes with all his Strength; and then the latter, who was Servant to the former Executioner, to give him 50 Strokes more with his whole Force; which he having done to his Majesty's Satisfaction, was promoted to his Master's Office.

*First*, caused to be beheaded after a severe Knout, for Male-Administration

The Admiralty is a vast Pile of magnificent and regular Buildings, with a beautiful Spire, that faces the great Road of *S. Alexander Newsky*: It is very much like the Arsenal at *Venice*, which I have mentioned in my first Volume. *Peter the First*, who was willing to imitate and introduce into his Empire whatever he found, saw, or heard, to be best and useful in other Parts of the World, procured the Plan of it, with Models of Vessels and Galleys, which are built in it. There are several large Yards well-paved; that, which is called the Admiralty-Yard, should rather be the Admiralty-Dock, because there are Vessels and Galleys built there. The chief Place where the latter are built, is called the Admiralty of Galleys: Of which I shall speak more particularly hereafter. I might say more properly, that there had been Ships and Galleys built there, for there were then none building, neither at the Admiralty of Galleys, neither at *Cronstadt*; though the Gazettes, and especially the Publick News-Papers at *London*, which they smile at in *Petersbourg*, represented them as built there by Hundreds at a Time. There were indeed sixteen Galleys begun before the Death of *Peter the First*, which were never finished for want of Money. I repeat this for the Reason suggested before. This Yard is enclosed with a very deep Ditch full of Water, with a Rampart. It is defended with a good Parapet; and the whole Admiralty is surrounded with a Rampart and a Ditch, and entered only by Drawbridges. In this Yard there are two great Magazines for every thing Necessary to the Building and Fitting-out of Ships, and an Arsenal for great and small Artillery. On the S. W. of this Yard, is a fine Church built of Brick, or which seemed to promise so when I saw it, for it was not then finished: And they proceeded as slowly in this, as in the other Works begun before the Death of *Peter the First*.

On the same Side along the *Neva*, almost as far as *Catherine-Hoff*, there is a great Number of Palaces of Brick and Stone, which belong to the Nobility, and Sea and Land-Officers; and the Sides of the River are covered with others upon the Island of *Vasilostroff*, among which that of Prince *Menzikoff* eclipses the rest, without excepting even the Imperial Palace, which altogether are inferior to this alone. The *Admiralty-Island*, and that of *Vasilostroff*, contain the most magnificent Buildings in all *Petersbourg*. I shall speak of the latter, after I have said something of what is most considerable in the former, and proceed even as far as *Orangyboon*, a Pleasure-House of Prince *Menzikoff* upon the Continent of *Ingria*, about 10 or 11 Wrefts from *Petersbourg*; and then to *Cronstadt* upon the Island of *Rethusary*, which lies almost opposite to it. Near the new Church in *Admiralty-Island* stands Prince *Menzikoff's* Inn, a long building of Timber, which has no manner of Mag-

U u

nificence



nificence about it, but consists of a great Number of low Rooms, with other Conveniences, for the Entertainment of Strangers. Behind these Palaces in *Admiralty-Island* stands the Rope-Yard, about 800 Steps long. There is but one broad well-paved Street, between the Courts or little Gardens belonging to these Palaces, and this long Building. On the same side with the Rope-Yard, upon the Bank of the little Canal, which forms the *Admiralty-Island*, stands the Forge of the Admiralty, in which are 32 Furnaces. Further down at the Extremity of the Island, upon the Bank of the River *Neva*, is the Admiralty of Gallies situated where the little Canal communicates by a little Branch with the River, and refunds the Water it borrowed from below the Imperial Summer-Palace, by two larger Branches, one about 200 Paces below this Admiralty, and the other about 300 Paces lower; so that it forms at the same Time a little Island with it.

The Admiralty of Gallies stands upon a Spot of Ground of a pretty good Extent, and cut into divers Canals upon the Bank of the *Neva*. It is a very large Building of Timber, except one House of Stone and Bricks, with a great Number of Rooms, Store-Houses, and Conveniences for the Workmen. I saw a great many Gallies there, but vastly inferior to those of the *Turks*, both in Bigness and Richness. The largest of them cannot carry above 300 Men and five Cannons.

Near the Mouth of the River *Neva* stands *Catharine-Hoff*, a Pleasure-House of the Empress *Catharine*, which is far from agreeable. It is built of Timber; the Apartments of it are low and narrow; the Garden is very much neglected, and the Overflowing of the River, to which it is exposed, often destroys the Gardener's Work, and will not suffer it to be put in any tolerable Order.

About 12 Wrefts lower, where the little River *Strella* falls into the Gulph of *Finland*, stands *Strella-Muse*, a Palace begun by the late Czar, but not finished on Account of his Death. He employed no less than 10 or 12000 Men to bring it, and its Garden, and Harbour to the Perfection I saw them in. The Water was so very low along that Shore, that the least Boat could not reach it. He ordered a Mole to be raised of Earth and Fascines near twenty Paces broad, and running out above 600 into the Sea; so that large Vessels could then come up to it safely. He caused several Canals to be dug, in order to drain the marshy and barren Ground, which lay under the Hill, which he chose to build his Palace upon. He ordered likewise this marshy Soil to be raised and enriched with new Earth, and planted upon it about 1000 Linden-Trees, ranged in Walks; of which, they say, not above 30 died; with several Fruit-Trees, which succeeded to his Wish. He was so well pleased with these happy Beginnings, that he resolved, instead of a Timber House, as *Catharine-Hoff* is, to build a magnificent Palace of Stone and Brick, according to the Plan which an able *Italian* gave him.

The

The Walls, and all the Mason's Work, were almost finished when he died; and by what I saw of it, when I passed that Way, it seemed likely to surpass, in Point of Greatness and Splendour, *Peters-Hoff*, of which I shall speak hereafter, if it had been continued; but since his Death there has been nothing done to it: Nay, Part of the Walls seems ready to fall for Want of being secured from the Injuries of the Weather.

About 13 Wrefts further S. W. stands *Peters-Hoff*, a very ordinary little House, which scarce deserves the Name of a Palace, but on account of the great Prince who built it. It is however partly built of Stone, and partly of Brick, with two Wings, and very regular, but little and low. The Situation of it is extremely agreeable upon an Eminence, and it has to the N. and as it were upon a Level with it, a large Garden in very good Order, with two Ponds and Water-Works, and Labyrinths, and Groves, &c. Under this Hill is another Garden washed to the S. by the Gulph, and extending a considerable Length from East to West. This Garden is much more richly adorned than the other, both by Water-Works and by several small neat Buildings of free Stone, like Marble, with Columns, Statues, Busts, Paintings; Temples, Summer-Houses, Arbours and Fountains. You descend from the Palace to this Garden by Steps cut very handsomely in the Hill near the Western Wing of the Palace; and on the right Hand you see a magnificent Grotto with a triple Cascade, from which runs a deep Canal into the Sea, by which Yachts may come up thither. There are several Water-Works disposed here and there, which make a very agreeable Appearance. Among others there is one in the middle of a Parterre near the Grot, which throws up Water from above an hundred Pipes, and forms a beautiful Pyramid. There is another not so large, which has the same Effect, over-against the Orangery. This Orangery is well-built, and finely adorned with Trees and Plants from foreign Countries. The Basin of *Eve* is very grand, and beautified with fine Statues, some of which are of Marble. The Figures, that belong to the other Water-Works, are of gilt Lead or Brass.

Among the finest Pieces of Architecture are *Montplaisir* and *Marli*\*, the Materials of which are very rich. *Montplaisir* is a little Palace, as they call it, very neat; it consists of a large Hall, one Gallery above, and with Appartments at both Ends, which are well contrived and proportioned. The Ceilings of the Hall and Gallery, and some of the Rooms are painted in *Fresco*; and they are adorned with some of the best Pieces of M. *Pilman*. Before this Palace lies a Terras, which affords an agreeable Prospect of the Gulph: It is terminated with a Balcony, which forms a kind of Gallery round the Parterre in the middle.

*Marli*

\* A Frenchman, who was employed there, and shewed me all that was to be seen, called these little Buildings by these Names.

*Marli* is a kind of Pavilion with an Iron-Balustrade, finely wrought and gilt, which forms a Balcony towards the top in the Manner of the *Kiosks* among the *Turks*. I was told, that when the Empress *Catherine* came to it with Prince *Menzikoff*, a little before I was at *Petersbourg*, the whole was illuminated even to the Gardens, and that there were above 4000 Lamps lighted on the Evening of her Arrival. They added, that the Prince ordered the same to be done at his House and Gardens of *Orangyboom*, when she honoured him with a Visit there.

*Orangyboom* is a magnificent Pleasure-House, or Palace, about nine Wrefts lower to the West of *Peters-Hoff*, on the same Continent. The other Palaces, which I have mentioned, are vastly inferiour to this in Splendour, and every other Respect. It is built of Stone and Brick, and situated upon an Eminence, as the two last mentioned. It has two Fronts, with two Wings to each, two to the N. and two to the S. The Southern Front is made in the Form of a Crescent, and faces the Sea, which lies about 500 Paces from it. As the Water is very low upon this Shore, the Prince has not only made a Bridge of Timber, that runs above 300 Paces into the Sea, for the Conveniency of bringing up his Yatches, and other small Vessels; but has also cut a Canal from this Bridge, as far as within 15 or 20 Paces of that Part of his Gardens that faces his Palace. He has built likewise a neat little House of Stone and Brick at the Head of the Canal; between which and that Part of his Garden there is only a common Road. The Front which faces the Gulph is adorned with a very long Colonnade from one end to the other: Between these Pillars and the Doors of the Apartments runs a Gallery the whole Length; the Extremities of which are terminated by two little Buildings of the same Form; each with a Cupola; and that on the West is a fine Chappel. Under this Gallery is a little Court well paved, from which you descend to a large Garden, wherein the useful and the pleasant are plentifully united. It extends from E. to W. The chief Gardener, who was a *Swede*, shewed me all that was to be seen both here and in the Palace; and very civilly offered me a Bed in his own Apartment. He told me that the Prince came very seldom to *Orangyboom*; but generally went to his Farm in the Neighbourhood of *Petersbourg*.

The Apartments of the Palace are very well contrived, and adorned with good Paintings, for the most of profane History, and with rich Furniture. On the other side, upon an Eminence, is a spacious green Court-Yard with a large Bason of Water in the middle, and enclosed on one Side with a Row of fine large Stables, and on the other with Lodgings for Servants, and the rest Walled about. Descending through the little Court towards the Sea-Shore you cross the Garden, and pass by a fine Bason with Water-Works, which throws the Water into a Cascade, and adorned with a great many Figures. Passing through this  
Garden

Garden you cross the great Road, from whence there is above 150 Paces to the Wooden Bridge. I embarked here for *Cronstadt*, which, as I observed, is opposite to it. As it was a Post-Day, I took the Opportunity of a Boat, which the Admiralty of *Cronstadt* sent for Letters. There is always one lying ready for all other Occasions from that Continent. As there was no Wind, the Watermen were obliged to row, and carried me in an Hour and half to the great Harbour marked 18, on Plate II. This Harbour can contain above 1100 Men of War.

It is enclosed, as may be observed, by a Mole, which is made of Timber, raised in the Water upon Piles, filled up with Fascines and other Materials, as that of *Strella-Muse*. It forms a fine Key, which runs from 3, which is another smaller Harbour, that can contain at least 100 Ships, to 4, which is the Harbour of Merchant Ships. This great Harbour is from 22 to 42 Foot deep. It was brought to the Condition wherein I saw it, in 4 Years Time. There is a great Number of Dolphins fixed here and there to fasten to Ships, as Horses in a Stable. They are called by that Name by the *English*. Mr. Lane, a Scots Gentleman, and Commander of a Squadron of Ships, fixed these Dolphins, and gave *Peter the First* a Plan of this Mole a little after the Battle of *Pultowa*; and executed it by his Order, and to his great Satisfaction. When it was finished, he told the Emperour pleasantly, 'Here is a good Stable ready; we want nothing now but the Horses'. His Majesty replied, 'Tis my Business to find them; we shall have them soon'. In Effect, he had already given Orders, and taken Measures for that Purpose: He had sent for Ship-wrights from *England* and *Holland*, and bought Ships ready built, and had built others at *Petersbourg*, and the other Ports of the *Baltick* which he had conquered. He had put in Practice the Knowledge he had gained in *England* and *Holland* in that Art, and he built several himself. He put a great many of his Subjects Apprentices to those Masters, in order to learn the Art. He drew a great many able Officers and Seamen from foreign Countries into his Service, by the generous Encouragements he gave them; who instructed the *Russians* to become as skilful as themselves. There were then in that Harbour about 20 Men of War, the largest of which were the *Frederickstadt*, a Ship of 96 Guns; the *Alexander*, and the *Engermerland*, built by Mr. Brown, an *Englishman*. *Peter the First* commanded this last in 1716, when the united Fleets of *England* and *Denmark* joined his at *Copenhagen*, and put themselves, by Order of their Masters, under his Command, as Admiral in chief. Almost all the Ships which I saw in the Harbour wanted Masts, and were in bad Order. One of the principal Officers of the Fleet, of whom I received a great many Civilities during the 3 Days which I staid at *Cronstadt*, told me very freely, that the *English* and *Danes* had no reason to be alarmed, since the Czarina was not able to fit out 15 Men of War for 3 Months.

X x

In

In short, a great many of the Ships were rotten at the Bottom, for want of being taken care of; and even some of those, that had never been at Sea. There was but a small Number of Sailors aboard; for the greatest Part of the Foreigners had quitted the Service. I did not see 20 *English*. The Magazines were almost all empty. The only Passage for Vessels of any Size is 5, between 6, which is the Castle of *Cronstot*\*, and 7, which is the Cittadel†; for the Water is so low in other Places, that it has but 4 or 5 Feet Depth towards the Continent; whereas at 5, it is deep enough for the largest Vessels. There was at least 200 Cannons in the Castle, and a great many more in the Cittadel; and upon Occasion they could place above 1000. These Cannons are of Brass and Iron, but the greatest Part of Iron, and as serviceable as the other. They reckoned 970 Cannons on the Batteries, No. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14. The Mole of the Harbour for Merchant-Ships is raised in the Water upon Piles, as the other two Harbours for Men of War: It is very large and deep. No. 15, is a new Canal begun by *Peter the First*, but not finished, though far advanced, when he died; since when little or nothing has been done to it. It was designed to extend from No. 6, to the Sea, which is about a Wreft distant from it; and to No. 17, where Docks were to be made, which were but just begun. This Canal is 22 Feet deep, and about 100 Feet broad, where it was finished. It was reckoned that it would have been two Wrefts in Length, including the two Branches: The Docks were designed to be made in such a Manner, as to be emptied of the Water in an Hour's Time, by means of a Wind-mill. No. 18, is a little House, which Mr. *Lane*, the Commander, built to lodge in, while he was superintending the Workmen. It is raised in the Water upon Piles, as the Moles are, and covered with a Cupola: There are four Rooms in it. I was told, that the Czar visited that Gentleman, when he came to *Cronstadt*, in order to see how the Works advanced; and called for a Dram, in which he pledged the other after the *English* Custom, and called him Landlord.

No. 19, 20, and 21, are Magazines built of Brick, well cemented for Gunpowder; 22 and 23 are other Magazines of Timber, for Cordage, Sails, Provisions, and for every thing proper for the Fitting-out of Ships. I went into the latter, and found them, as I observed above, quite empty. The Houses of *Cronstadt* are almost all of Timber, and very low; the Streets are very ill paved; but those marked No. 24, near the Canal, are of Brick, and very neat, 2 or 3 Stories high; and the

\* *Cronstot* is not much above a Cannon-shot from *Retbusary*, situate upon a Sand-Bank, which is encreased by a strong Current; so that it is no Wonder if it has been represented differently by others before me. This Castle is built upon Piles, with Fascines and Stones, &c. for its Foundation. It is like a large Tower, and surrounded with three Galleries, one above another, upon which the Cannons are placed.

† The Cittadel is an Octagon, built very strong upon firm Land.

the Streets there well paved. The late Czar, *Peter the First*, had a Design to put all the Town into Canals, as in *Holland*; and ordered a little before his Death, that they should build in that Manner; particularly the Merchants and others, whose Circumstances could afford it; and that every Person, without Exception, should pave before his Door, as at *Petersbourg*. He had built there already a very fine large House; the Apartments, designed for his Imperial Majesty, were not yet quite finished. There was a very large Bason begun to be dug in the Court-Yard; and he designed to open a Communication between the new Canal and the Bason, for a Passage to the Yachts and other Vessels, to bring all Necessaries thither. Prince *Menzikoff* was the first, who built here with any Magnificence: His House is all of Stone and Brick; it has two Stories raised upon large Halls, which he let out for Magazines; and his Majesty and he lodged in the Apartments, when they resided at *Cronstadt*: I should have said their Majesties, the Emperor and Empress, and he; for they three were inseparable: Nay, the Czar always acted as the Subject, and *Alexander Menzikoff* as the Sovereign; for the latter enjoyed all the Splendour and Magnificence, or Roses of the Crown; while the former reserved only to himself the Cares and Thorns of it. This House well deserves the Name of a Palace; it has two noble Wings, which give it all the Appearance and Grandeur of one.

The *Russian Church*, which stands not far from it, is one of the most beautiful that I saw in the whole Country. Mr. *Lane* obliged me to lodge at his House, and introduced me to Admiral *Sivers*, and other principal Officers of the Fleet, who shewed me all the Civility imaginable: The Admiral offered me his Chaise and Boat, to view the Island and the Harbours. The Island is sandy, and for the most part very barren. Mr. *Lane* spoke so much in praise of the Copper, Iron, and Steel-Works at *Sisterbeck*, which are performed by means of Water-Mills and Engines, that I had the Curiosity to see them as I returned to *Petersbourg* by Water, which is the shortest Way; for it is 4 or 5 Wrefts more by Land. These Works consist chiefly of small Arms, as Guns, Pistols, Swords, Knives, Scissars, &c. These Water-Engines, and the Forges are very like those I saw in *Sweden*, of which I have given a full Account in my second Volume; but the Works at *Sisterbeck* are brought to much greater Perfection than there; for they are better finished and polished. The Workmen are almost all *Russians*; so that that Nation has learned of others to excel in their own Arts. I saw there among other Things Pistols, adorned with Brass, Sword-Hilts as neatly made as can be seen in any other Country. The Bellows and Hammers are moved by the Stream of the little River of *Sisterbeck*, which runs from the North of *Finland Carelia*, and falls into  
the

the Gulph of *Finland* about 13 Wrefts below *Petersbourg*, almost at the same Distance as the *Strella* falls into it from *Ingria*.

I shall end this Chapter, as I promised, with some Account of the Island of *S. Basil* and the Monastery of *S. Alexander Newsky*. The Island of *S. Basil*, or *Wasibostroff*, as it is generally called here, is not so long, but broader than the *Admiralty-Island*. *Peter the First* made a Present of it to Prince *Menzikoff*, who built a Palace in it, which is the chief Ornament, or rather made a little, but magnificent, Town By the Number of Buildings of Stone and Brick which he erected here. I shall not enter into a particular Description of this Palace, which would fill a whole Chapter as long as this; but I shall pass through it as cursorily as that of *Orangyboom*. The Front is very noble, and the Entrance with a double Pair of Steps very grand. The Ornaments of Architecture and Painting are in a fine Taste, and very agreeable; the Halls between the Appartments, the Antichambers, the Rooms, and Galleries, are perfectly well contrived. Every Thing is grand and well proportioned; the Furniture is very rich, or at least was so; for I suppose it was seized after the Master was banished by *Peter the Second*. The Hall, in which the Entertainments and Balls were given, is of a prodigious Length, and of a Breadth and Height proportionable. On both Sides are Paintings extremely admired by *Connoisseurs*; and among others the Battle of *Pultowa* with the other chief Successes of the *Russians* over the *Swedes*. Every Thing was agreeable to the Beauty and Grandeur of this Palace, and a vast Quantity of Plate was to be seen in it.

I was at *Petersbourg* when the Prince received a new Supply of Plate from *England* to the Value of 6000 l. *Sterl.* What he had before was much greater in Value than this, with respect to the Weight and intrinsic Worth of it; but the Workmanship of the new Plate exceeded the other vastly in Elegance and Price. Some said, that he designed it as a Present to the Empress *Catharine*; others that she made a Present of it to him. However it is certain, that when this Plate was brought to Prince *Menzikoff's* Palace, her Majesty went to see it, and admired it prodigiously: She supped with him likewise, and was served with it at Table, and staid there till Midnight. The Prince has built a fine Church of Stone before this Palace, and is separated from it but by a Canal. The Steple is very noble, and has a Chime in it. What I observed most considerable in this Church, and even contrary to the *Greek Religion*, was Images of Wood carved. I never saw before any Thing but Paintings in the other Churches either in *Russia* or *Greece*. There is also a fine Pulpit in it, which was a Thing very uncommon before the Pontificat of *Peter the First*, that is, before that Emperour had established his Synod, which made an Order for that Purpose.

The long and spacious Court-Yards, surrounded with Buildings and Stables for 400 or 500 Horses, which run behind with the Gardens of  
great



great Extent, and well disposed and enriched with every Thing that can please the Taste or the Eye, are a very noble Addition to this Palace. Besides which there are a great many other Houses, that the Prince built to let out. That of his Master of the Horse may be reckoned among the finest in all *Petersbourg*, and perhaps exceeds them: It is covered with Plates of Iron, and is three Stories high; and is inferior to his own Palace in nothing but Largeness and rich Furniture.

I enquired here after Count *John Sapieha*\*, the present Head of the illustrious Family of that Name; but I understood from his Son's Governour, that he was then in *Poland*. The young Count came thither to marry a Daughter of Prince *Menzikoff*; the same, I believe, who was espoused to *Peter the Second* the Year following. The Czarina had made the Father Velt-Marshal at the Recommendation of Prince *Menzikoff*, to whom he had promised his whole Interest for the Succession to the Duchy of *Courland*. The Count had very great Occasion for this Post as his Circumstances were much reduced by ill Oeconomy; for he always spent more than his Revenues. I knew nothing of that Misfortune, nor of his ill Oeconomy, when I lent him at *Bender*, in 1713, 100 Ducats; Mr. *Jefferys* was ignorant of the same, who lent him 1000 Ducats more. We never received any Returns for it, and probably never shall: However, I thank God that the Loss was no greater. I wish it were the only or the greatest Loss I had suffered in obliging pretended Friends, or trusting those, who, under the Cloak of Friendship, have imposed upon me. I have at least this Satisfaction, that I took such proper Measures, during my Travels for near 32 Years, that I never borrowed a Penny, nor owed one, which I could not pay upon Demand. The Count gave me a Bill of Exchange upon the Governour of *Rawitz*, a little Town of his Dependence; but the Governour, instead of paying it, told me, that the Count owed him Money, and that this Town was already mortgaged for more than it was worth. I writ to the Count 20 Letters at least about the Affair, but never received any Answer. I got my Friends in *Poland* and *Russia* to speak to him of it, who answered them sometimes, that he had given, at other Times that he would give, Orders for the Payment of it. I told him in my last Letter from *Poland*, when I heard that he was returned to *Russia*, that I remembered that he called me his dear Friend, when he had occasion for my Purse; but that his not answering any of my Letters, and his not executing his pretended Orders, made me fear that I had lost my Money and his Friendship together. He made no Reply to this any more than to my former; but if he ever shall pay me, which is very improbable, I will do him the Justice to publish it in my next Volume, with all proper Acknowledgment. His Son had a very neat Appart-

Y y

ment

\* I have mentioned him in my Account of *Bender*, and observed what befel him after he left the King of *Sweden's* Party.

ment in Prince *Menzikoff's* Palace; and was made Chamberlain by the Empress, and appeared in a very handsome Manner.

*Peter the First*, being charmed with these Buildings, which gave a Lustre to *Petersbourg*, resolved to build upon this Island as it were another great and noble Town, or at least to enlarge what the Prince had begun with such Magnificence. I was assured likewise, that he designed to give it the Name of *Alexandria*, \* in Compliment to his Favourite, for what he had already done; and, not thinking it reasonable, that the Prince should bear the whole Expence of it, and yet not willing to contribute any Thing himself but his own Good-Will or Command for the carrying it on, he ordered therefore divers Boyars and Noblemen, whom he knew to be rich, and who were represented so by Prince *Menzikoff*, not only to build Houses of Brick, but to live in them themselves with their Families, or at least that some of their married Children with their Families should inhabit them. And this he commanded under very severe Penalties, and Fines. He prescribed also not only the Number of Houses to be built, but also the Materials and Form of them, and marked the Places to build upon; with the Length and Breadth of the Streets, and the Breadth and Depth of the Canals, which he ordered to be dug, as in *Holland*, in the middle of most part of the Streets †. I was in Company with some of those, whom he obliged to build upon *Admiralty-Island*, who had, they said, fine Houses with good Fruit-Gardens and Lands about *Moscow*, the Income of which would maintain them with their Families very amply and agreeably; whereas now they are compelled to come and live under a very unhealthy and disagreeable Climate, where they could get nothing, but what was excessively dear, and which they must procure from a great Distance. They gave me to eat, among other delicious Fruit from those Gardens, transparent Apples of an exquisite Taste. They added, that they were not only obliged to abandon their former Estates, but that they durst not return to them during his Reign, but for a short Time, and then only upon real and pressing Occasions; and they could not obtain Leave of him even for this without several Months Sollicitation.

The Emperour also obliged the Nobility to build upon *Wasilostroff* at their own Cost, a large House with an Observatory of Stone and Brick, for academical Exercises, and lodging the Professours, &c. If this Building, which was then very much advanced, is finished, it must be one of the noblest of the kind in all *Europe*. The Observatory is raised very high above it with a double Cupola; and at the top of it was fixed the famous Globe of *Gotorp*. This Globe was made upon the Model of *Tycho Brahe*,

\* Prince *Menzikoff's* Christian Name is *Alexander*.

† I measured some of them, which were traced out and begun without any Houses built on the Sides. They were near a 1000 Paces long, and from 30 to 50 or more broad: And the Canals, begun before the Death of *Peter the First*, were some of them 15 Paces broad.

*Brabe*, and is so prodigiously large, that above 10 Persons may sit commodiously round a Table within it. The Place for the Observation of the Stars is contrived as that in the Tower of *Copenhagen*, called *Uraniburgh*, which I have mentioned in my second Volume; and it is near as high as that Tower. The Academy was held in the mean Time, as I observed before, in the House of Baron *Shaffiroff*. The Members of it are all Persons of distinguished Merit and Learning. The Empress *Catharine* continued the same Encouragements to them, as the late Czar had given.

Mr. *Nicholas del' Isle* had his Apartment quite furnished in the new House. He is famous for his perfect Knowledge in Astronomy and other excellent Qualifications. He is a Member also of the Royal Academy at *Paris*, and the Royal Society at *London* and *Berlin*. According to the Establishment of *Peter the First*, confirmed by *Catharine the First*, he was to read upon Astronomy: His Hour was not then fixed, being but just then come from *France*; and it was thought, that he would not read any Lectures till the new House was finished.

Mr. *Frederick Schesler* was to teach there, and he had already begun in the old House, Arithmetick, Opticks, and Architecture, from Seven till Eight of the Clock in the Morning, and from Two to Three in the Afternoon.

Mr. *James Herman*, a Member of all the Royal Societies at *London* and *Berlin*, and chief Professour of the Mathematicks, was to read upon Algebra, from Eleven to Twelve in the Morning.

Mr. *Peter Kohl*, Professour of Rhetorick was to read Lectures not only upon the *Greek* and *Latin* Eloquence, but also upon *Latin* and *German* Poetry.

Mr. *John Beckingstein* upon publick Law, and modern History, from One to Two in the Afternoon.

Mr. *Michael Burger*, Dr. of Physick, upon Chymistry.

Mr. *John du Virnoy*, Professour of Anatomy and Chirurgery, from Two to Three.

Mr. *George Buffinger*, upon the Practise and Theory of Physick, from Four to Five.

Mr. *Christian Gross*, upon Moral Philosophy, from Five to Six.

Mr. *Frederick Najer*, Professour extraordinary of the Mathematicks upon the Elements of them, according to the Rule of *Wolffius*.

Mr. *Daniel Bernoulli*, upon the Principles of the Mathematicks that are necessary to the Theory of Physick, from Seven to Eight in the Morning.

Mr. *Nicholas Bernoulli*, Professour of the Mathematicks, upon the Use and Application of them in general, from Eight to Nine.

Mr. *Theophilus Sigefrid* upon the *Greek* and *Roman* Antiquities, as Medals, Monuments of old *Latium*, &c.

Mr

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

Mr. *Christian Martini* was named for Professor of Rational and Metaphysical Philosophy.

Mr. *John Buxbaum* was to read upon Botany in Summer, and Natural History in Winter.

Mr. *George Gessel* was to teach the Art of Drawing and Painting, from Eleven to Twelve in the Morning, and from Four to Five in the Afternoon.

Mr. *Christopher Marsellus* was to explain Civil Architecture, from Ten to Eleven in the Morning, and from Three to Four in the Afternoon.

Mr. *Conrard Osner* was to teach that Part of Sculpture, which is necessary to those who learn Architecture.

The Imperial Library \* under the Care of Mr. *Shumacher* was to be opened twice a Week, viz. on *Tuesdays* and *Fridays* from One of the Clock till Four.

There were also ten Regents or School-Masters appointed to teach not only the *Latin*, *Greek*, *German*, and *French* Tongues, but also Arithmetick, Geometry, Geography, &c. which formed a Kind of College divided into five Classes. The Days of Teaching were *Monday*, *Wednesday*, *Thursday*, and *Saturday*. In short, every Thing was regulated in the best Manner. They had caused Letters to be cast in *Holland*, for Printing in the *Latin*, *German*, and other *European* Languages; from which I have seen very good and elegant Impressions. But I perceive I have been insensibly led into a more particular Account than I proposed. It is Time now to speak something to the Monastery of *S. Alexander Newsky*. The Beauty of the Situation with the Pleasantness of the Road thither, with the Civility of the Abbot, induced me to go more than once thither. I went four Times: The first was two or three Days after my Arrival at *Petersbourg*, with M. and Madam *le Fort*, whom I mentioned above. The Abbot received us in the most obliging Manner imaginable; he gave us a noble Collation of sweet Meats, Wine and other Liquors. He was a *Servian* by Birth; and his Mother than lived at *Buda*. He made us drink some of the Wine that came from that City, which she sent him; I was not unacquainted with it, having passed that Way twice; it was very good. He spoke a little *Turkish* and vulgar *Greek*, and very good *Latin*. He conversed with me sometimes in one Language and sometimes in another. His Habit was black, and like that of the *Caloieros*, or *Greek* Monks, mentioned in my first Volume; with this Difference only, that it was of Silk and lined with Purple Sattin. He wore about his Neck a Chain of Gold, from which hung a Gold Cross adorned with six fine Emeralds, and several little Diamonds. He lived, or at least received Company,

in

\* There was in the old House, a Part of the Library for the Use of the Academy.

in a neat House separated to the South from the Monastery by a large Place. There is a very handsome Garden belongs to it: The Monastery, if it is finished, will be the largest, the best built, and the most magnificent in all *Russia*. It is sufficient to give a grand Idea of it, to say that Signor *Fresini* formed the Plan of it; and several other good Architects have been employed upon it. There is yet but half of it finished as far as No. 1. in Plate III. where there was a noble Church begun: That Church was designed to be in the Center of the whole Building, and the Building to be as it is represented in that Plate. But if there are no more Workmen put upon it, than were then, it will not be finished these 20 Years. Divine Service however was performed in the mean Time in another Church, No. 2. on the West \* of the Monastery. It is built for the most part of Timber, but very elegantly. There is also a Chappel in the Body of the Building, which is a Master-Piece of Architecture, and beautifully adorned. In this Chappel are deposited the Ashes of *S. Alexander Newsky*. They are inclosed in a little Coffin covered with crimson Velvet, adorned with Embroidery of Gold, with Laces and Fringes of the same in the Corners. This Coffin is Placed on the right Hand, or the Epistle-Side, of the Altar. A little lower on the same Side stands the Throne, upon which *Peter the First* sat, when he canonized him. It is covered with the same sort of Silk, with an Imperial Crown embroidered in Gold above it: It is large enough for two Persons to sit upon. The Empress it is said sat by him on the Day of the Ceremony; and I was informed, that as often as she visited this Monastery after the Czar's Death, which she did very frequently, and assisted at divine Service, which was performed then in that Chappel, she used to sit upon it as before. Prince *Menzikoff*, who accompanied her generally, sat on an Elbow-Chair at her right Hand. The first Time I saw her abroad, I was told she was going thither; she wore about her Neck the Order of *S. Catharine*, hanging by a white Ribbon. The Distance I saw her from would not permit me to see any thing but the Ribbon with a Cross set with precious Stones: They told me that the Image of that Saint was enamelled in the Center, with a Device on the Reverse. With respect to her Person, she seemed to me quite altered from what I saw her upon the Banks of the River *Pruth* in 1711. She had lost her florid Complexion; and was become pale and tawney; her Face seemed much fuller, as well as her Body; but this full Habit of Body appeared to threaten a Dropsy.

The Monastery is built of Stone and Brick; what is finished of it is well contrived and executed; the Refectory is one of the largest I ever saw, it is above 50 Paces long and 26 broad: There is an Hall, or Gallery, above of the same Form, and almost of the same Extent, and high

Z z

\* The Engraver through a Mistake placed this Church at the East, which stands on the West in the Plan which I gave him; and so has reversed the whole Buildings.

high in Proportion. The Cells are very neat; there were 65 Monks besides the Abbot. According to the Regulation of *Peter the First*, no Person could be admitted without being examined, and having given Proofs of his Learning and good Behaviour. He had taken the best qualified from the other Monasteries, which he had suppressed and converted into Hospitals or other Uses. He designed to encrease them to double the Number, when the Monastery should be finished, with another Refectory like the former: But these Monks could not abandon the Custom, which prevails too generally in that Nation, of drinking to Excess, as I shall observe hereafter. The Abbot had the Reputation of being a good Divine and excellent Mathematician. *Peter the First* had employed him with Success upon divers Occasions which related to the Church and State. He had promoted him to this Post a little before his Death. That Emperour gave the Archbishoprick of *Novogrod* to his Predecessour, *Theodosius*, who was esteemed one of the most learned Divines of that Country, and at the same Time the greatest Enemy to Superstition. This latter was a Qualification that recommended a Man in his Reign, but not under the Empress *Catharine's*. It drew upon her too many powerful Enemies from the Clergy, especially the Monks, who endeavoured to gain the Superiority after she came to the Throne. She feared them, it is said, though she did not love them; and she restored them a great Part of their Revenues and Priviledges. Prince *Menzikoff*, who loved them as well as feared them, persuaded her not only to depose that Prelate, but even to degrade him by the Synod, and to confine him in one of the most distant Monasteries, where they say he died of the ill Usage he received from the Monks. Prince *Menzikoff* declared himself his mortal Enemy; and this was his greatest Crime. He did not desist from persecuting him, till he had procured the Sentence of Degradation and Banishment from the Synod. The chief Articles of Impeachment, which he brought against him in the Name of the Clergy, were these:

‘ That he had abused the Authority which *Peter the First* had given him; that he had defaced, destroyed, and removed the Images of Saints from several Churches; that he had preached against their Miracles, and the Worship due to them, &c.’ Those, which he brought in the Name of the Empress, were these:

‘ That he had practised clandestinely with disaffected Persons, in order to overthrow the Establishment of the late Emperour with regard to the Succession; that he had held Discourses upon several Occasions, tending to represent the Government of her Imperial Majesty as an Usurpation, and to excite her Subjects to a Rebellion.’ There was only the Count *Tolstoy*, who ventured to speak for the Accused: He said, That, with regard to the first Articles of the Impeachment, he had done nothing but according to the Orders, and not contrary to the Intentions, of the late Emperour; and, with respect to the latter Articles, there

there was no other Proof of them than the bare Word of the Prince. But he believed these Points, or seemed at least to do so, upon his Word. All that the Count said, served only for a Pretence to the Prince to represent him to the Empress as one of the Disaffected, who would perhaps have disgraced him who was very far from a Friend to the Prince, if she had not reflected, that *Peter the First* had recommended him to her very particularly a little before his Death, as the most able Person for the Post he was in; and if she had not been apprehensive of some fatal Revolution from the *Russian Nobility*. The Prince, who foresaw that his Fall would infallibly involve himself, did not judge it proper to urge the Affair any further; but waited for an Opportunity more favourable to revenge himself, as I observed above.

When I went the second Time to the Monastery, I found Prince *Menzikoff*, who dined there, and was still at Table with the new Archbishop of *Novogrod*, one of his Creatures. He was sitting between that Prelate and the Abbot, with his blue Ribbon and S. *Andrew's* Cross, as it is represented at (E) Plate I, and at N<sup>o</sup>. 3, Plate III. under the Imperial Arms. The Archbishop was dressed in the same Habit as the Abbot, and wore a Cross like his, with this Difference only, that there was but an Emerald in the Center, and all the rest were Diamonds and Sapphires. I saw the Dessert served up to these three illustrious Persons. As I entered the Monastery, there sat in a Room near the Hall in which they dined, twelve Monks round a Table, with Bottles and Glasses, and Music-Books in their Hands. One of the Monks, who had seen me with the Abbot the first Time that I went thither, came but and desired me to go in; which I did, to observe their Manner of singing. They began with singing Hymns to the Honour of God and S. *Alexander*; then Songs in Praise of the Empress and Prince *Menzikoff*; drinking by Turns. I had scarce sat down before the Monk, who introduced me, presented me with a large Bumper, which I drank to their Health. I had no sooner drank this but he gave me a second, and then a third; which he so often and so quickly repeated, that I begged my Introducer, who was at the same Time my Interpreter, and spoke tolerable good *Latin*, to desire the Gentlemen to give me Leave to serve myself, as is the Custom of my Country. He did so; but one of them, who had a Glass full for me, being drunk, threw it in his Face, upon which I rose to go away, desiring my Interpreter to pardon me for the Rudeness I had been the Occasion of. He replied, That it was nothing, and begged of me to stay, promising in the Name of the whole Company not to insist upon my drinking more than I thought proper. The drunken Monk left the Room at the same Time, and

meeting

\* The *Russian* Prelates are generally chosen out of the Monasteries, as among the Eastern *Greeks*, and never from the married Priests. The latter cannot marry a second Wife, unless they renounce the Priesthood. These Prelates do not marry at all, as I have observed some where else.

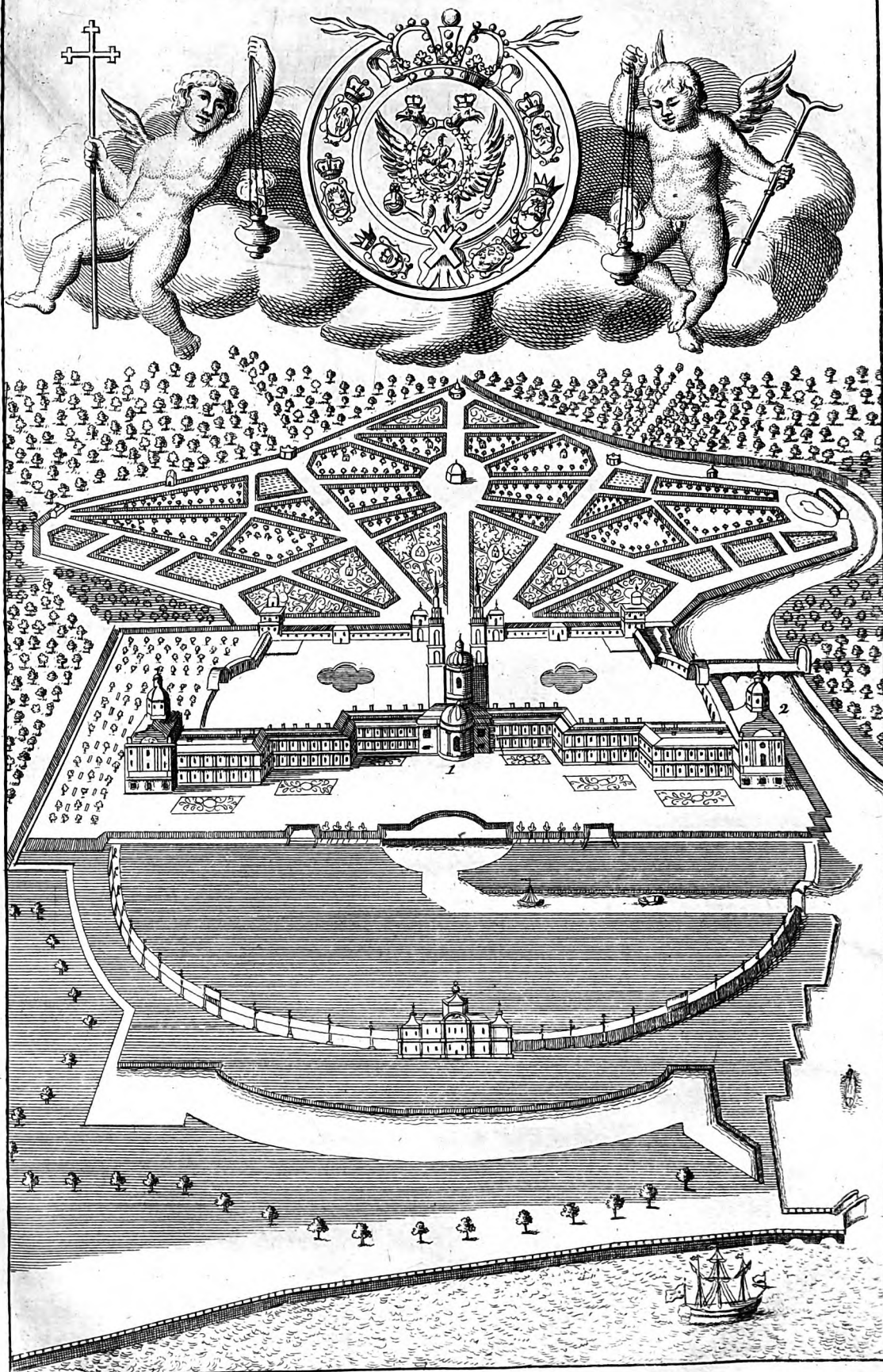


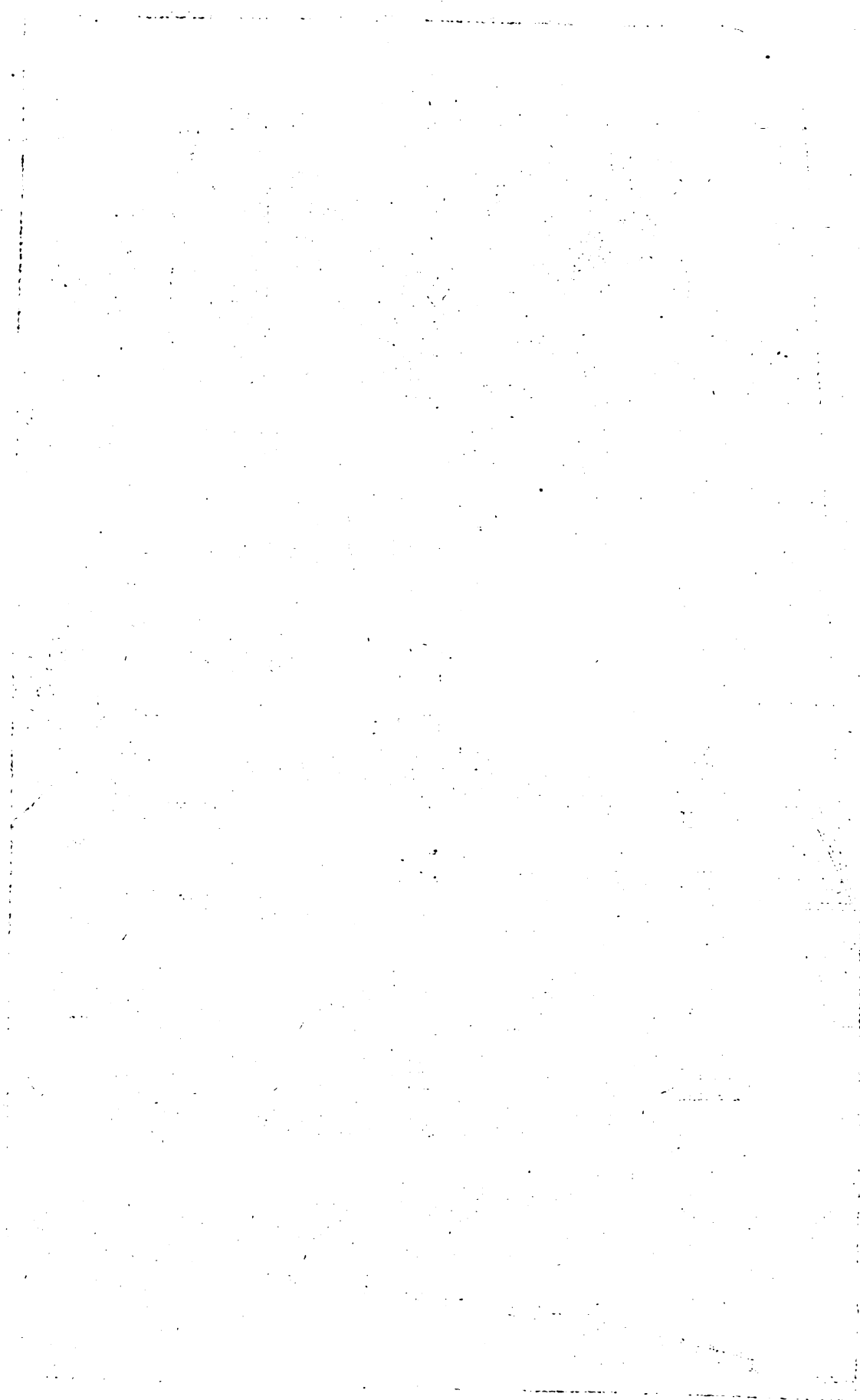
meeting one of the Prince's Servants at the Door, pusheh him with his Elbow so violently, that he threw him down and fell himself. As he could not rise again of himself, two of the strongest of our Company took him each of them by the Arm, and so carried him to his Cell, where they left him upon the Bed. It was but 20 Minutes after that two others, who were as drunk as he, began a little Battle with Books, striking each other by Turns. Not having the Curiosity to see the Conclusion of it, I thanked my Introducer, and desired him to let me withdraw, assuring him I was obliged to wait immediately upon Count *Rabutin*; and indeed I had engaged to spend the Evening with him. He let me go, upon Condition that I would come and see him again. I took the Opportunity of that Contest to retire without any Opposition. I kept my Promise, and paid him a Visit a few Days after in his Cell. He was a Man of Genius, and had studied very hard.

About a Month after my Arrival at *Petersbourg* I resolved to return to *England*, and to see *Poland*, *Silesia*, *Brandenbourg*, &c. in my Way. It is not so easy to go out of the *Russian* Dominions, as to come in. There is a Necessity of having Pass-Ports, which are not to be obtained without long Sollicitation, and several Petitions. A Gentleman, who had some Affairs at *Petersbourg*, or the Curiosity to see that City, and was recommended to the *Polish* Envoy, had an Inclination to go to *Poland* with me. We had resolved to purchase a Post-Chaise together; but he was obliged to stay behind, not being able to procure a Pass-Port for himself. He was still at *Petersbourg*, when I arrived at *Grodno*. He was delayed from one Week and one Day to another, as was the general Custom of that Country, without alledging any Reason for it, during the Reign of *Peter the First*. That Emperour kept a great many Persons their whole Lives in the Country, especially those who had settled there, or were employed in his Service. He took care to pay the latter but Part of their Salaries, to prevent any Temptation of departing without a Pass-Port. With regard to myself, I had the good Fortune to be in Favour with *Baron Osterman*; who, besides many other Civilities which he shewed me, not only procured me one as soon as I asked for it, but gave me also an Imperial Command for Post-Horses. Count *Rabutin* gave me Letters of Recommendation to Count *Wratislaw*, Minister Plenipotentiary from the Court of *Vienna* to that of *Poland*; whom I then had not the Honour to know, further than by his having subscribed to my Travels, which were then in the Press.

As I left *Petersbourg*, I formed the Plan of my Road, which was to pass through *Ingria* as far as *Narva*, and so along the Sea-Coasts to *Riga*; then to pass through *Semigallia*, *Poland*, *Silesia* and *Brandenbourg*; and so to *Holland*, and thence by Sea to *England*.

The







The TRAVELS of  
*A. de la MOTRAIE.*

CHAP. IV.

*A Journey to Poland; Remarks on Narva, Revel, Pernaw, Grodno, Warsaw, and other principal Places on that Road.*



HAVING, on the Day of my Departure, dined at Count *Rabutin's*, I set out for Mr. *Evans's*, an *English* Merchant, (whom I have already mentioned in the Rout to *S. Alexander Newsky*,) who received me very kindly; and not only entertained me well that Night, but also perswaded me to take his own Chaise and two Horses, with one of his Servants to conduct me to the next Post.

About a Wrest from Mr. *Evans's* I quitted the fine paved Road, to get into a sandy one, which was tolerably good to *Tamkoy*, a great Village in which the first Post-House is. The Road from this Village to the second Post-House, which is twenty Wrefts distant, is the worst I ever met with; my Horse and that of the Postillion's, were several times up to their Knees in Clay, and if they had not been very strong, we should not have been able to have performed the Journey. We met several Waggon's fixed in the Clay, whose Horses, though lashed and whipped unmercifully, yet were as motionless as Statues. The Night was pretty much advanced, when we arrived at the second Post-House, which was so wretched a Place, that it does not deserve the Name of a Cottage, having, instead of Tiles, only green Turfs and Brambles. Here we met with ten or twelve drunken Soldiers, stretched on such Benches as I have mentioned in the preceding Chapter; and which are the only Beds to be found in this Province, as well as in *Livonia*, Cities and Towns excepted. I was desirous to continue my Journey, but some Officers having taken up all the Post-Horses, to go to *Petersbourg*, and other Places, I found I should be obliged to wait their Return, and then

A a a

take

take them fatigued, as they of course must be. The Mistress of the House, a young Woman she had with her, and a Boy, (being all the Family) were retired to Rest; the two former lay in a Corner behind the Oven; and the Boy in the Stable where my Postillion had put up his Horses, who returned to me for his Dring-Gelt; which is the Present made to Postillions, and so called in *Dutch*. I asked him, how far it was to next Post? He told me, it was 23 Wrefts, and that the Road was better. I proposed to him to carry me thither; to which he seemed unwilling to agree, forasmuch as Post-Masters never permitted the same Horses to ride two Posts. As I understood but a few of the most necessary terms of the Language, I could not pretend to reason with him; but made him sensible of the Imperial Order I had to take Horses wherever I found them; and that since there were no other but his to be had, I must use my Authority, which would sufficiently justify him; I promised to defray their Charges, also to pay as much for them as for fresh Horses; \* and a double Dring-Gelt for himself: Thus I gained his Consent; and then ordered him to call for any Liquor the House could afford, and refresh himself, and that I would pay for it; whereupon he roused up the Landlady (who had fallen a Sleep, soon after she had told us, that there were no Horses to be had) and desired her to bring him some Brandy, which she did, and layed some Fuel (with which the Country abounds) on the Fire, and gave me a little Stool whereon I sat to smook a Pipe; which having done, we mounted our Horses; but the Night was so dark, that we could see neither the Heavens, nor the Earth. My Hurry was not so great, as to run the Risque of falling into a Precipice, and breaking my Neck; I therefore resolved to wait for Day in the first Village we should come to; and having arrived at a very large one, about a Wrest and a half from that miserable House, we had left, we there baited. I made the Postillion buy me some Straw, whereon I slept very soundly the remaining Part of the Night, in the House of one of the Inhabitants. There was in this Village a Beer and Brandy-House, belonging to Prince *Menzikoff*; where (as my Landlord told me in the Morning) my Postillion had past the Night; and I suppose, spent the ten Coupiques I had given him upon our Arrival; having sent for him, we got on Horseback at five of the Clock in the Morning. At the third Stage the Horses did not prove so good as my last Postillion's did, for though the Road was plain and dry (except some low and marshy Passes) we could not ride above 54 Wrefts that Day, and did not arrive till nine at Night at *Ophilia*, which is the fourth Post. Yet an Accident, which had like to have cost me my Vallice, obliged me to ride

\* Post-Charges are very reasonable in *Russia*, provided you have an Order from any Minister of State, or Governor to take Horses for that Purpose; for then you pay but one Coupique or one and a half *per* Wrest for each Horse.

N. B. a Coupique is the hundredth-Part of an *English* Crown; and a Wrest is the third Part of an *English* Mile.

ride 57; for the new Postillion, having tyed it carelessly to his Saddle, and making some stay after me (though I know not for what Reason) I advanced, believing he would immediately follow me; and he, in order to overtake me, galloped so hard, that my Vallice dropt without being perceived by him, till he came up with me; I at first sight of him missed it, and returned with him as fast as our Horses could carry us; and rid a long Wrest before we found it. *Ophilia* is a smaller, but a more pleasant Village than that wherein I baited, with a good Church; and a new and handsome Post-House, built by Prince *Menzikoff's* Orders; who (I was told) resolved to have such Houses built for all the Posts of *Ingria*. Here I had a boiled Hen for Supper, and some Straw for my Bed; with which I was very well pleased; it being the only House from *Petersbourg* to *Riga*, (excepting in Cities) where I had any Reason so to be. The Prince had also in this Village, a Publick-House for Beer and Brandy. The Horses I took here pleased also. Three or four Wrests from thence, I entered a Forrest, upwards of twenty Wrests in length and full of Pines, Birch-Trees, and large Marshes; over which, woodest Bridges were built, to render it fit for travelling. The Land here is so barren and useless, that nothing but rotten or withered Pines can be seen; and, if a Horse should chance to fall off any of those Bridges into the Fens, it would be in great danger of perishing; which has happened very often in the Night-Time, as my Postillion told me. However I arrived by times at the Post-House, which is at the Extremity of the Forrest, and much better than that, wherein I had seen the drunken Soldiers. Here I met with Horses at least as bad as those at the first Post-House; but the Road was better from this Stage to the next, (which is the last to *Narva*) than the last mentioned; and though there be still some Wood and Marshes, the Post-House was not despiseable. From thence I set out at peep of Day, and between eight and nine of the Clock I crossed the River *Lugha*, on a Bridge one Hundred and ten Paces long, and about eleven Wrests from *Ivanogrod*. Here the Road begins to be very pleasant; the Fields, and chiefly the Variety of Villages, and Meadows, along the River-Side, very much contributing to the same. This River springs up in the North of *Pleskow*, and discharges itself into the Gulf of *Finland*, some twenty Wrests higher than the Mouth of the River *Narva*; it abounds in Fish, but chiefly Lampreys. About 6 or 7 Wrests beyond *Lugha*, the Wind being South-West, I plainly heard the famous Cascade of the River *Narva*, of which I had a very pleasant View as I approached *Ivanogrod*\*; where I arrived at 11. of the Clock. The Sun shined very clear, and, piercing the Waters dashed by the Cascade, formed as many and more lively Colours than those of the Rainbow. It is about two Wrests distant from *Ivanogrod*, whither I went the next Morning; and I saw it with as much

Ophilia.

Ivanogrod.

\* *Ivanogrod* is reckoned to be 145 Wrests distant from *Petersbourg*.

much Satisfaction as I did the first Time. I have never seen any Cascades that exceeded this, but those of *Tivoli* and *Trescati* in *Italy*, which are rendered so by Art; and the Cascades of the Rivers, *Torne* and *Geltse*, in *Lapland* and *Sweden*, without the Assistance of Art; which I have mentioned in my first and second Volume, and whose Fall I could hear at two Leagues Distance. That of *Narva*, as it renders the River there unnavigable, brings a great Inconveniency on the Merchants of *Dorpt* and *Pleskow*, who send any Goods by Water to *Narva*, or any Part of the *Baltick* Coast, being obliged to unload them before they come to the Cascade, and transport them by Land to *Narva*, where the River is navigable. *Ivanogrod* is a small Bourough, inferiour to a good Village, and was formerly known by the Name of *Narva of Ingria*, to distinguish it from *Narva of Estonia*; which is situated on the other Side of the River of that Name. *Ivan Vasilewitz* the Tyrant, (of whom I have already made mention) had a Castle built on a high Rock that stands in the River, and called it *Ivanogrod*. This Castle was looked upon by the Tyrant as impregnable; and he caused the *Polish* Architect's Eyes, who had built it, to be picked out, to render him incapable of building such another for any of his Enemies. The Castle was soon afterwards surprized and taken by the *Swedes*, in the same Manner as *Mittau* (if we may give Credit to the *Russians*) was by General *Douglas*; for the Duke of *Courland*, confiding in a Treaty of Neutrality, which had cost him considerable Sums of Money, besides the Provisions he had supplied both the *Swedish* and *Polish* Armies with, who were then at War with one another, was nevertheless deceived by General *Douglas*; who, feigning he had several of his Soldiers sick and wounded, obtained Leave of the Duke to send them to *Mittau* in order to be cured; whereupon he chose 500 able Men, and capable of counterfeiting their Voices, as if they were really sick, and sent them in Boats, with Arms concealed under their old Cloaths; and at the same Time a strong Party of Horse by Land to favour the Enterprize. The Boats were no sooner come into the Port, but the Centry demanded to know who they were; the Men, in a most piteous Tone, said, they were poor disabled Soldiers, that came, by the Duke's Permission, to *Mittau* and *Dunamuden*, to have their Wounds cured; having then landed, they immediately dispatched the Centry to the other World, seized on the Castle, and opened the Gates for their Horse. The General, confident of Success, marched with his whole Army without any Delay, and no sooner entered into the Town, but he made the Duke and his Family Prisoners, and sent them (though the Dutchess was very much indisposed) to *Ivanogrod*, where they were all confined till the Conclusion of the War. The Soldiers, not content with Plundering the Palace, stripped the young Princes of their Cloaths. In the Fray, the Dutchess, who was big with Child, having seen one of her Servants lose



lose his Hand, made such an Impression upon her, that she was delivered of a Child who had but one Hand.

This Nation, that had for a considerable Time refused to make Peace with the *Russians*, because (as they alledged) of the Perfidiousness and Cruelty executed by the latter, wherever they carried their Arms to, having at last concluded a Treaty with them, made nothing themselves of violating one, which was most religiously observed by the Duke, whose Person they treated very inhumanly. It is remarkable, how the Northern Nations have retained from the *Goths* and *Vandals*, their Ancestours, the barbarous Custom of Plundering, Burning, and Destroying; and were never capable of making War like Men of Honour, or with the Generosity and Politeness of some *European* Nations. I mentioned the Taking of the Castle of *Ivanogrod* by the *Swedes* soon after it was built; yet some Historians will have, that it was not taken till *Gustavus Adolphus* made himself Master of it in 1617. The Rock renders its Situation very advantageous; it is built square, flanked with four Bastions, has a strong Tower, and a Chappel, built in the Nature of a Dome; the Walls thereof are very thick and well built, and had no other Garrison than two or three *Russian* Families, that lived in it in my Time, and Part of it was converted into a Magazine. The Casern and other Lodges, which seemed to be of a more modern Date, were much decayed. Old *Russian Narva* runs near the Rock from South to North. The River, having formed the Cascade mentioned, and several little Islands, takes its Flight into the Sea. Salmons, when in Season, are taken here in great Plenty. Some of the Islands are pleasant and green, especially the largest; where I have seen several Raspberry and Gooseberry Trees. The River, before it forms the Cascade, is as calm and smooth for the Space of 700 Paces from East to West, and 1000 from North to South, as if it were stagnated; which, together with the various Colours produced by the Sun in the Water, dashed against the Rock, presents a most beautiful Prospect. Opposite to *Ivanogrod*-Castle stands another much larger, whose Walls are not so strong, though flanked with eight Towers. I crossed the River on a Bridge 150 Paces long; and, having arrived at *Narva*, went to see Mr. *Huon's* Correspondents, who received me in a very obliging Manner, and persuaded me to lodge with them. Narva.

The River, from whence this Town takes its Name, comes from the Lake *Peipus*, and runs into the Gulph of *Finland*. *Narva* was built by *Woldemar the Second*, King of *Denmark*, in the Year 1213; and taken from the *Teutonic Knights* by *Ivan Vasilovitch*, in 1558. The *Swedes* retook it from the *Muscovites* in 1581. The Czar, *Peter the First*, with 80000 Men, laid siege to it in 1700, which *Charles the Twelfth*, with only 9000 Men, obliged him to raise: But, having lost the Battle of *Pultowa*, the Czar in one Year's Time made himself

B b b

Master

Master of *Narva*, *Estonia*, *Livonia*, and *Ingria*; which the *Swedes* were some Ages a conquering. He also took the Islands of *Osël*, *Dachden*, *Kexholm* and *Vibourg*, though well defended. *Narva* having made the most obstinate Defence, the most Part of the Inhabitants were banished to *Siberia*, or dispersed with those of *Ingria* in other remote Countries: Such as were suffered to stay, were deprived of all their Privileges and Churches, and the Towns filled with *Russians*. The Church of *Narva*, founded by the *Teutonic* Knights, is a *Gothick* Building, 68 Paces long and 35 broad. The *Russians* took down all the carved Images that were in the Churches, Crucifixes excepted, and put up painted ones in their Room. The Town-House and Exchange, before which is a fine Square, are stately Buildings; the Fortresses small, and surrounded with a Ditch, which has no Water on the Land Side; the Houses are built like those of *Riga*, and the Streets ill paved.

Having staid two Days at *Narva*, I set out for *Revel*. By the Time I had rid half a Wrest, I saw several Intrenchments on a rising Ground, where *Charles the Twelfth* had fought a Battle with Success. My Postillion and I had such bad Horses, that with much ado we got to the first Stage in five Hours Time, though but sixteen Wrests distant, where I met with better. Two Wrests from this Post I got into the Road to *Revel*, and saw a Forest on the left Hand, through which lies the Road to *Riga*, which was as bad (as my \* Postillion told me, who spoke *Swedish*) as that of *Ingria* before mentioned; but had more Variety of Trees than the former. The Road to *Revel* was very agreeable, having very few Woods, and a great many pleasant Fields and Villages; neither had I any Room to complain of my Horses. *Wesenberg* was the only Town I passed through; and though it be the Capital of the District of *Virland*, it is very small, and scarcely superiour to a good Village; the Houses ill-built, whereof some are covered with Turfs and Stubbles. In this Town is shewn the Body of a Gentleman, who died in the Year 1604, as intire as those I had seen at *Bremen*, (mentioned in my second Volume) or at *Mittaw*. They pretend it has been preserved thus, without the Assistance of Art, though I cannot conceive how; for having discoursed experienced Surgeons of different Nations on this Affair, they all agreed, that the most antient Method to preserve Bodies from Corruption was to take the Brains and Bowels out, and to bury the Corpse in a Cask full of Lime, till all its Moisture was extracted; then to wash it with certain Spirits, which would make it proportionably as light as a Stock-Fish, and also retain its Form and all its Features. I was assured, that some of the Bodies I had seen at *Bremen*, had been dead 500 Years, and do believe they may look as well 500 Years hence, as they did when I saw them. *Wesenberg* is about

\* All the Post-Masters and Postillions from *Narva* to *Revel*, and thence to *Mittaw*, speak the *Swedish* Tongue, which is a great Conveniency for such Travellers as understood it.

about 90 Wrefts from *Narva*, and 80 from *Revel*; it was formerly considerable, and defended by a Castle whose Ruins are still visible; it is situated to the West of a little rapid River, called *Samskebuch*, which discharges itself into the Gulph at *Tolsbourg*, another antient Town of this District, where there are also the Ruins of an old Castle; it is situated towards the East of the River's Mouth. *Wolmar the Second*, King of *Denmark*, built *Wesemberg*, much about the time that *Narva* and *Rivel* were built, which was in the Year 1290. *Wolmar the Third* sold it together with the other two Towns to the Great-Master of the *Livonian* Order in the Year 1347. About 13 Wrefts from *Wesemberg* I traversed the Forest of *Wiris-Rival*, which is 30 Wrefts in Length, and for its Variety of Trees and Valleys very pleasant; here I saw several Oak-Trees, but none in the Forest of *Ingria*. I arrived on the Evening of the third Day after my Departure from *Narva* at *Revel*. Revel.

Some Authors will have *Revel* to be the Metropolis of *Estonia*, and others, *Dorpt*. *Wolmar the Second* laid the Foundations thereof, as I have already said, in 1290, and the Arms of *Denmark*, and *Danish* Inscriptions are still visible on the most antient Edifices there. In the Beginning of the fourteenth Century this Town entered into an Association with the other *Hanse*-Towns, but receded from the same in 1550; and, being very much infested by the Courses and Ravages of the *Muscovites*, put itself under the Protection of *Erick*, King of *Sweden* \*. *Ivan Vasilowitz*, having taken *Narva* in 1558, drew the Trade from *Revel* and the *Baltick* Coast, together with other more remote Places to it, by the Directions of Mr. *Henry Lane*, an *English* Gentleman, who was the very first that discovered Means to trade with the *Muscovites*. The Czar, having in the Year 1570 declared the Duke, *Magnus* of *Holstein*, hereditary King of *Livonia*, gave him a numerous Army to besiege *Revel*, which was already well fortified. It sustained the Siege with so much Vigour and Constancy, that the Duke, *Magnus*, was constrained to retire with considerable Loss. In the Year 1577 *Ivan* went in Person, with an Army of 60000 Men to lay Siege to it; but *Henry Horn*, who was then Governour of *Revel*, defended the Town with so much Bravery, that he obliged him to raise the Siege. The same Year the Tyrant returned into the Country, took several Places, and suspecting that the Duke, *Magnus*, designed to put himself, and all the Places he had in his Power, under the King of *Poland's* Protection, he marched directly to *Kokenhausen*, where the Duke had a Garrison, that esteemed *Ivan* as their Friend and Ally; and therefore opened their Gates for him and his Army: They had no sooner entered, than he put the whole Garrison, as well as the Inhabitants, to the Sword, massacred the most Part of them, and made all the rest Prisoners.

\* In my second Volume I have made mention of this King, *Erick*, whom his Brother deposed, and was by his Orders poisoned in Prison.

ners. He left a *Muscovite* Garrison in the Town, and treated all the other Places in the Duke's Possession in the same Manner, till he came to *Wenden*, where the Duke resided; by whom he was received with all the Respect and Submission imaginable, and assured in a very sincere Manner, that he never harboured a Thought of deserting his Party, though his Enemies might probably have insinuated the contrary; all his Submissions and Protestations availed him nothing; the Tyrant answered him with injurious and vile Reproaches, and ordered some of his Soldiers to take him into their Custody, till he had demolished the Town with Fire, Sword, and Pillage. The Cruelties, committed by him on this Occasion, are inexpressible; he spared neither Sex, Age, or Quality; the Clergy promiscuously with the Laity suffered, and as soon as he had forced any of the Ladies, he ordered them to be cut to pieces. The Cutting off a Nose, or Ears, was the least Cruelty he exercised at *Wenden*, as well as at all the other Places he had taken and ransacked. The Duke was sent Prisoner to *Dorpt*, where, by paying 400000 Ducats of Gold, and swearing Homage as a Vassal to *Ivan*, he was restored to his Liberty. The Harbour\* at *Revel* is not bad, though the Entrance (being narrow, and but two Winds to carry the Ships in and out) is very difficult. The new Harbour of *Rogersvike*, which is to the West of *Revel*, and was begun by the Czar, *Peter the First's* Orders in the Year 1719, is more commodious and sure, and will be much better than the other, when finished; 100 Ships may ride at Anchor in it, and sail in and out with all manner of Winds, without any Difficulty; yet the Work is carried on very slowly. The Town, in the Form of an Amphitheatre, is agreeably situated on the Side of a Mountain: The antient Buildings form a Valley near the Harbour; I could admire nothing in them but their Antiquity; and are built after the same Manner as those of *Narva* and *Riga*. The chiefest Houses in the Amphitheatre are built according to the modern Taste, and the Cathedral, which stands at the highest Extremity of the Town, is an old *Gothick* Piece, but none of the worst. When *Peter the First* had made himself Master of this Town, he translated Doctor *Proscowits*, who was then Bishop of *Pleskow*, to this See; and the Inhabitants continue to enjoy their spiritual and temporal Privileges, as they did in King *Charles the Twelfth's* Time; together with their Churches, *Latin-School*, Printing-House, and Superintendent, with all his Revenues and Privileges. The *Russians* performed Divine Service in a Church they formerly possessed; and was frequented by the Soldiery, as well as that of the Castle, which is built on a high Rock, and has no Access but from the Town. It may be very well called a strong Place, since the additional Fortifications and Repairs made on it, as well as on the whole

\* This Harbour is defended by two good Forts and Batteries of 200 Pieces of Cannon on the Mole.

whole Town, have rendered it so; and it will garrison 4000 Men. The once famous Monastery of S. *Bridget's* Fryars and Nuns is about two Wrefts North-East of this Place, which I had the Curiosity to see, although in its Ruins. The Monks and Nuns of this used to communicate their Thoughts to one another by dumb Signs, and composed (according to *Mezeray*, and other Historians) a Dictionary of this silent Language, which is more to be admired in the fair Sex than in ours. I was assured, that on the Banks of the River *Thames* in *England* there has been another double Monastery of this Order, where the Monks were separated from the Nuns by the River; but that, as they lived apposite to one another, they contrived to make a subterraneous Passage, by which Means they conferred together; and Persons of Credit have assured me, that they had seen both the Entrances and other Remains thereof.

At *Revel* I staid but two Days and three Nights; on the third, at six in the Morning, about the latter End of *October*, I set out with good Horses, and at Sun-Set arrived at *Pernaw*, which is 50 Wrefts distant from *Revel*. The Soil here is much better than any I had seen in *Livonia* or *Estonia*. *Pernaw* is the principal Town of the District of *Wicke*, agreeably situated at the Mouth of the River *Pada-josky*, which is also called *Pernaw*; it has its Source to the North-East of the Castle of *Wittenstein*, and at South-East receives the Rivers, *Ossa* and *Risticklejoky*, into its Channel. This Town is divided by the River; the North-East Division is called *Old Pernaw*; the Houses are but few, old, and for the most part built with Timber: The other Division is called *New Pernaw*; it has a greater Number of Houses, and the Advantage of being better built; their two Churches are also built with Timber, as was the Castle, till *Peter the First* became Master of it, who flanked it with some Turf-Work, and gave it the Figure of a Fortrefs: 400 *Russians* were garrisoned in it, and, though but a small Town, is very populous. Their chief Trade is in Corn, and they enjoy their Priviledges, as they did under the *Swedes*. Having had Time enough on the Morning after my Arrival, to observe what I have here related, I set out in the Afternoon, and lay at *Riga* that Night. The Soil continued to be very rich, except a few Woods and sandy Places. During my Stay here which was for three or four Days, I was treated very generously by the *British* Factory; but particularly by Mess. *Berkley*, and *Samuel Coulton*. It was here I had an Account of the River *Neva's* having overflowed its Banks, which did a deal of Damage at *Petersbourg*, and confirmed me in the Sentiments I had already published, contrary to M. *Capon's* Project of carrying the Canal of *Ladoga* as far as *Stettelbourg*, and adding the Waters of the *Wolkga* to those of *Neva*; which in a violent Storm, or sudden Thaw, might overflow the whole City. I told Governour *Bobun* my Thoughts on this Affair, who objected, that by

C c c

raising

raising the Banks of the River, all such Danger might be easily prevented; but as that would prove very expensive, he thought it was better it should remain in the Condition I had seen it. The violent Flush which happened much about the same Season in the following Year, and the extraordinary Damage it did; will sufficiently prove what I have advanced on this Head; and that the Banks must be raised, though the Canal should not be continued to *Stentelbourg*. The Governour did me the Honour to subscribe to the History of my Travels, which was in the Press, and very obligingly granted me an Order to take Horses on the Road to *Mittaw*, where I arrived in one Day's Time. Colonel *Fontenay*, Prince *Maurice of Saxony's* Agent at *Petersbourg*, gave me some Letters for that Prince, who was at a Country-House belonging to one of his Electours, called *Elley*, in *Semigallia*, three German or Polish Miles from *Mittaw*. Monsieur *Meyer*, Post-Master of *Mittaw*, to whom I was recommended by the Polish Envoy from *Petersbourg*, being on his Departure for *Grodno*, was desirous we should travel together, and said, I might call at *Elley*, which was but half a Mile out of our Road, and deliver the Letters into the Prince's own Hands, to which I agreed; and having begun our Journey on the sixth of November N. S. which is observed in *Courland* and *Poland*, and will be by me hereafter. We scarce rid half a Mile from the Town, when Monsieur *Meyer's* Chaise was dashed to Pieces on the Brink of a Pond full of Mine; and dropt into it. This unexpected Accident, obliged us to return and wait, till the Chaise was mended; all our Things, especially mine, which were in a Vallée, were very much damaged, and some of my Manuscripts rendered useless. I acquainted the Prince (whose Letters I happily had kept in my Pocket) of the Disaster, and sent them to him by his own Servant; but as soon as the Chaise was mended, we paid him the intended Visit. I made him sensible how little he should depend on the *Russian* Court; and that Prince *Menzikoff*, the prime Minister, had sent some *Russian* Troops into the Neighbourhood of *Mittaw*, with no other View, than to possess himself of the Dutchy, in case *Poland* would not oppose his Highness's Pretensions to it; and that he endeavoured to bribe several Gentlemen of *Poland* and *Courland* into his Interest; which was the chief Motive of Count *Sapieha's* Journey. He told me he had for a considerable Time suspected the same, but that it was resolved at the Diet of *Grodno*, to send a Military Commission to *Mittaw*, to frustrate all their Designs against him. The Count of *Saxony* is a Prince of extraordinary Merit and Politeness, beautiful in his Person, brave, generously inclined; and possesses several other rare Qualities, as the King his Father does; he has the Hearts of all the *Courlanders* at his Devotion, and Prince *Menzikoff* their Aversion; for having some Time before repaired to *Mittaw*, while the *Russian* Troops were in that Neighbourhood, acted there

there as Lord and Master, assembled all the Members of the Regency, in Spight of the Dutchess Dowager's Remonstrances; and declared to them, that if they did not convoke a Diet to annul Count *Maurice's* Election, and chuse him for their Duke, he would send them and all the Opposers to *Siberia*, and expose the Country to the Discretion of his Troops. The Regency, intimidated with these haughty Menaces, and not presuming to make any Apologies for the Treaty they had concluded, and the Oath taken in Favour of Count *Maurice*, they begged to have 20 Days Time allowed them to confer with the Nobility, which they alledged was absolutely necessary on such an Emergency; they, with no small Difficulty, obtained this Request; but before the Term granted them was expired, *Menzikoff* returned to *Petersbourg*, having on his Departure repeated his Menaces, in case of their Non-Compliance. But whether he considered, that so violent a Procedure would create him Enemies in *Poland*, and hinder Count *Sapieha's* bringing any Gentlemen of that Country into his Interest, as he endeavoured; or that the Crown and Republick of *Poland*, on which the Dutchy depends, should resent it, and send a Body of Troops superiour to his Forces, and expel him, is not certain; yet the Regency heard no more Threats. Probably he might have been informed by Count *Sapieha* and the *Russian* Minister in *Poland*, that Count *Maurice's* Election, far from being approved of there, was not only to be declared void at the Diet of *Grodno*, but also his Electours punished for usurping an Authority, to which they had no Right. This made *Menzikoff* very easy; especially when he found their Power of Electing disputed. This was the first and chief Affair laid on the Carpet, and disputed at the Diet of *Grodno*, which rendered all Prince *Maurice's* Measures ineffectual; for the Members of the Diet unanimously declared his Election null, and firmly resolved to unite the Dutchies of *Semigallia* and *Courland* to the District of *Pilten*, with the Title of *Palatinates*, if Duke *Ferdinand* should die without Issue Male. The Diet also declared the Electours seditious, Rebels, Usurpers, or Violaters of the Rights of the Crown and Republick, and as such to be punished by the Laws of the Kingdom. The King ordered an Instrument to be drawn, commanding Prince *Maurice* immediately to quit the Country, and never to return with the like Design again; nor employ any of his Friends to solicit any such Interest for him; to surrender his Papers, and the Acts of his clandestine Election as null and of none Effect to the Diet assembled at *Grodno*. His Majesty also command the Tribunals of *Poland* to proceed against the Authors of the said Acts, and engaged himself never to countenance or assist, in any Manner whatsoever, any Person, that would solicit the Succession of the said Dutchy; but was willing, that (according to the Resolution of the Diet) it should return to the Crown, after Duke *Ferdinand's* Death, &c. This Instrument was signed by the King, and sealed



sealed with the Seals of the Crown and the great Dutchy of *Lithuania*; then delivered to the Marshal of the Diet to be published throughout *Poland* and *Courland*; and registered in the Law-Books and Matricula's of every Palatinate. Notwithstanding all these Proceedings, Count *Maurice* shewed no Willingness to comply with the Resolution taken by the Diet against him, no more than with the King's Orders; whereupon a Commission was signed to force him out of *Courland*, and to arrest and punish the Electours, which obliged him to leave that Dutchy, before the Commission arrived. Prince *Menzikoff*, on the other Side, was resolved to wait for a more favourable Opportunity of rendring himself Master of that Dutchy; and a Report prevailed in *Courland*, though without any Foundation, that the Alliance, concluded between the Courts of *Russia* and *Germany*, would remove all the Obstacles, that obstructed his Designs; but the Empress *Catharine's* Death, and his Banishment to *Siberia*, whether he threatned to send the Regents of *Mittaw*, frustrated all his ambitious Projects, and dissipated the Fears of the *Courlanders*.

*Gothard Kettler*, the first Duke of *Courland*, Sovereign of *Livonia*, and last Grand Master of the *Teutonic* Order in the said Province; seeing that the *Estonians*, and the Northern Districts of *Livonia*, withdrew their Obedience from him, notwithstanding the Oath they had taken of being faithful to him, and put themselves under the Protection of *Erick the Fifteenth*, King of *Sweden*; fearing the other Districts would follow their Example, he delivered them up to King *Sigismund Augustus*, who united them to his Crown, and to the grand Dutchy of *Lithuania*, &c. This Monarch erected the Provinces of *Courland*, *Semigallia*, and the District of *Pilten*, which *Gothard* had reserved to himself, into a Dutchy; and gave the Investiture thereof, with the same Priviledges, Prerogatives, Dignities and Honours to *Gothard*, as he did some Years before, that of *Ducal Prussia* to *Albert of Brandenburg*. In the Year 1561, he confirmed by authentick Instruments, all their Priviledges both Spiritual and Temporal to the *Courlandish* Nobility.

*Gothard*, having quitted the Order, and embracing the Reformation of *Luther* (as *Albert* had done) which then prevailed in *Courland*, he married *Anne* of *Mecklembourg*, by whom he had two Sons and two Daughters, viz. *Frederick* and *William*; *Ann*, who was married to Prince *Radziwil*, Duke of *Olyka*, in 1581; and *Elizabeth*, who was married to Prince *Adam Wenslaus*, Duke of *Tetchin* and *Siberia*. *Frederick* succeeded his Father in 1587, and died without Issue in 1602. The Dutchy falling to his Brother *William*, he acted the Tyrant with his Subjects. He married the Princess *Sophia* of *Brandenburg*, by whom he had only one Son, who was, by his Godfather, King *James the First* of *England*, named *James*; this Prince was as mild as his Father was cruel, and was the same that General *Douglas* had treated

in

#### CHAP. IV. *A Journey from Petersbourg To Poland.*

493

in the Manner I have already mentioned. He succeeded his Father in 1643; and in 1645 married the Princess *Louisa Charlotte* of *Brandenbourg*, Sister to the Electour *Frederick William*, by whom he had five Sons and three Daughters, viz.

1. *Uladislas Frederick*, who died a Child.
2. *Frederick Casimir*, who succeeded him, and in 1675 married *Sophia Amelia* of *Nassau-Siegen*, by whom he had one Son, and three Daughters, viz. *Mary Dorothy*, *Eleanor Charlotte*, and *Louisa Amelia*; the Son died soon after he came into the World. His Dutcheſs died in 1688; and in 1691, he married *Elizabeth Sophia* of *Brandenbourg*, by whom he had two Sons; *Frederick William*, who succeeded him in 1698; and *Leopold*, who died young.
3. *Louisa Elizabeth*, born in 1646, was married to the Landgrave of *Hesse-Hombourg*, in 1671, and died in 1690.
4. *Charlotte Sophia*, born in 1651.
5. *Mary Amelia*, born in 1653, and married to the last Landgrave of *Hesse-Cassell*, in 1673.
6. *Charles James*, born in 1654, and died in 1677.
7. *Ferdinand*, the present Duke, born in 1655, succeeded his Nephew *Frederick William*, who died the 21st of *January*, 1711. The Differences between him and his Nobility are too well known, wherefore I shall take no notice of them here.
8. *Alexander*, Duke *James's* last Son, died in the Bed of Honour, at the Siege of *Buda*, where he commanded the Troops of *Brandenbourg*.

The Limits of *Courland* were formerly extended beyond *Haff*; but at present (including *Semigallia* and the District of *Piltén*) are but 50 Miles in length, and 26 at most in breadth; *Goldingen* and *Libaw* are the only Towns of Note in this Dutchy, whereof the former is the Capital. In the District of *Piltén*, besides the Town of that Name which is the Capital, *Windaw*, and *Augermunde* are of Note; as are *Mittaw*, *Dahlen*, *Bwaske*, and *Serbourg* in *Semigallia*. The principal Rivers of *Courland* and *Piltén* are *Libaw* and *Veta*, which runs through *Piltén* into the River *Windaw* near *Augermunde*. Those of *Semigallia* are the *Aa*, the *Mussa*, and the *Duna*, which separates *Semigallia* from the *Polish Livonia*. *Semigallia* is the most fertile Country of the three, has the Advantage of Sea-Ports, (as has *Piltén*) and furnishes them with most of the Commodities they deal in, as Wheat, Barly, Oats, Rye, Lint-Seed, Hemp, Tar, Planks, &c. In which *Semigallia* abounds, as well as *Polish Livonia*, and *Samogithia*; but as the latter have no Sea-Ports, the Inhabitants are constrained to send the Products of those Countries to *Windaw* and *Libaw*; and sometimes to *Revel*, and *Mehmel*. *Courland* was formerly famous for the extensive Trade and Commeree it carried to *Africa*, and *America*, as well as to all the Parts of

D d d

Europe;

*Europe*; where Duke *James* built and garrisoned several Forts to secure the Trade; but *Courland* being made the unhappy Theatre of the *Swedish* War, notwithstanding the Treaty of Neutrality already mentioned, the *English* made themselves Masters of the Forts of *Gumbia* in *Africa*, and of *Tobago* in *America*; yet granted the *Courlanders* Liberty to trade to those Places under their Protection. But the *Swedes* having taken all their Ships, together with the Duke's Fleet, and the succeeding *Swedish* War with the *Russians* having completed their Ruin, they were never since able to retrieve themselves. The Country and Towns are not half so populous as they have been heretofore; *Mittaw*, the Capital of *Semigallia*, or rather of the whole Dutchy *Goldingen*, *Libaw*, *Piltten*, *Windaw*, &c. the only Towns that still retain any thing of their primitive Lustre, are no better than Deserts, in Comparison to what they were. The other Towns are now worse than Villages; *Selbourg*, one of the most antient and flourishing Towns of *Semigallia*, is of this Number; *Asulia* is no more to be seen but in History; and a great many other Towns and Castles are recorded only by their Ruins. The Fields lay waste for want of Hands to cultivate them; and the Natives, who are generally inclined to War, commonly engage themselves in the Service of foreign Princes. *Livonia*, and the other Provinces thro' which I travelled, have met with the same Fate; *Poland* had as many Castles demolished; and Towns reduced to Ashes in the late Wars, as if it had been ravaged by *Goths* and *Scythians*, and not by Christians, which is no small Reproach to the latter. I remember when the Czar, *Peter the First*, burnt *Iberiali*, a small Town, and several Villages in *Kalachia*, because the Inhabitants (who were of his own Communion) refused to take up Arms for him. I was asked by the *Turks*, 'If he had learnt his Military Discipline of the Christians, in order to destroy, burn, and plunder?' yet about fifty Days after this cruel Action, though the Czar and his whole Army were in the Power of the *Turks*, they generously granted him Peace on honourable Terms, and Plenty of Provisions to return Home with. I have amply related this Affair in the second Volume, as I had seen it transacted.

We rested at *Elley* that Night, and the next Day in the Afternoon we set out for *Samogithia*, which, though but a Mile and half distant, yet the Road was so bad, that with much ado we could reach it in three Hours riding: This Province depends on the Great Dutchy of *Lithuania*; the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order obtained it of *Casimir* \* the Second, in the Year 1446; it has about thirty six Miles in length, and near twenty six in breadth, having *Semigallia* to the N. E. *Courland*, and the District of *Piltten* to the N. W. *Lithuania*, and the River *Niemar* to the S. E. and *Ducal Prussia*, with the *Baltick* Sea to the S. W. The Grand Dutchy of *Lithuania* was united to the Crown of *Poland* in the following Manner: *Casimir* called the Great, more for his Vices

and

\* Some Historians say of *Vitoldus*.

and the stately Edifices he had built, than for his Virtues; dying without Issue in the Year 1370. His Nephew *Lewis*, King of *Hungary*, whom he had proposed to the States, was received by them as Successor; but the King, careless of the *Polanders*, sent his Mother as Regent to them, at which they were much displeased; however, when the King died, he left but two Daughters, the youngest of which they chose for their Queen, and married her to *Ingellon*, a Pagan Prince, and Grand Duke of *Lithuania*, who thereupon became a Christian, and united the Dutchy to the Crown, in Consequence whereof, he was declared King; his Conversion was soon followed by that of all the *Lithuanians* and *Samogithians*, who were all Pagans before. This King's Descendents reigned till the Year 1572, when, *Sigismundus Augustus* dying without Issue, the Crown became again elective.

*Samogithia* is not only as fertile as *Courland*, but has the Advantage of several Mines, as I've mentioned in the second Chapter, and more Woods and Mountains. The Road was so very bad, that we could not arrive at *Ginisky*, tho' but another Mile and a half distant, till it was late at Night; this Village was formerly a Town; the Houses here are for the most part thatched, the Streets dirty, and as much out of Repair, as if they had not been paved these twenty Years. The Church is large, well built, and adorned with painted Images, and most of them Wood; the great Altar and the Organs are the two best Pieces in it; the Chapels, though small; are decent enough. The Horses of this Country are reckoned very good; yet ours were so bad, that we could ride but four Miles the next Day. We lay at *Meskoltsche*, a large Village, wherein is a small Church, tolerably well built, but out of Repair. We set out at three of the Clock the next Morning, and arrived about nine at *Szansle*, where we staid till eleven; waiting for Horses which were at *Grass*. *Szansle* is larger, and has a greater Appearance of a Town, than *Ginisky*; the Streets are in better Order, and but few thatched Houses; the Church is large and flanked with Towers like an old Castle; the great Altar has nothing curious in it; on the Gospel-Side stand six Banners, and six more on the Epistle-Side; with a fine Lampglass with Gold, the Offering of a noble *Polander*. The Jews, who have no Toleration at *Ginisky*, have here a Synagogue, built for the most part of Wood. The Road here was somewhat better, and the Country exceedingly well cultivated. About half a Mile from *Szansle*, we traversed a small Forest full of Fir, Birch, Alder, and Ash-Trees. As in *Samogithia* and *Samogithia*, we met constantly with Wreaths on the High-Road, so here we met in every quarter of a Mile with sanctified Coffins (a Custom also used in *Lithuania* and *Poland*.) I call them sanctified, inasmuch as they support the Effigies of *Jesus Christ*, and the *Virgin Mary*, inclosed in Boxes, as large again as the Crown of an Hat. We also met with some small Chapels, built in the Form of a Dome;

a Dome; most of the Crosses were variously adorned by the devout Liberality of the Inhabitants; that of Jesus Christ, besides the Crown of Thorns with which it is always painted or carved, had one or two more of Rosemary or other Flowers in Season, and a laced Apron round its Waste that reached down to its Feet; the Virgin's Image was dressed as the Women are in that Country.

We lay at *Radziwillisky*, a Village about four Miles distant from *Szausle*; the Curate's House, and the Inn where we lodged, which belonged to him also, were the only decent Houses in it. We had a Visit from the Curate, who spoke to us in his own Language; but my fellow Traveller having told him that I did not understand it, he addressed himself in *Latin* to me in the Manner following: *Rogo, scammum deosculeris ore posteriori*; Pray kiss the Stool with the Mouth of your back-Side. I scarcely could contain my self from laughing at the Singularity of this Compliment, which I never had heard in *Hungary* or *Transilvania*, where the *Latin* is as commonly spoken as in *Poland*; but his Cap and blue Cloth furred Robe, together with his Gravity, inspired me with some Respect, though I could not help blushing. He asked me several Questions, concerning the Motive of my Travels; I told him that nothing but Curiosity had induced me to visit three Parts of the World, which I had performed in 26 Years time, whereof I had been thirteen in *Turky*. He then asked me, If there were any Christians in that Country? I told him that all manner of Religions were there tolerated; that the conquered Nations, as the *Armenians*, *Greeks*, and *Jews*, had, the two first their Patriarchs, Clergy and Churches; and the last, their Synagogues; that Strangers, whether *Romans*, or *Protestants*, enjoyed the same Liberty under the Protection of Ambassadors. He seemed surprised at this Account, and more to hear that the *Armenians* were Christians; of which I with Difficulty convinced him, by saying, that though they were very ignorant, yet were baptized, and believed in Jesus Christ; and that there was very little Difference between their Worship and that of the ignorant *Greeks*. As he was not acquainted with the Religion of the latter, he desired I would explain it to him; but having used some *Greek* Words in my Detail, he ingenuously declared to me, that he was a Stranger to that Language: I therefore related the whole to him in *Latin*. He then joined his Supper to our's, and regaled us with better Beer than what was sold in the Inn, gave us his Company till past Midnight, drank plentifully, and having sent for a Bottle of Wine, and another of Brandy, to wish us (as he said) good Rest, and a good Journey, we soon emptied the first, as we should the second, if we had followed his Example. He took some Pains to recommend it to me, by saying that it helped the Concoction, and dissipated all gross Humours. I differed from his Opinion, and told him, I thought it was more proper to preserve, than to dissolve

dissolve Victuals; I must own, I found more Difficulty to convince him of this, than of the *Christianity* of the *Armenians*; and was obliged to tell him bluntly, that I did not care for drinking of Brandy. When he retired, he embraced us as if we had been his old and intimate Friends.

We set out from thence between five and six of the Clock, and met with very bad Roads, through Marshes and Woods, where our Horses were up to their Knees in several Places in Mud and Dirt. We dined at *Beslabole*, a larger Village than that wherein we had lain; the Church was also built with Wood. The Curate's was the only House worth any thing; who likewise had an Inn, which was a large, wild, wooden Structure, where Men and Beasts were lodged almost in the same Manner, their Apartments being separated only by a few ill-joined Boards; yet was as much frequented as the Church. During our Stay the Concourse was very numerous, and as merrily singing and dancing as so many *Russians* or *Grecians*.

We went that Night to *Keydany*, or *Kiedamsky*, (as some call it) a tolerable large Town, and considerably more so before the *Russians* and *Swedes* had visited it. It is divided by a small River, which brings some Trade to it. Here are six Churches, for the Exercise of four different Christian Religions; (though half the Number would be sufficient for the Inhabitants) and a Synagogue for the *Jews*. The *Romans* have two; one pretty large, and built with Stone and Brick; the other smaller and of Wood: They are both well adorned, the High-Altar and the Organs of the first are very good. The *Russians* have one, built partly with Stone and partly with Wood. That of the *Lutherans* is built with Stone and Brick. The *Calvinists*, though they have two built with the same Materials, perform Divine Service but in one, since the *Swedes* and *Russians* had damaged the other in the late Wars, which was never since suffered to be repaired. *M. Volan*, a zealous Protestant, had to no Purpose solicited the Diet of *Grodno*, to restore to those of the Reformed Religion the Privileges taken from them; who had Reason enough to apprehend the Extinction of their Religion in *Poland*. They had lately lost one of the most considerable Churches in *Podlachia*; and complained, that they had not been treated with more Lenity than the *Lutherans* since the Affair of *Thorn*: However, the Governour of the Town was a *Calvinist*, and but two of the Magistrates *Catholicks*.

The Protestant Religion prevailed from its Infancy in this Town; the Church, where they perform Divine Service, is the Burying-Place of the Protestant Lords of that District. *Christopher Radziwill* was the first Nobleman that embraced the *Romish* Religion; he was Palatine of *Vilna*, Duke of *Birze* \* in *Samogithia*, and of

E e e

Dubice

\* *Birze* is a small Town of *Samogithia*, and has the Title of a Duchy; it is situated on the North Branch of the River *Mussa*; it had formerly a good Castle, which was demolished by the *Swedes* soon after the *Bauske* in *Courland*.

*Dubice*\* in *Lithuania*; his Ancestours possessed and discharged the highest Employments both in the Ministry and the Army with Reputation. This Temple (as the *Calvinists* commonly call it) is 50 Paces long, in the Body, and 30 broad; has several Glass-Windows between the Pillars that support the whole Church; they have also Galleries between them, and a very magnificent one under the Organs. In short, the whole Edifice is a compleat Piece of Architecture. The Roof is crowned with eight Steples, covered with Plates of Tin, whereof five have Iron-Crosses on their Pinacles; the other three have Suns, and *Jehovah* in *Hebrew* Letters in the Center of the first; the second has the Figure of a Lamb, as is represented in my Print of the *Temple-Church* in *London*; the third has that of a Dove holding a Branch of Olive in her Bill. Four of the Steples are fixed on four Towers; two squared to the East, and two round to the West. The Bodies of the deceased Princes and Princeesses of the Protestant Family of *Radziwill* are kept in Vaults in this Church, very decently dressed in double Coffins, like those of the Dukes of *Courland* at *Mittaw*, with Silver Plates, whereon their Names, Qualities, Honours, Titles, Actions, &c. are engraved. Prince *Janusius Radziwill's* Coffin was of massy Silver. The chief Pastor of this Church is Mr. *Gordon*, a *Scotchman*, who preaches in *Polish* and *German*; he was particular in his Civilities to me. There is a Colledge near this Church, which, as I have been told, was formerly very much frequented, yet had not above thirty Students when I saw it: The Rector's Revenues were reduced to 100 Crowns, and those of the Regents in Proportion. On the other Side of the River stands the Church of the *Lutherans*. This River is called *Niewiatz*, and separates *Samogithia* from *Lithuania*, which the Maps attribute to *Nieman*. Several of the Houses, ruined and damaged by the *Russians*, have been since rebuilt, and repaired, the Town-House, an ordinary Piece of Building, being of that Number; on whose Tower I saw among other Inscriptions, *Trans mare adnatant, ut me adificent. Renovata An. D. 1712.* On the West Side was,

*Sint aliis turres & inexpugnabile vallum;*

*Nos Deus, & rectum, simplicitasque tegant.*

The old Houses are built partly of Stone, partly of Brick, and partly of Wood. The new Houses are for the most part of Wood, and well built. Castle *Janusius* remains in its burnt and ruined Condition, situated on a rising Ground on the *Samogithian* Side of the River; and is called *Janusius* from Prince *Janusius Radziwill* who built it †, and

\* *Dubice* is a Town of *Lithuania*, situated on the River *Rotra*.

† That Part of the Town where the Castle stands is called *Janusius*.



and whose Epitaph is here inserted \*. The *Jewish* Synagogue is built with Wood, and, though it be pretty large and lightsome, has not the least Ornament of Architecture.

We staid two Days and a half at *Keydany*, Mr. *Meyer* having some Accompts to settle with the Post-master, Mr. *David Anderson*, a *Scotchman*, in whose House we lodged, and with other Merchants of his own Nation, with whom he dealt in Flax and other Commodities of the Country, which are sent, in large Boats down the Rivers *Narwie* and *Nieman*, to *Mehmel*.

On the third Day in the Afternoon we set out, and lay at a *Jew's* Hamlet three Miles distant that Night; the next Day, we dined at another *Jew's* in a little Village called *Bopr*, whose Church is built of Wood. We crossed the River *Wilia* near *Kowno*, where we arrived between four and five of the Clock.

*Kowno* is a large Town of the Palatinate of *Trochy*, in the great Dutchy of *Lithuania*, situated S. East of *Wilia* and *Nieman*; it has suffered considerably by the *Swedish* and *Russian* Wars, and, as an additional Misfortune, was very much depopulated by the Plague. It has (including the Convents) ten or eleven Churches; that called S. *Peter*, which is the chief Parish, has one hundred Paces to the Choir, and fifty in breadth; the Demicircle from the Choir to the High Altar sixty. This Church, which alone would be sufficient for all the Inhabitants, is a *Gothick* Building, adorned with the Effigies of Saints and Columns of well carved Wood. That of the *Jesuits*, together with their Colledge, is well built, and richly adorned; S. *Clair's* Convent, where I had heard exceeding good Voices and Organs, is very neat; the *Franciscan* Church, which is opposite to the latter, is large, well built, and has a good Choir; that of the bare-footed *Bernardines*, though smaller, exceeds it in the Regularity of its Architecture, and Ornaments of its great Altar; having made these Remarks on the Evening of my Arrival, I deferred any further Search for Curiosities till the next Morning, when I discovered that none but the *Dominican* Cloyster, the *Benedictine* Nunnery, and the *Lutheran* Church deserved any Notice; the latter had no Steeple. The *Jews*, and the *Lithuanian Mahometans*, who in that Country are called *Lipkas* †, have Places for religious Meetings, but of no Note; the Houses are all of Brick, but very few of them well built, and still bear the ruinous Marks of War. There are several Motto's on the Doors both in *Latin* and *Polish*, in the same Stile as those already mentioned: There remains nothing of the Town-House, but a Tower covered with Plates of Tin. This Town has been formerly

\* Hic jacet Illustrissimus ac Celcissimus S. R. Imp. Princeps, Janusius Radziwill, Birzorum ac Dubicinorum Dux, Ss. Dominus Nevellii & Sebrerii, Palatinus Vilnensis, necnon supremus Exercituum M. D. L. Dux Casimirien, Bergiovien, Wilken, Loiovien, Retovien, Lubecensis, &c. Gubernator, natus Anno Christi 1715 1711 D. 1 Dec. & denatus A. Ch. 1751 1751, 30 Dec. This Epitaph is engraved on his Coffin.

† The *Lipkas* have an Officer called Felter, whose Power is equal to that of an Aga of the Janisaries in *Turky*. The King of *Poland* has a Life-Guard of them.

merly very large, as may be easily seen by the Ruins of a Wall and Gate, supporting a square Tower, which is still extant at some Distance. Having dined at the Post-Master's, and Mr. Meyer settled his Accounts with his Correspondents, we crossed the *Nieman* on a Wherry, supported by four Monoxils, about two Musket-Shots from the Town, and lay at a Jew's, in a Hamlet, about a Mile further S. E. Very early the next Morning, I went to see the famous Monastery of the *Camaldolines*, a Mile Southward of the Hamlet, and seven or eight Paces out of our Road; 'tis situated on a Hill covered with Pines, Firs, and other Trees. Here I was obliged to cross *Nieman* in a Boat, to ascend the Hill which is called *Peace's Mount*, from Chancellour *Pac*\*, who had a large and sumptuous Palace on it, Part of which he added to the Cloyster, whereof he was the Founder. There was fixed on the first Gate a *Latin* Order, commanding Women under Pain of Excommunication, not to come nearer, except on certain Festivals, when they are allowed to walk in the Processions. I walked over a green Yard, surrounded with fine Walls, to the other Gate which faces the first, where having rung a little Bell, the Porter, who opened the Door, spoke to me in that Country Language; a *Polish* Gentleman, who luckily came to the Gate as soon as I, seeing I could not readily answer him, was so kind as to interpret for me; whereupon the Porter conducted us to one of the Fathers, who shewed us, in a very obliging Manner, all the Curiosities of the Cloyster. When we had past the second Gate, we entered into a spacious Court, inclosed from North to West, with two large Buildings, separated only by the Gate; they were reserved by the Chancellour, for his own and Family's Retreat, and to entertain his Friends that visited him; we see here the Halls and Galleries adorned with fine Paintings, and the Apartments richly furnished; about sixty Paces to the North, almost upon a parallel Line, are two smaller Buildings, to lodge the travelling Clergy and Monks. The Portico of the Church faces both the Gates and the Avenue, which is planted with a double Row of Trees to the first. The Remainder of the Court is inclosed with the Domestick's Apartments, Kitchens, Stables, and Walls. The Portico is crowned with two Turrets, like those of the Perystile of *S. Peter's* in *Rome*; or *S. Paul's* in *London*. I have seen but very few Cloysters better built, or that have richer Materials than this; they have no Images of Saints larger than the Life, of massy Silver, adorned with precious Stones, nor rare Marbles, Balustrades, and Columns of *Lapis Lazuli*, of *Verde Antico*, *Giallo Antico*, &c. as the Jesuits have at *Rome*; yet it is all over inlaid and paved with very good Marble of different Colours, brought from *Cracovia*, and thereabouts. The Cupola is a magnificent Piece. On the inside, the Heavens are painted in the liveliest of Colours, by the best Masters of *Italy*; the eternal Father is drawn in the Form of an old Man, with the Holy Ghost in that of a Dove on his Breast,

\* *Pac*; or *Pniatcôr*, signifies Peace in the *Lithuanian* Tongue.

Breast, and forms the perpendicular Point of a Triangle; Jesus \* Christ crowning the Virgin, make the other two Points; this divine Triangle is placed in the Centre of a brilliant Glory, that shoots it Rays on all the celestial Inhabitants; the Archangels, the Angels, the Cherubims, &c. appear in the Forms usually given them by Painters and Carvers, with several Devices of Thanksgiving, in Gold and Azure Letters, hanging from their Lips; as, *Gloria in Excellis Deo, Regina Cœli*, &c. The blessed Souls are cloathed, some with triple Crowns, others with red Caps like Cardinals; some with Mitres, some with the Habits of the *Camaldolines* † and others in Royal Robes, next a *Turba magna*, naked to their Waistes in a Cloud. The Vault is built strong, the high Altar, whose Columns are of the *Corinthian* Order, is majestic, and the Images of Saints that adorn it are of fine *Italian* Marble; the Ballustrades, and the whole Sanctuary are of the finest party-coloured Marble, admirably well wrought: The Chapels are exceedingly well built, richly adorned, and inclosed with curious Brass Rails; the Choir and Vestry also correspond to the Grandeur of this Church, which has two Doors; one on the Gospel-Side that goes into the Choir (the Choirs of Monasteries are for the most part behind the great Altar) the other on the Epistle-Side, which leads to the Refectory, and Appartments of the Monastery; near this Door is a large black Marble fixed in the Wall, on which is engraved in golden Letters the *Latin* Inscription §, in the Margin, which marks (in very short and affected Terms, and as singular, as those at the Curate of *Radziwillisky*) that the Family of *Pac* founded this Church in 1684, though according to other Inscriptions, which I had seen on some Pictures in one of the Halls of the Palace, it had been founded in 1677 ||; and that the Family of *Berszowski* finished and dedicated it in 1712, in the Pontificate of *Clement the Eleventh*, and Reign of *Augustus the Second*; the Refectory is large and well adorned with Pictures and sacred Devices, as is the General's Appartment, and those designed for the Entertainment of strange Monks and Clergymen, though not compleatly finished, no more than the Infirmary, or the Apothecary's Appartment; however, several of the Monks were lodged in them, till their own Cells were finished, which were then in a very backward Condition, having eighteen to

F f f

build,

\* Jesus Christ appears in a Purple Robe, holding a Cross in one Hand, and putting a Crown on the Virgin's Head with the other.

† The *Camaldolines* are dressed in White, much like the *Bernardines*.

§ D. O. M. Æternitati Pacianæ qua primum erigent. Terram Terræ Reliqui An. M DCLXXXIV. Immortalitati Berzowskiæ qua proveh. a dedicante Cœlo caput intuli An. M DCC XII. D. XV. Oſt. Monumentum ſto Ære Perennius ſub Clem. XI. Pont. Max. ſub Conſtantino Prefule M. D. L. impleor Templ. D. Principis Pacis.

|| The Pictures are the Portraits of the great Chancellour of *Lithuania* and his Spouſe; on the firſt is written, *Chriſtophorus Pac* M. D. L. ſupremus Cancell. in monte pacis fundator 1677; on the ſecond, *Clara Iſabella de Mailli Laſcaris* Cancell. Fundatoris conſors, A. 1677. Our reverend Father could not clear the Difficulty occaſioned by this Contradiſtion.

build, and but six wherein so many Fathers lodged. The Father, who conducted us, said, they could not finish the Church and Cells for less than five hundred thousand Florins, which they expected from the pious Contribution of the Publick, or from some rich Families as zealous as *Pac's* had been. The finished Cells are in the Forest, separate from one another, like those of the *Carthusians*, with little Gardens and several fruit Trees, and other Trees that bear none, which make them look like so many Hermitages, but more decent and commodious. The Monks observe as strict a Silence as those of *La Trap* in *France*, mentioned in my first Volume, unless it be in Case of Necessity; every Week they chuse one or two of the Fathers to entertain alternatively the Strangers that came, as our Conductor did. The Forest was full of Birch-Trees, of whose Roots they made some Toys; our Conductor made each of us a Present of a Spoon made thereof; we put, on our coming out, each a Piece of Money in a Box, which was for that Purpose, in the Parlour.

There are not above six more Monasteries of this Order founded; one at *Gros-bois* in *France*; that in *Tuscany*, near the Borough *Camaldoli*, whence they take that Name, is the chief; the other four in *Italy*, *Spain*, and *Portugal*. The *Florentine* Monastery has sixty such Cells as those already mentioned; is larger than that of Mount *Peace*, but not so magnificent; Women are also kept at a distance from it; they brag to have the choicest of Books and Manuscripts in their Library. *S. Romualdus*, a Native of *Ravenna*, was the Founder of this Order; they pretend he had a Vision much like that of *Jacob*, which suggested the Design, as well as the Manner of cloathing his Monks, to him; that he had founded their Convent in the Year 1090, having beforehand seen several Persons dressed like his Monks, with large Beards and Sleeves, mount the Heavens with a Ladder.

Having returned to join Monsieur *Meyer*, who waited for me about a quarter of a Mile farther, we rid over a Forest two Miles long, which lead us into a very fertile Country, till we came near *Prenney*, where we baited.

It is an antient ruined Borough, with a large well built Church out of repair; the Ruins of a Castle, a Post-House, and two or three Houses more, being the Estate of a *Polish* Gentleman, descended (as he says) from the Family of the *Buttlers* in *England*, and related to the Duke of *Ormond*. We lay at the Post-Master's, with whom we dined the next Day; and, having set out in the Afternoon, we traversed a small Forest, whose Trees were very high, and lay that Night at *Balberisky*, a large Borough, where the Houses and Church are all built with Wood; the *Jews* have here a Synagogue and School. The next Day we dined at *Szerei*, a small Borough also built with Wood, whose Church has been burnt twice in less than four Years; the Owner had mort-

mortgaged this Estate to the King of *Prussia*. We afterwards baited to refresh our Horses at *Marcezz*, another Borough, the only Place worth any Notice on this Rout, and, where we had seen several Fish Ponds, is situated on a River of that Name, which runs into *Nieman*; the Houses were likewise built of Wood, except a few that were partly of Bricks, and had suffered as much in the late Wars as *Prenneys*; its Castle, which had been formerly the Seat of Kings and Princes, and where *Uladaslas the Fourth*, King of *Poland*, had died in 1648, is entirely ruined. We lay at a Jew's, in a Hamlet called *Crapoli*, that Night; the Country all along, from the first Forest hither, is very fertile, and abounds with all manner of Corn, Flax, and Hemp, &c. and continues so to *Grodno*. The next Day we dined at a Jew's in another Hamlet, and lay at *Lepun*, five or six Miles distant from *Grodno*. *Lepun* is a small Town, inferior to some of the Boroughs I had passed through coming from *Kowno*; the Houses are ill built, and of Wood.

The serpentine Course of the River *Nieman*, obliged us, in order to get into the shortest Road to *Grodno*, to cross over to the Village *Psewaska*, which is about two hundred Paces Westward from the River, and having rid through a thick Forest, three Miles from N. to South, and a great deal more from East to West. We again crossed the River for the same Reason as we had before, opposite to *Oza*, a great Village, two Miles from *Grodno*, where we dined. Here I was assured, that the Bears of that Forest, though they be very numerous, are so far from doing any harm to human Creatures, that on the contrary, the she Bears have often reared Infants exposed by unnatural Mothers: That in King *Casimir's* Reign, some Huntsmen had taken two of those Infants alive, which, though they went on All-fours, could not run so fast as the Bears that had nourished them; they reared in the same Manner, and fled from the Sight of Men as they did; the one, by his Growth, was computed to be eleven or twelve Years old; and the other nine or ten. It was a great while before they could be brought to eat any cooked Victuals or Bread, to talk, or walk on their Feet as other Men do; particularly the first, who was kept at Court; the other, being put into a Convent at *Warsbow*, there learnt a few *Polish* Words, but never to that Perfection, as to understand, or be understood well. Their Bodies were very hairy, their Skin tawny, and so hardened, that they could bear cold Weather better than hot; in a Word, they had nothing that could distinguish them from Beasts, but their Shape and Figure; however, as it was believed, that they were human Creatures, they were baptized. The King made a Present of that which had been kept some Time at Court, to the Vice-Chamberlain of *Poznania*, who employed him in his Kitchen; but he could not be reconciled to the Heat thereof, nor weaned of his brutish Customs; he often took a Ramble into the Forest to visit his Friends and Brethren the

the Bears, who used him with all the Tenderneſs imaginable; and he always brought Home ſome wild Fruit, which he uſed to eat with more Pleaſure than any Thing the Kitchen could afford him. This Account is as firmly believed as the Goſpel in that Country. Some Perſons of Credit \* have given the ſame Account of other Infants nourished by wild Beaſts, which gave me Occaſion to make ſome Remarks on a Boy aged about thirteen, that was found in the Woods of *Hameln* in 1725.

I have added theſe Remarks, together with my Voyage to the Mines of *Hanover* in the Year 1724, to the ſecond Volume of the *Engliſh* Edition of my Travels printed in 1730 †. This Youth was by King *George the Firſt's* Orders ſent into *England*, where, I believe, he ſtill remains, and is now about the Age of Twenty; the Difference, between him and the other two mentioned, was, that he had no Hair on his Body, as they had; wore ſtill the Ruins of a Shirt, his Skin was whiter and ſmoother; he walked upright when he was taken, which ſhews, that he had not always lived in the Foreſt; he was very ſenſible of Cold in Winter, though well cloathed; could not ſpeak plainly, which proceeded from an Impediment in his Tongue (if we may give Credit to the Account given of him in the *Hamburgh Gazette*) which alſo mentioned, that he was born on the Banks of the *Weſer*, that his Father, who was then alive, had been a Fiſherman, and had a Daughter with the like Impediment in her Speech, but no way inclined to live in Woods or Foreſts, as her Brother was, who had eſcaped ſeveral Times from his Father, to lead a ſavage Life.

Grodno.

*Oza* is more populous than a great many of the Towns and Boroughs we have ſeen in this Journey; the Church is of Wood, and curiouſly built; after Dinner, we proceeded on our Journey, and arrived at *Grodno* at fix in the Evening; we went directly to the Poſt-Maſter's, where I left my Fellow-Traveller, and went to Count *Wratiſlaw's*, to deliver him the Letters Count *Rabutin* had given me for him; whoſe courteous Manner of entertaining me, made me ſenſible of the Eſteem he had for Count *Rabutin's* Recommendation; he generouſly offered me an Appartment in his Houſe, and told me, I ſhould be welcome to his Table, and to travel along with him to *Warſaw*, whither he was to go in a little Time; but as he was to ſup abroad that Night, he recommended me to his Secretary. Having acquainted the Count with my Deſign of viſiting Mr. *Finch*, the *Britiſh* Envoy, he deſired me to compliment him in his Name, to aſſure him of the Eſteem he had for him, and was ſorry, that, for ſome Reaſons of State, he could not ſee him.

In

\* Mr. *Chriſtopher Hartknock*, in his *State of Poland*. Dr. *Conner*, in his Letter to Mr. *Stepney*, which is inſerted in his *History of Poland*.

† The *Engliſh* Edition is ſold by Meſſieurs *Melgham* and *Round*, Bookſellers at *London*; and Meſſieurs *Bradley* and *Grierſon*, at *Dublin*. I would have given a new Edition of my *Voyages* in *Engliſh*, if the two Bookſellers, who printed the *French* Edition at the *Hague*, had not unjuſtly kept my Copper-Plates from me.

In short, Mr. *Finch* was as much deserted, as if he had the Plague in his Family; being visited by none but the Abbot *d'Ivry*, Envoy from France: The Prussian Minister, who had so warmly remonstrated in Concert with Mr. *Finch*, in favour of the Protestants of *Thorn*, pursuant to the Instructions they had from their respective Courts, since his Master (as it was then believed) had receded from the Treaty of *Hanover*, and acceded to that of *Vienna*, thunned him most. The most exasperated of the *Polanders* against the Protestants, and particularly the most averse to the Satisfaction by them demanded, took Occasion to threaten him with Violence, if he did not leave the Country; insomuch, that a Priest, out of pretended Friendship, or rather with a View of being well rewarded, came to tell him, that upwards of one hundred *Polanders*, zealously devoted to the Interest of the *Jesuits*, had received the Primate's Consent for attacking him in his House; to which Mr. *Finch* answered with his usual Calmness and Resolution, 'That if he (the Priest) knew any of them, he might assure them, they had need of coming well armed; for that he had arms for thirty Men, on whose Courage and Fidelity he could repose; so that if the Conspirators had the Primate's Consent, as he had told him, they should not all return to have his Reward and Absolution for so doing'. As to the King of *Poland*, he had always a great Regard for him, neither was it his Fault, that the States of the Kingdom (amongst whom, Mr. *Finch* had some Friends) had not the same.

The chief Transactions of the Diet, (which was then just broke up) were, 1. That of *Thorn*, which not only confirmed the Decisions made at *Warsaw*, but decided, and concluded, that the Decree of the assessorial Court against that City should be fully executed. 2. Confirmed the Nullity of Prince *Maurice's* Election, for which, as well as for his Majesty's gracious Diploma, whereby he agreed to govern his Subjects according to the Laws of the Kingdom, as also for his Generosity in sacrificing his own Blood and Interest for the publick Tranquillity, had the Thanks of the whole Diet, in repeated *Vivat Rex*. It was also agreed and decreed, that the Inhabitants of sixty Bailiwicks of the Dutchies of *Courland*, *Semigallia*, and the District of *Piltten*, should be not only treated as Fellow-Burghers of *Poland* and *Lithuania*, but should enjoy, under the Protection of the Republick, all the Priviledges, Rights and Liberties, as well with Regard to Spirituals, according to the Confession of *Ausburg*, as Temporals, granted them by *Sigismundus Augustus*, *quam diu bene se gesserint*, provided it would not prejudice the free Exercise of the Catholick Religion, as stipulated in the Constitution of the Year 1676, or the Treaty of *Warsaw*; for if otherwise, they had seen the Fate of the Inhabitants of *Thorn*, and could not expect any better Treatment for themselves. 3. The Execution of the Treaty concluded between *Peter the First*, late Emperour of *Russia*,

G g

and



and the King was strenuously urged, the Emperour having, in Order to induce his *Polish* Majesty to join him against *Sweden*, engaged himself by that Treaty to surrender all the Conquests he should jointly or separately make in *Livonia*, to the Republick, which he had never performed; and I dare add, he had no such Design, no more than the Empress *Catharine*, who, the better to secure the said Conquests, and to prevent all unforeseen Attempts upon them, had caused several new Fortifications to be added to *Riga*, and kept some *Russian* Troops on the Frontiers for that Purpose; and seemed to threaten *Courland*, as I have observed already; though *Poland* could not pretend to support its Pretensions on that Dutchy, but an *ultima ratio regum*, which was not equal to the Czarina's. 4. The Augmentation of the Troops, the Funds to pay them, as well as the other Troops already in the Republick's Service; whereupon it was resolved to lay a Tax on the *Jews*. 5. That all Ecclesiasticks should be excluded from temporal Tribunals: Rejected. 6. The *Jus Patronatus*, or, the Title of Patronage, pretended to by the Popes of *Rome*, under which Pretext the Holy See had drawn large Sums of Money out of the Kingdom for several Years, to the great Damage of the Republick; which occasioned the Resolution of sending an Ambassy to his Holiness, to remonstrate the Injustice of his Pretensions to a Title, which the King and Republick would never give up. The Abbot *Santini*, Nuncio from the Pope, having disputed this Resolution with as much Warmth as Mr. *Finch* had the Decree against the Inhabitants of *Thorn*, was looked upon at Court as no better than the latter; even some Deputies proposed to have him banished the Kingdom. 7. The Places vacant in the State, &c. for the Filling of which the Deputies of the Diet gave their Suffrages, and recommended to his Majesty for the Castellany of *Cracovia*, Prince *Wisnowiesky*, Palatine thereof; and the King approved of the same. Prince *Lobomirsky*, Chamberlain of the Crown, was recommended and promoted to the Palatinate, vacant by *Wisnowiesky's* Advancement; and M. *Szembeck*, Chamberlain of *Cracovia*, to be Chamberlain of the Crown. M. *Dunin*, Regent of the Royal Chancery, and several others were also put into Places; and M. *Rzwiesky*, Under-General, was recommended to the Staff of Grand-General, and M. *Komantowsky*, Marshal of the Court, to that of Under-General; the King approved of these Nominations, and conferred the Posts upon them. The Deputies of *Poland*, ever since the Crown became Elective, chuse, by the Plurality of Votes, the Candidates for the vacant Places in the State, as it is done in *Sweden*; and the King has only the Power of Conferring the Posts on any of the Persons whom he shall think proper, and who are thus chosen. As to the rest, his Power is much like a *British* King's; he has the Liberty to do every Thing that is good, but nothing else.

As

As to the Election of the *Polish* Kings, the Family of *Jagellon* being extinct in *Sigismundus Augustus*, the *Polanders* revived their Right of Chusing their Kings, (a Right, which was only interrupted and not abolished.) The Primate of the Kingdom, enjoying the highest Authority during an Inter-Reign, in the Beginning of the Year 1573, assembled a Diet \* for the Election of a Successour to the Crown, where the chief Candidates were *John*, King of *Sweden*, the young Duke of *Prussia*, the Duke of *Saxony*, the Marquis of *Brandenbourg*, and the Czar of *Muscovy*; who were all rejected as Protestants, and the latter chiefly on Account of his Cruelties. *Ernest*, the Emperour *Maximilian's* Son, had a numerous and powerful Party of Protestants as well as *Roman Catholics*; but the Favour and Regard, shewn by the Imperial Court to the former, ruined *Ernest's* Interest at the Diet. *Henry de Valois*, Brother to King *Charles the Ninth* of *France*, was his chiefest Rival. The old Jealousies of *France* and *Austria* inspired *Charles* with the Design of Procuring the Crown of *Poland* for his Brother *Henry*. The famous Massacre of *S. Bartholomew* had recommended him very much to the Favour of the Court of *Rome*, where a Medal was struck, representing the Massacre on one Side with this Motto, *Hugonotorum strages*, &c. and on the Reverse the Pope's Bust. He was very sensible of the particular Influence this Court had on the *Roman Catholics* of *Poland*; and no ways ignorant, that Cardinal *Commendon*, an able Politician, and Legate from the Court of *Rome* to that of *Poland*, was in the Imperial Interest; whom he endeavoured by the Pope's Means to bring over to his own. The little Regard the Emperour shewed to the Legate's Advices with respect to his Behaviour to the Protestants, facilitated his Success therein; for the Cardinal, finding a good Pretext in the Emperour's Negligence, abandoned his Party to promote the Interest of his Son's Rival; having at the same Time carried several powerful Partizans to the *French* Faction; amongst whom were *Christopher Radziwill*, Palatine of *Vilna*, and *John Koskewisky*, Grand-Marshal; both Chiefs of the most illustrious Families of *Lithuania*, and the Cardinal's Profelytes to the Church of *Rome*. A formidable Party being thus formed in Opposition to *Ernest's* Interest, the Cardinal advised the Court of *France*, that it was high Time to demand the Crown of *Poland* by an Ambassadour. *M. Monluc*, Bishop of *Valence*, was named by the King of *France* to negotiate this important Affair; to whom *Giles of Noailles*, Abbot of *l'Isle*, and *Guy* of *S. Gelais*, Lord of *Lansac*, were given as Colleagues. The Embassy was very magnificent, and exceedingly well received. The Cardinal, having demanded Audience, made

a very

\* The Diet is composed of Senatours and Deputies, or Nuncio's, being the Members sent by the Palatinates, or *Polish* Provinces; who meet in a Chamber like that of the House of Commons of *Great Britain*, whence they make their Reports to the King and Senate, of the Resolutions they come to. The Senate is composed of 160 Members. The Diet was constantly held for two Years at *Warsaw*, and the third at *Grodno*; but it was resolved in this, that it should be more frequently at *Grodno*.

a very eloquent Oration to the Diet, wherein he extolled *Henry's* Piety and Zeal for the *Roman Catholick* Religion to the Skies, and as cunningly insinuated, that the Imperial Court was full of Hereticks; and that it was to be feared the Imperial Family was infected with their Sentiments; that it was necessary to give *Poland* a King, not only a Catholick as to himself, but that he should be also chosen by Catholicks. This bold Discourse, made by a Stranger, at a Time that the Protestants were very powerful, so irritated them, that *Peter Zborowsky*, their Chief, told him he had spoken with too much Freedom of the Affairs of the Kingdom; that he should remember he was a Stranger, and not a Senator. Others having threatened him with Violence, he answered, That he was sensible he was a Stranger; yet that, as he was a Priest, and a Legate from the Holy, Catholick, and Apostolick Church of *Rome*, he thought himself obliged to advance her Interest on all Occasions, and humbly intreated the Diet to grant him the Liberty of continuing his Discourse, which being agreed to, his Speech was so pathetick, that all the Catholicks, who had stood out for *Ernest*, came into his Measures; and the Day for the Election was immediately appointed: Monsieur *Montuc* had an Audience the Day following of the Diet, which he found as favourably disposed as he could wish, and took that Opportunity to represent the Prince he proposed for a King to the *Polish* Nation, in the most advantageous Manner he could, extolled his Wisdom and Courage, and bragged that the Apennage he had in *France* was sufficient to equip a Fleet, which would render *Poland* Mistress of the *Baltick-Sea*; that he would entertain one hundred *Polish* Gentlemen at his own Expences, and furnish four thousand Foot for the Service of the Republick in case of War; in short, that they might promise themselves a glorious Reign, under a Prince of his Wisdom, Courage, and Zeal for the Catholick Religion. The other Ambassadors and Partizans, as well Protestants as Catholicks, urged, that *Ernest* was as good a Catholick as *Henry*; yet, whether his Offers seemed less advantageous, his Presents less considerable, or that they were unwilling to have a King of the Imperial Family, they declined his Interest. The Diet having assembled for the Election on the 10th of *May*, 1573, sat till seven of the Clock in the Afternoon, when *Henry* carried the Election, and was declared King of *Poland* by the Primate; but, on Account of the approaching Holy-day, his Proclamation was deferred till the *Monday* following; which Interval gave *Ernest's* Adherents an Opportunity of taking up Arms, and demanding a new Election; *Henry's* did the like; but the Legate, and other Prelates soon made them good Friends; and *Henry* was proclaimed King with the usual Formalities by the Great-Marshal; an Ambassy was then dispatched for him, and, being come, he was conducted to *Cracovia* for his Coronation, which it was thought would be disturbed by the Protestants, who desired he would sign several Articles they had pre-

presented to him concerning their Privileges, particularly with Regard to their Religion; declaring their just Fears of a Prince who was so deeply concerned in the Massacre of *S. Bartholomew*, which is called the Feast of Martyrs by the Protestants, and the Extirpation of Heresy by the bigotted Catholics. Some were so hardy as to say, that this was the only Occasion whereon the Prince had signalized that Zeal and Courage so much spoken of and recommended by Monsieur *Monluc*, notwithstanding, by fair Promises, and urging, that the King of *Poland* was not so absolute as that of *France*, and was obliged on Oath to observe the *Pacta Conventa*, Means were found to appease them. The next Year, on that Day of the Month, as *Henry* had been elected, he received the News of his Brother *Charles*, King of *France's* Death, and on the Night of the eighteenth of *June*, having communicated his Design to none but his *French* Favourites, with whom he left Letters for the Senate, and some particular Persons flattering them with Promises of his Return, set out for *France*, to take Possession of that Crown, and prevent the Duke of *Alençon*, his younger Brother, to make any Advantage of his Absence, by forming a Party to dispute a Crown with him, which he preferred to that of *Poland*, whither he never returned any more.

In the beginning of *November*, a preliminary Diet, for electing a new King, met, and proved very tumultuous and irregular. *John*, King of *Sweden* demanded the Crown, but was rejected on account of his Religion. The Emperour *Maximilian* demanded it again for his Son *Ernest*, who offered to marry the Princess *Jagellon*, *Sigismund's* Sister, who was almost three times as old as he was. *Stephen Battori*, Prince of *Transilvania*, demanded the Crown, and offered to marry the Princess too: Both were accepted, but *Ernest* had the Plurality of Votes for him. The Primate, who was as much devoted to the House of *Austria*, as the Nobility were prejudiced, seeing the latter joyn such of the Senators as opposed the Imperial Interest, clandestinely got all the Suffrages he could, named *Ernest* King, and had him proclaimed by the Great Marshal in the usual Manner. The Senators in *Stephen's* Interest protested against this irregular Election; the Nobility was so highly provoked, that in the middle of the following *December*, the *Palatinates* having assembled, Princess *Ann Jagellon* was declared and proclaimed Queen of *Poland*, and *Stephen Battori* to be her Spouse and King. These Proceedings seemed to be authorized by the Example of *Edgewig*, by whose Marriage her Father came to the Crown. The Articles were drawn up and signed by *Battori's* Ambassadors; thus the Nobility made it appear, that if the supreme Power, during an Inter-Reign, was possessed by the Senate, the chief Force of the State was vested in them, who, not satisfied with having proclaimed that Prince King of *Poland*, put themselves in a Condition to in-

H h h

troduce

introduce him; and support him in spite of all Opposers; they had him crowned by the Bishop of *Uladislawia* at *Cracovia*. His rare Qualities soon justified the Choice they had made of him, and gained him the Hearts of all his new Subjects. *Maximilian*, having made several ineffectual Efforts to procure the Crown of *Poland* for his Son, died in *October*, 1576, as did his Faction in that Kingdom with him. *Battori*, who was courageous, but not rash, retook from *Muscovy* in two Campaigns all that *Poland* had lost, in the Reign of *Sigismundus Augustus*; he was preparing for a third, when the Czar, fearing the Loss of his capital City, solicited Peace; *Battori*, who was resolved to pursue his Conquests, would listen to no pacifick Proposals, from a Monarch famous for the little Regard he had to Treaties, till the Pope interposed his pressing Sollicitations. The *Muscovite*, in order to obtain the Pope's Mediation, had sent a magnificent Ambassy to *Rome*, and flattered his Holiness, with repeated Assurances of reuniting the *Roman* and *Greek* Religions in all his Territories; but, as soon as he had gained his Ends, gave himself no further Trouble to make his Promises to the Pope good. *Battori* was religious, and a good Catholic without Ostentation, an Enemy to Hypocrisy and forced Conversions; he contented himself with encouraging the Protestants to embrace his Religion, by giving Posts and Employments to such as had freely done so; and though they had all declared for *Ernest*, he was as impartial to them, as to the Catholics that had done the same; and used to say in *Latin* (of which he was Master) *Tria sibi reservavit Deus; Creare aliquid ex nihilo; Nosce futura; Dominari conscientis*; that God had reserved three Things for himself, *viz.* to create Something out of Nothing; to foreknow every thing; and to reign over Consciences. He would have left *Poland* in a flourishing Condition, if the Shortness of his Life had not prevented him. As the neighbouring Parts of *Grodno* are very fit for Hunting, (a Sport of which he was very fond,) he resided there for the most part, and, though no ways accused of Gallantry, deprived the old Queen, his Wife, of his Company, to whom he could not be very amorous in her old Age; but in every other Respect treated her with all the Politeness imaginable: He died of an Epilepsy at *Grodno*, the 13th of *December*, 1586, which was as sincerely regretted by his Subjects, as he justly deserved their Love.

I shall not here enlarge on the Factions and Troubles of the Inter-Reign, and the Election of a Successour, which was more tumultuous and irregular than the preceding. *Poland* was divided into three Factions; one for the King of *Sweden*, who demanded the Crown for his Son *Sigismund*, and, to shew how much he had the *Romish* Religion at Heart, he ordered the Liturgy thereof to be published all over his Kingdom. The second Faction was for the Archduke *Maximilian*, the Em-

Emperour *Rodolphus*'s Brother. The third was for the Czar, who not only offered to unite his Crown to that of *Poland*, but also to establish the *Romish* Religion in his Dominions; as Experience had already shewn, how little his Proposals, which the Court of *Rome* called *Greek Faith*, were to be depended upon, his Faction did not long subsist. The other two were up in Arms. The King of *Sweden* had the Primate and principal Senatours in his Interest; and, not content with having published the Liturgy, he began to persecute his *Lutheran* Subjects: His Son *Sigismund*'s Preceptour, who instructed him in their Sentiments, narrowly escaped his Hands, and said, *His Son should be educated in that Religion, which would qualify him for two Crowns.* *Maximilian* had the Court of *Rome*, the Protestants, and a considerable Number of the Catholick Nobility for him. The Diet proceeded to the Election on the ninth of *August*, 1587. The Primate, finding that the Plurality of Votes were for *Sigismund*, he named him King of *Poland*, and an Embassy was dispatched for him. *Maximilian*'s Faction protested against this Election, assembled on the twelfth of *August*, declared him King of *Poland*, and sent also an Embassy for him. The Diet, which had not been then dissolved, declared the last Election seditious and void, and, foreseeing that *Maximilian* would not fail to come well armed, *Zamowsky*, Great General of the Republick, and *Sigismund*'s Partizan, was charged to march at the Head of his Forces, and dispute *Maximilian*'s Entrance into *Poland*. He defeated him twice; first near *Cracovia*, where he obliged him to raise his Siege, and next in *Silesia*; but having at last besieged him in a small Town, called *Plesina*, he there took him Prisoner. *Sigismund* generously granted *Maximilian* his Liberty without any Ransom, only obliging him to sign a Treaty, whereby he should renounce all the Pretensions he had to the Crown, of which his Brother *Rodolphus*, the Emperour, was Guarantee. The Union of the two Monarchies caused a War, which cost *Sigismund* the Crown of *Sweden*, *Gustavus Adolphus*, his Uncle, having seized on it, and on all the Conquests *Poland* had made in the foregoing Reign. *Sigismund* governed the Republick till the Year 1631, when a violent Cold, accompanied with a Fever, carried him to his Grave, aged sixty six.

*Uladislas*, his eldest Son was elected after him with all the Tranquillity and Regularity imaginable; his Courage, Prudence, and happy Success against the *Muscovites* and *Turks*, gave the *Polanders* Hopes, that he would repair all their Losses; but, dying at the Castle of *Merez* in 1648, (as I have already observed) brought the Republick under new Difficulties, whereof the War with *Sweden*, and the Revolt of the *Cossacks*, which happened immediately after his Decease, were the chiefest, and made great Devastations. His Successour's powerful Competitors gave terrible Alarms; the Czar demanded the Crown, and threatened, in case of Refusal, to invade *Poland* with an Army of

100000



100000 Men. *George Ragotsky*, Prince of *Transilvania*, demanded it on much the same Terms, and had 30000 Men ready for the Service of the Republick; or to be employed against it, if he should not be chosen King. The People were mostly inclined for *John Casimir*, *Uladislas's* Brother, whom that Monarch had by his last Will recommended; but, being represented as incapable of remedying the present Misfortunes of the Republick, or preventing the future, some endeavoured to have him excluded. The Bishop of *Kiow* persuaded *Charles*, *John Casimir's* younger Brother, then Bishop of *Plocko*, to enter the List, and send an Embassy to the preliminary Diet to demand the Crown; where the Bishop of *Kiow*, to prove *Casimir's* Lenity, Weakness and Inconstancy, urged, that he had been a *Jesuit* \*, and that Society as dangerous, by whose constant Differences with the Inhabitants of *Riga* that City had been lost. He advanced several other Motives of Dissatisfaction, which they had given to the Nobles of *Poland* in the preceding Reigns, by procuring Employments for their own Creatures, which the Nobility had merited by their Services for the State; and that they must expect the like, or worse Injustice, from a Prince that was governed by them as one of their own Members. This Discourse made no Impression, except on such as were disgusted with the Society. The Bishop of *Samogithia* defended *Casimir's* Title to the Crown with great Applause; the Ambassadors of Prince *Ragotsky*, seeing those of the Emperour, the King of *France*, and the Pope's Nuncio, declare for him, changed their Notes, and did the same; adding, that if he would not carry the Election, their Master would still insist on his former Proposals. Prince *Charles*, repining at the Steps he had taken, sent to beg his Brother's Pardon and Friendship, which he obtained; and *Casimir* was elected on the 17th of *Nov.* 1648; who, after 20 Years vexatious Reign, both by foreign and domestick Wars, he abdicated the Crown in 1668, and retired into *France*, where he was made Abbot of *S. Germain's* in *Paris*. In the Year 1672 he died at *Nevers*. The Monument, erected for him in his Abbey, has an elegant *Latin* Epitaph, very much praising his Zeal for the *Catholick* Religion, and shewing, 'That he  
' had banished the *Socinians* out of the Kingdom, and all those that  
' differed from the *Romish* Communion out of the Senate: For which  
' Pope *Alexander the Seventh* gave him the Title of *Orthodox*. That  
' he had founded several Monasteries and Hospitals at *Warsaw*. That  
' he had subdued the *Cossacks*, defeated the *Muscovites*, the *Branden-*  
' *burghs*, the *Germans*, and the *Tartars*. That of 17 Battles, he had  
' fought, he had lost but one; and that his Courage was always equal  
' to his Piety.'

Mi-

\* He took the Habit of a *Jesuit* at *Loretto* in 1643; and the King his Brother, to withdraw him with Honour from that Body, procured him a Cardinal's Cap in 1646, which he laid down in Hopes of the Crown, when that Monarch's Son died.



*Michael Koributh* \* *Wisnowiesky*, a *Polander*, was elected, to the Exclusion of the Czar, who demanded the Crown for his Son, who, he engaged, should be instructed a Roman Catholick. The Dukes of *Narbourgh* and *Lorrain* also demanded the Crown; but their Interest was so inconsiderable, that they dropt their Pursuits. The Czar, seeing no Appearance of Success on his Side, alarmed the Republick with eighty thousand Men he had on the Frontiers of *Lithuania*; but the Great Chancellour, *Christopher Pacz*, Founder of the Monastery before-mentioned, so ingeniously amused him with engaging Promises, that he undertook nothing to the Prejudice of the Republick; while the Czar was thus cajoled, the *Polanders* had raised sufficient Forces to oppose his Designs; which, he was so infatuated as to believe, were levied for the Support of his Interest, in retaking *Livonia* from the *Swedes*, *Koributh* had not, in all this Time, shewn his Capacity, by any thing popular, having lived on a Pension given him by *Casimir*, since the *Cossacks* and *Tartars* had ruined and pillaged a few Houses he had in *Polish Russia*. *Poland* had never made a worse Choice, nor ever was Reign so unhappy, nor any Man so unfit for such a Burthen as he was; which he ingeniously declared, with Tears in his Eyes, and said to those that were sent to bring him from the Convent of the *Recoletts* in *Warsaw*, to have him crowned, 'That he did not find himself capable of undertaking so great and weighty a Charge'. The Loss of *Camienieck* and *Podolia*, together with a shameful Peace made with the *Turks*, by which *Poland* became tributary to them, were so many fatal Proofs of the same; but on the tenth of *November* they were delivered from this unfortunate King, whom Death had put an everlasting Period to; and from the Tribute they paid the *Turks*, and utter Ruin they were exposed to, by *John Sobiesky*, Great Marshal of the Crown, who defeated the *Ottoman* Army at *Kotchin* the same Day.

*John Sobiesky*, after this glorious Action, was judged worthy of a Throne, which *Michael* had so unworthily possessed, and of repairing the Losses of his shameful Reign; he had, together with the former Rivals for the Crown, the Electour of *Brandenbourg*, Prince *George* of *Denmark*, and *Don John* of *Austria*, to dispute the Election with; besides, the Jealousies of some powerful *Polish* Lords, excited by the formidable Interest of the two Packs, was not the least Difficulty he had to surmount; the Great Chancellour, and the General of *Lithuania* his Brother, declared for the Duke of *Lorrain*, and proposed a Marriage between him and the Queen Dowager, whereof *Clair de Mailli*, the Chancellour's Wife, was the chief Promoter †; they repaired

I i i

to

\* He descended from *Koributh*, *Jagellons*'s Uncle by the Mother.

† *Clair de Mailli*, born in *France*, first Lady of Honour, and Favourite to the Queen, had painted the Duke of *Lorrain* in so advantageous a Manner to her Majesty, that she fell passionately in Love with him, who had not the least Affection for her.

to the Diet with an Army, which, together with that the Duke had on the Frontiers, seemed to assure them the Election: But *John Sobiesky*, by the general Inclination of the People, and the Army of the Crown which he commanded, was chosen King, and maintained the Dignity of the Crown with great Reputation, as the raising of the Siege of *Vienna* justly records. He died in 1696, before he could retake *Caminieck* or *Podolia*, which, together with the Avarice he was accused of, and making a Jew \* his chief Favourite, by whose Means he disposed of all the Employments of the State to the best Bidders, drew the Hatred of the People on his Family, who were excluded from the Succession.

If the late King, by his Covetousness, raised the People's Resentment against his Posterity, *Augustus the Second*, his Successour, by his Liberality, and Generosity (Qualities that never should be wanting in a King) merited their Affections. The preliminary Diet met on the twenty ninth of *August*, 1697, and was interrupted by one *Polish* Nobleman, who protested against its Proceedings, on account of the Queen Dowager's Intrigues, and that she had not retired with the Princes her Sons, as was customary on such Occasions. *Augustus* was elected in spite of the Millions, the Queen Dowager had distributed to preserve it in her own Family; and of the Primate who was at the head of a powerful Faction for the Prince of *Conti*; for whom he clandestinely procured most of the Suffrages, and named him King of *Poland*. *Augustus* (I say) was elected by his own Party in a subsequent Diet, and named King, by the Bishop of *Cujavie*, and crowned by him at *Cracovia*, as *Battori* had been by the Bishop of *Uladislavia*. The Primate, to whom (as Archbishop of *Griefne*) that Office belonged, continued attached to the Prince of *Conti*'s Interest.

In 1704 the King of *Sweden*, having defeated *Augustus*, convoked a Diet at *Warsaw*, and had *Stanislaus Lenisky*, Palatine of *Posnania*, chosen to succeed him. I had seen *Stanislaus*'s Father, who was Embassadour from the King of *Sweden* to the *Ottoman* Port, make his Publick Entry at *Constantinople* in 1700, as I have described in my first Volume. What was most remarkable in this Entry, was to see the Embassadour preceded by 600 Horsemen with drawn Swords, and cloathed with the same Armour, as *John Sobiesky* had taken from the *Turks* he had killed, or made Prisoners before *Vienna*. While the King of *Sweden* was victorious in *Poland*, the Czar, who was his Ally, and had engaged

\* The Jew, whose Name was *Bethsel*, was recommended by the Queen, (who was no less tainted with Avarice) as the properest Person to serve the King's Purposes, of whom he farmed all the Crown-Lands. Being accused of Sacrilege, by some Merchants at the Diet of *Grodno*, in 1692, who proved against him, that he used to make them swear by a Crucifix, which he kept in his Office, that they had committed no Frauds; and when done, used to fling the Crucifix with Contempt into a Corner again, whereupon he was judged to have deserved Death. The King alledged that the Fact was not clearly proved, therefore saved his Life, and continued him in his Favour.

gaged him in this unfortunate War, entered into *Estonia*, and took several Towns from him.

I promised to be very concise in my Account of the Election of the Kings of *Poland*, but the Multitude of Particularities that have occurred, and which I have thought worthy of Notice, obliged me to dwell so long on this Subject, which I hope will not be disagreeable to my Readers, and now return to *Grodno*, from whence this Digression had distanced me.

The King's Palace, where the Diet assembles, is not remarkable for any Beauty or Architecture; the Halls, where the Senators and Deputies meet, are not much smaller than those of the Lords and Commons in *Westminster*; that of the Senators is the largest; the Apartments in the Court are neat and commodious, which is the most advantageous Thing I can say of them. The Town has but a very small Number of good Houses, built partly with Brick and Clay, and partly with Wood plaistered over with Lime, whereof several are ruined and abandoned. The Streets are so ill paved and so dirty, that in rainy Weather there is no walking through them without Boots. The Churches are beautiful and well adorned; that of the *Jesuits*, which is near the Palace, exceeds all the rest in Architecture, and Ornaments; the Parish Church, which stands opposite, is a *Gothick* Building, nor so well built as that of the *Dominicans*, which, contrary to Custom, has the High-Altar in the West End. *Stephen Battori*, by whom this Town was built, died here in 1586. The *Muscovites* plundered and ruined it in 1655. In the late Wars it had no better Fate, when the Churches were all ransacked, and several of the Inhabitants rendered incapable of repairing the Losses they had sustained, or rebuilding their Houses again.

Our Departure from *Grodno*, being fixed to the twenty eighth of *November*, Count *Wratislaw* ordered two Waggons to set out very early in the Morning, with his Baggage, Kitchen-Furniture, his Cook, and Family, together with an Assistant, and other Domesticks, by which Means he had so ordered our Rout, that we were to have Dinner and Supper ready prepared wherever we arrived. In the Afternoon his Excellency set out in a Coach and Six, accompanied with two Gentlemen and his Secretary, being immediately followed by another Coach and Six, with his Chaplain, under Secretary, and I. We arrived about seven of the Clock in the Evening at *Odelska*, a small Borough, where the Count, &c. rested that Night; the Houses are for the most part of Wood, ill built and the Church is no better. The Chaplain, being an honest *Franciscan* Fryar disguised in secular Cloaths, was as accustomed to eat (at least) four Meals a Day, as to read his Prayers, learned without Pedantry, and devote without Hypocrisy, crammed his Pockets here with a roasted Fowl, a Flask of *Hungary* Wine, a Viol of *Rosa Solis*, Bread, Biskets, and Sweet-Meats; I made bold to ask him, if he was apprehen-

apprehensive of Hunger on the Road? He told me it was good to be always provided, and that with such a Stock, that he might wait with Patience for Dinner next Day. On the twenty ninth, having taken a light Breakfast, we set out very early from *Odelska*, and went to dine at *Nietuppe*, a small Village and poor Lordship, belonging to M. *Buskosky*, Captain of the great Treasury. Here the Chaplain garnished his Pockets a new; whereupon I asked him the same Question as before; he answered, that the Roads might prove bad, which would oblige us to arrive late at the Place we were to rest in that Night; therefore, that it would not be amiss to have something to prevent our being impatient for Supper. The under Secretary told me, it was always his Custom when he travelled to wrap up something, as well after Dinner as at Supper, to eat on the Road, which gave me an Opportunity of calling him *Providentia*; but as he was very facetious, and had none of the Faults common to those of his Profession, he was not displeased with my Freedom; we were as good Friends as could be, and conversed in *Latin*, which was the only Language common to us both. The Count, having heard me call him by the Nick-Name I had given him, desired to know the Meaning of it, and laughed heartily when I had told him, adding, that he was very glad he was so careful of me. It proved very providential, that on that Day he had made good Provision for the Road; for the Snow, which fell in such abundance soon after our Departure, had so covered the Roads, that we were at a Loss, to know which Way we should steer our Course. At Night we found ourselves in a Forest, where in all Probability we should have staid till Morning, if a Countryman, whom we had there met with, had not conducted us, by the Count's Orders, to *Potelami*, where his Excellency had proposed at his Setting out to rest that Night. The Waggon had no better Success, that were employed to carry the Kitchen-Furniture, and one overturned in such an ugly Place, that they were two Hours before they could get it up again; they arrived about one of the Clock in the Morning, being an Hour later than we were. *Potelami* is a good large Village, and was formerly a Borough; the Houses are all built of Wood, as is the Church. The Inhabitants are all *Cossacks*, whose Curate is of their own Nation, and married; he observes externally all the Ceremonies of the *Greek Church*, and conforms in every Thing else with the Church of *Rome*; believes in Transubstantiation and Purgatory, and every other Point disputed by the Eastern Church; he visited the Count, and invited him to Breakfast; but as his Excellency had promised, when he was in the Forest, to have a Mass said in Honour of S. *Anthony*, he was resolved to hear it first: The Chaplain read Prayers in his own Ornaments; the Church, though of Wood, is well built; the Altar is altogether to the East. We breakfasted at the Curate's House, whose Wife was about 40, and had the Ruins of a beautiful Woman; her Daughter, who

who was about fifteen Years old, was very handsome. The Count, having made them a Present, took Coach, and set out with his Retinue. When we had travelled half a Mile, we entered *Podlachia*, a small, fertile and agreeable Province; we dined at *Plotsky*, a small Town pleasantly situated on the River *Narew*, which abounds in all Manner of Fish, particularly Carp and Tench. Most of the Houses are built with Wood, as is the Church, and the Convent of the *Carmelites*. We crossed the River on a wooden Bridge, 67 Paces long; and, as the Snow continued to fall very thick, we took a Guide (to prevent Accidents) to conduct us to *Balisko*, a large Town, situated on the Rivulet *Biala*; whence it takes its Name, and runs into *Narew* near *Plotsky*. Here is a Castle, a Parish-Church, two Convents, and a *Lutheran* Church; the Parish-Church is built with Stones and Brick, and has nothing remarkable, any more than the other three, which are built with Wood. This Town has been a Martyr to the late Wars, and complains as much of the *Swedes* as of the *Muscovites*.

The first of *December* we dined at *Ploesky*, a small Town, belonging to the Treasurer of *Lithuania*, built as the preceding, and in as bad a Condition; it has a Church, and two Chappels, tolerably well adorned: That Night we lay at a poor Village, called *Dolebow*.

On the second, we dined at *Grodisky*, another Village, where we entered into the Palatinate of *Mazovia*. We crossed the River *Bunge* at *Kezamenieck*, where we lay that Night; it is a small Borough, tolerably well built, whose Parish-Church is not despicable, no more than that of the Convent. Though it had ceased snowing, the Frost began so violent, that the River, which abounds in Fish, was covered with Ice.

The third Day we dined at *Zendskow*, a good Village, and lay at *Wengrafz*, which was the largest Town we had seen since our Departure from *Grodno*: It has four beautiful Churches, viz. that of the Parish, the two Convents of Reformed *Franciscans* and *Bethlemites*, and that of the *Lutherans*; several Brick Houses, and a larger Number built with Wood, which bear the Marks of the *Swedes* and *Russians* since the late Wars\*. The Parish-Church is well built; that of the *Franciscans* comes next to it in Ornaments; but that of the *Bethlemites* is larger; there is also a Seminary for the Education of Youth.

We dined the fourth Day at *Dobrez*, a large Village, superiour to some of the Towns we had seen. The Church, as well as the Houses, is of Wood, and well built. We lay at *Stanisslaw*, a small Borough, with one Church and a Chappel of Ease, both built with Wood, and of no Note. We set out early the next Morning, and dined at the Village of *Olmio*, and lay that Night at *Prag*, which is a large Town

K k k

with

\* The *Latin* Inscription on the Portico of this Church imports, that it was burnt and ruined in 1707, and repaired in 1712.

with two Parish-Churches, and two Monasteries; and not a Village, or Suburb, of *Warsaw*, as some will have it. The Churches are all built with Brick and Stone, except that of the *Benedictine* Nuns, which is of Wood, and decently adorned. The Houses are some of Brick and Clay, and some of Wood plaistered with Lime. In the Nuns Church I saw a large Crucifix, covered from the Waste down with a rich Brocade, over which a laced Muslin Apron was tied, being an Offering made to Jesus Christ, by one of the Nuns the Day she took on her Profession. There is another in one of the Parish-Churches, with a flowered Damask-Garment round its Waste, furbuloed with *Spanish* Point. The Custom of Cloathing Crucifixes, whether on the High-Road, or in Churches, in this Manner, is common in *Poland*, as well as *Samogithia*; and robs the Spectatours of a great Part of the Beauty of the Sculpture. The Reformed *Bernardines* Church is built with Stone; the Body of the Convent is partly Brick, and partly Wood. This Town has not escaped the Furies of the War. *Charles Gustavus*, King of *Sweden*, in 1656 defeated the *Polanders* here, in a Battle that lasted three Days, and suffered his Soldiers to burn and plunder it afterwards. *Charles the Twelfth*, before he took *Warsaw*, beat the *Polish Saxons* here; and treated the Town no better than *Charles Gustavus* had. By a *Latin* Inscription on the Portico of one of the Churches I could learn, that that Church had been burnt to Ashes in 1703, and, Phenix like, sprung out of its own Cinders in 1709. The *Vistula* was so frozen the next Day after our Arrival, that several People crossed it on Foot, and towards the Evening on Sledges and Waggons. The Count did not care to venture on it that Day; but his Secretary and I walked on the Ice before Dinner; and *Providentia*, whom I invited to partake of our Diversion, excused himself on Account of the Danger he apprehended. I asked him, If he was afraid to go to Heaven by Water? He told me, I might think what I pleased of it; but that he thought it imprudent and rash to venture. We had almost crossed the River to *Warsaw*, when, as I discoursed my Companion, thoughtless of any Danger, the Ice broke under me, and down I sunk: I spread my Arms over the Ice, and supported myself till I had Assistance. The Secretary, from whom I expected Relief, took to his Heels to save himself from the like Disaster. A *Polish* Gentleman very generously came to my Assistance, and helped me out; I thanked him very cordially for delivering me out of the Danger I had been in. In two Minutes my Cloaths were frozen up to my Arms; we returned to *Prag*, where I immediately shifted from Head to Foot. The Count had no sooner heard of the Accident, but he sent his Physician to take Care of me; I told him I had received no Harm, and that I hoped the Bathe I had taken, (being the coldest I ever had in my Life) would do me no Prejudice. *Providentia* came to see me, and gave me a Dram out of the Bottle he had in his Pocket, which I drank to his Health; he read me a Lecture on my Rashness; I told

told him, he deserved the Name of *Prudentia* as well as *Providentia*. I found myself very well, and dined with a good Appetite at the Count's Table, who entertained the *Prussian* Envoy and other Strangers that Day. The Discourse run pretty much on what had happened to me. The Count asked me, What were my Thoughts, when I found myself nearer to Death than Life? I answered, That I had no other Thought, but how to get out of the Danger I was in; and that the *Polish* Gentleman had come as seasonably to my Relief, as the Countryman had, when we were lost in the Forest: To which his Excellency replied, That Life was not then in Danger. The next Day after Dinner we crossed the River, where we saw Mr. *Edward Finch* and the Princess *Lubomirsky*, who arrived there the same Day. The River is above half an *English* Mile broad at *Warsaw* and thereabouts, and is very rapid, which I suppose to be the Cause why the *Polanders* have not built a Bridge over it; in which they have shewn less Ingenuity and Skill than the *English*, who, notwithstanding the Rapidness of the River *Thames*, and the Ebbing and Flowing of the Sea, have built one, as I have mentioned in my first Volume. The *Vistula*, which the *Polanders* call *Wisla*, and the *Germans*, *Weissel*, has its Source in the Extremity of Mount *Krempack* to the North East of *Silesia*; it runs through *Cracovia*, *Sandomir* and *Warsaw*, receives *Nida* and *Vuloka*, together with several other Torrents, and the Rivers, *Bouge*, *Bzure* and *Dribents*, into its Channel; washes *Thorn*, *Culm*, &c. and forms the Isle of *Mariembourg*, as I have already observed in the second Chapter.

*Warsaw*, *Varsavia* in *Latin*, which the *Polanders* call *Warsawa*, Warsaw. and the *Germans*, *Warschau*, is situated almost in the Center of the Kingdom, and the Capital of the Duchy and Palatinate of *Mazovia*; it is the usual Place for holding the general Diets, the Election of Kings, and their Place of Residence; it is divided into new and old Towns; the Suburb, called *Cracovia*, has the most and finest Houses; the Buildings of *Warsaw* are of the same Nature as those of *Prag*; with this Difference, that the latter has none that come near those of the Suburb *Cracovia*, which for the most part look like so many modern Palaces. The royal Castle, which is a great Ornament to the City, and extended from the middle thereof to the River, is magnificent; the Appartments are large, regular, and richly furnished; it was built by *Sigismund the Third*, for the Winter Season; that for the Summer Season, whose Gardens are exceedingly pleasant and in good Order, is on the other Side of the *Vistula*, not so large as t'other, but a great deal finer. There was nothing else worth admiring, except the Churches and the Arsenal; that of *S. John*, which is the chief and the best built with carved Stone, is very richly adorned, and by a Gallery communicates with the Palace; the Clergy of this Church are all Canons, who are all Noblemen, and the Dean the highest Dignitary. It was in  
this



this Church, that *Casimir* abdicated the Crown in the Year 1668. In this City and Suburbs are religious of both Sexes, and almost of all Orders, as *Dominicans, Augustins, Franciscans, Carmes, Bernardines, Jesuits, Capucins, Recoletts*; Nuns of the *Annunciation, S. Briget, S. Clair, S. Ursula, and Carmelites, &c.* whose Churches are for the most part of Wood, except that of the *Jesuits*, which is the finest, and two or three more. *Sigismund the Third's* Statue was erected by his Son and Successour *Uladislas*, on a Column between the Suburb *Gracovia*, and that Part of the Town where the Castle stands. The City proposed to have the Statue erected for *Uladislas*, but, excusing himself, said, That since the City was willing to be at the Charges of one, he had rather it should be erected in Honour of his Father. This generous and modest Son, in a *Latin* Inscription on the Basis of the Statue, attributed to his Father all the Glory he merited himself, by his Victories over the *Muscovites* and *Swedes, &c.*

I visited Count *Poniatowsky* \*, Great Treasurer of *Lithuania*, and Deputy of the Palatinate of *Linciezaw*, who had left *Grodno* three Days before my Arrival there; and some other *Polish* Noblemen, that I had the Honour to be acquainted with at *Bender*, of whom I received particular Favours, and an Invitation to see the Carnival of *Warsaw*, of which I had heard Wonders. The King, whom we had left in good Health at *Grodno*, was taken ill on the Road to *Warsaw*, which I believed would lessen, or delay, the Rejoycings; together with the Uneasiness I was under to hasten the *French* Edition of my Travels, obliged me to apologize for my Departure.

Count *Poniatowsky* having procured me Post-Horses, Mr. *Edward Finch* engaged me to take the Charge of a Packet for the *Britannick* Court, which required Diligence; I set out on the twelfth of *December*, and rid Post almost Day and Night till I came to the *Hague*, where I arrived on the twenty-first; and though I had gone through Frost and Snow, Rain and Thaw, on the Journey, I received no more Harm, than I did from the cold Bath of the *Vistula*. A drunken Postillion, having lost the Road one Night, made me lose my Labour and Time. I had not time to make any Remarks on this Journey, but what were very superficial; the only Places of Note I had seen in the rest of *Poland*, were *Rava* and *Peterskow*; in the first of which, having refreshed myself with some Victuals, and walked about an Hour, I reposed for an Hour and a half, as I did at the last. *Riva* is about thirteen Miles from *Warsaw*, and the Capital of a Palatinate of that Name, situated on a little River bearing the same; the Houses are all of Wood, except an old ill-repaired Castle; that of the *Jesuits* is the best

\* I have mentioned this Nobleman in the Chapter of *Bender* and *Pruth*, of my second Vol. he had the Title of General of the Artillery given him by K. *Stanislaus*, whose Favourite he was: as he is now of K. *Augustus*.

best built House in the Town; their Church is well adorned. *Peterfkow*, a small Town, is nine Miles distant from *Rava*; the Houses are ill built, and the Ruins here shew, that it has been heretofore considerable; and History records, that Councils have been held in it. The Tribunal here has Power to judge the Affairs of the *Polish* Nobility, from *Michaelmas* to the latter end of *March*; there are, however, some good Houses built according to the modern Taste; and, of five Convents, there are two in very good Order, as is also the Parish-Church.

I entered into *Silesia* at *Wartenburgh*, a small Town, situated on the River *Weida*, and Capital of a Barrony so called; it has been heretofore a free and Imperial Town, though now of no Note. On the fifteenth at Night I came to the Gates of *Breslaw*, which I found locked, and was obliged to stay the Remainder of that Night in the Neighbourhood, and was the only Night I had lain in Bed during that Journey. In the Year 1713, I could not get Admission into this Town, on Account of my coming from *Vienna*, where the Plague had then raged; therefore resolved not to proceed farther before I had viewed it; nothing can be more advantageous than the Situation of this Town, both for its Commerce and Strength; the River *Oder* washes it from North to West, as the *Olow* does from South to East; the Breadth of the former is three hundred Paces, and tho' rapid, it has not hindered the building of a fine Bridge over it. The Streets are spaciously regular, and well paved; the Houses (though built according to the old *German* Taste) are in very good Repair; the Churches are magnificent, as well for their Architecture and outward Grandeur, as for their interior Ornaments. The *Lutherans* who have the Command, as well in Spirituals as in Temporals here, and whose Government is much like that of a Republick, possess the finest and most of the Churches; the Emperour, to whom this Town belongs, acts rather as Protector than Sovereign. The finest and largest Churches are those of the *Magdalen* and *S. Elizabeth*; the first, which stands near a fine Square, called the *New Market*, where all manner of Provisions are sold, has two pyramidical Steeples of an extraordinary Height; the other is built with carved Stone, and has a Tower adorned with curious Figures in Relievo; the Vaults are large and strong, the Paintings and Statues of the Divinity, and of Saints of both Sexes are very good; and the High-Altar is pompous. The *Catholics* have (by a Treaty) the Liberty of singing the Vespers of the Virgin *Mary* in this Church every Day; they have a good Number of fine Churches in the Town, and Suburbs; they have preserved their Bishop's See there, which is Suffragan to the Archbishop of *Gnesne*; their Cathedral is dedicated to *S. John*, and in the Suburb so called; where is also the Church of the holy Cross, which has fine Paintings; those of the *Augustins*, *Jesuits*,

*suits*, and *Franciscans*, are worth seeing. The *Jesuits* have a fine Colledge, built square, with a large Court in the middle thereof; the other Cloisters have their Beauties, as well as the Colledges of the University. The Town-House is a fine Piece of *Gothick* Architecture, no way<sub>s</sub> inferiour to that of *Antwerp*, which it surpasses in Largeness. The Town-Clock is the highest I ever saw, except that of *Strasburgh*; the adjacent Square, which is very large, and surrounded by the finest Houses in the Town, is very beautiful. Having employed three or four Hours in the search of Curiosities, I returned to the Post-House, where I had given Orders to the Postillion to have our Horses ready to set out at eleven of the Clock, resolving to spend no more Time in quest of Curiosities, than where I should wait to change Horses; which was ten times from *Breslaw* to *Berlin*, though but forty eight Miles distant, near one hundred *German* Miles from *Warsaw*, and half-way from that City to the *Hague*.

The Places I had baited at, were *Newmark*, a Borough reduced to Ashes a little before I had seen it; the Parish-Church, and a few Houses escaped the Flames. About a Mile from this Place, I saw the pompous Monastery of the *Cistercian* Monks, most agreeably situated in a pleasant Field near the River *Oder*.

*Parchewitz*, a large Borough, whose Houses are of Wood, and ill built; where *Lutherans* govern in Spirituals as well as Temporals; but the *Catholics* have the finest Church. *Luben* is a small Town, with a Castle situated on the little River *Colback*; I passed through it in the Night-Time, as I did through *Newstad* and *Grunberg*, two other small Towns, of which I can say no more than what I learnt from the Post-Masters and Postillions. *Newstad* is inhabited, for the most part by *Catholics*, and belongs to the *Jesuits*, who have a fine Convent and Church in it. The King of *Sweden*, in a Treaty with the Emperour, preserved the *Lutheran* Church here. *Grunberg* is the last Town of the Imperial *Silesia*, whence I travelled to *Crossen*, which formerly belonged to the Kingdom of *Bohemia*, but now to the King of *Prussia*; the Houses are built partly of Wood, and partly of Clay, and partly of Earth.

\* *Crossen* is a pretty large Town, where, in the Year 1713, I was refused Entrance for the same Reason, as I had been at *Breslaw*, and was worse treated, as I have already observed. The Houses are built partly with Brick and Clay, plaistered over, and partly with Wood; it is situated on the River *Oder*, where it receives the River *Bobre* into its Channel; the Wall that surrounds it is very old, but kept in  
good

\* This small Country belonged heretofore to the Dutchy of *Glagon*. *Henry the Second*, Duke of *Crossen*, gave it as a Jointure to *Barbara* of *Brandenbourg*, his Dutcheß, on Condition, that if he died without Issue, his Heirs might purchase it, which they neglected. *John the Second*, Electour of *Brandenbourg*, united it to his States, and has been ever since the Jointure given to the Electrices, and now to the Queen of *Prussia*.

good Repair, as is the Castle; the *French* Protestants have a Church here.

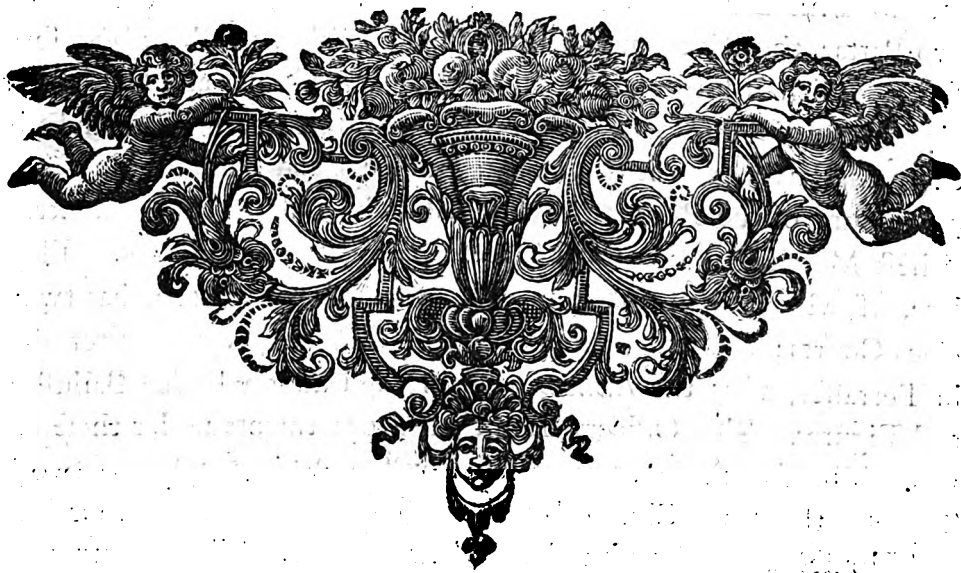
*Frankfort* on the *Oder*, so called, to distinguish it from *Frankfort* on *Mein*, whereof I have made mention in my second Volume, is not so well built, nor populous as *Crossen*; it was formerly a free and Imperial Town, but now belongs to the House of *Brandenbourg*. *Joachim the First* founded here an University in 1506, which, together with its Commerce, is all that this Town has considerable, which is but a Trifle in Comparison with *Crossen*, though it has the same Advantage of the River. A Gentleman, whom I met in the *Hague*, and had lived here, told me, that the Students used to go sometimes in Boats down the River, to *Custrin*, to entertain the Prince Royal in his Retirement, with a Concert of Musick; that the Prince was universally beloved, and was endowed with exceeding good Parts; but that *Custrin* was a very unwholesome Air.

*Zieburgen*, *Egerdorf*, *Tastorf*, are very good Villages. About three in the Afternoon I arrived at *Berlin*, and visited Monsieur *Dubourgay*, Envoy from his *Britannick* Majesty, with whom I supped.

*Berlin* is one of the finest, largest, and most populous Cities of *Europe*, since a great many Families of *French* Protestants have settled there. This City is situated on the River *Spree*, which divides it into two Parts; the River, near that Part of the Town called *Coln*, forms a Lake, which is surrounded with several fine Houses and Gardens, that give a beautiful Prospect. *Coln* is situated on three small Islands formed by the River, and is the most magnificent and considerable Division, on account of the Palace, the fine Church, and stateliest Houses, the richest Merchants, the finest Streets, Bridges, and Squares. The Palace, of which I had but an outward View, is very large, has two spacious Courts; the first surrounded with Galleries, regularly terminated in Terrasses, after the *Italian* Manner, and adorned with Ballustrades, and Figures. The Officers have their Apartments under these Galleries. The second Court is enclosed by four Wings, whereof two have Turrets, the great Church has also a fine Turret. The other Palaces and Houses are built after the *Italian* Manner. The Governour's Palace, which makes a fine Appearance, has a large Square before it, and a Guard. The Town-House has also a Square before it, where the Market is kept. One of the Islands is inhabited by Tradesmen, chiefly Carpenters and Joiners, to whom the River brings proper Materials for their Business: There are several Saw-Mills on that Side of the River, which are of great Advantage to them. The other Division, called *Berlin*, is the largest, and has some fine Houses built like those of *Breslaw*, and spacious Streets.

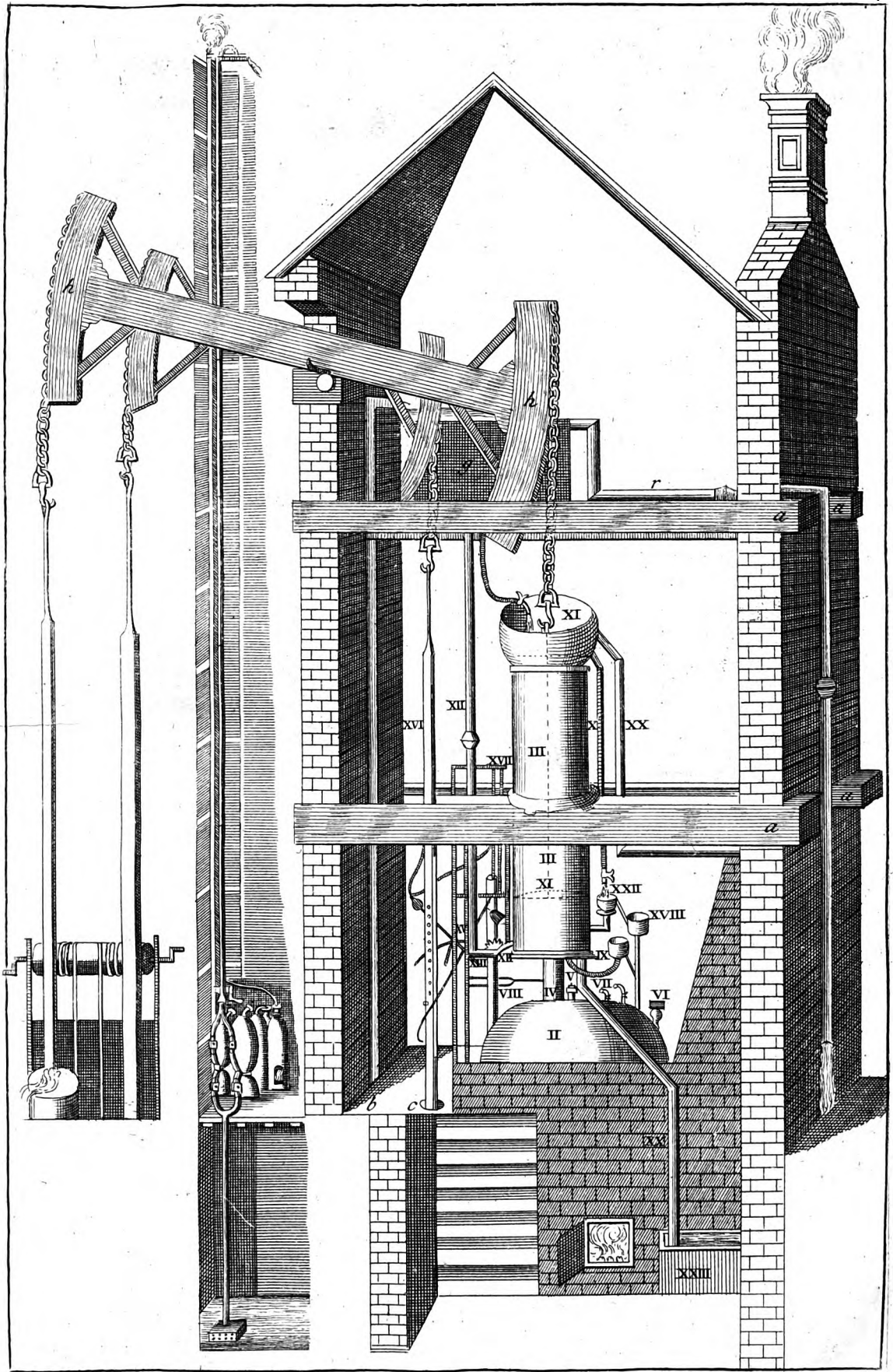
Having supped with M. *Dubourgay* and his Lady, and received the Letters he designed for the Court of *Great Britain*, I took my Leave  
of

of him, and set out in a Post-Chaise for *Magdenburgh*, 17 Miles from *Berlin*; where I staid some Time to view that old *Parthenopolis*, which is advantageously situated on the *Elbe*, and trades mostly in Wood. There are three Bridges in the Town, the largest of which is very fine; the Houses are built after the old *German* Fashion, and the Churches *Gothick*; the Government is *Lutheran*, and tolerates all other Religions; it has been heretofore a Bishop's See, free and Imperial. The King of *Prussia*, to whose Ancestours it has belonged since the Reformation, keeps a Garrison here. My Postillions prevented my seeing any more Towns, except *Hanover* and *Osnabrug*, which I have amply described in my second Volume, together with the other Towns from *Osnabrug* to the *Hague*, where I arrived on the 21st, as already mentioned.

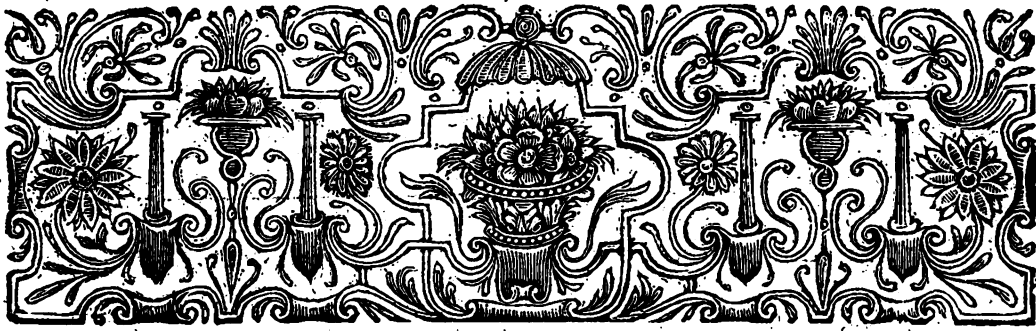


The









The TRAVELS of  
*A. de la MOTRAIE.*

CHAP. V.

*Remarks on an Engine for raising Water by Fire ; on the London-Stone ; on the Roads from London to France ; on that Kingdom ; on the Ceremonies of Lewis the Fifteenth's Marriage ; and on my Return to England.*



AFTER staying full twelve Months at the *Hague*, I went to *London* on some Business, where I always met with new Improvements made ; either in Literature, Mathematicks, or Mechanicks, which raised my Admiration ; the *English* Genius and Ambition constantly aggrandizing, embellishing, and rendering that City flourishing, has brought all Arts and Sciences to a higher Degree of Perfection, than any other Nation whatsoever ; and seeing, that there were not a sufficient Number of Hydraulic Machines on the Banks of the River *Thames*, to supply this large City, which is the richest, and most populous of all *Europe*, with Water, invented that which is represented in my fourth Print, to make one Element subservient to the Inhabitants by another, which is wonderfully performed by the Force of Fire. This Engine is placed on the Banks of the *Thames*, and distributes the Water through the Pipes which are, for that Purpose, and conveys it in a commodious Manner into all the Kitchens and Brew-houses of *London* ; thus resembling the Function of the Veins and Arteries of a human Body, through which the Blood circulates.

The Inhabitants, besides the Advantage of having Plenty of Water in their Houses at a very cheap Rate and no Trouble, can, by the Means of Fire-Plugs and Engines of the *English* Invention, have Water enough to extinguish any Fire that should happen at any Part of the Town.

M m m

This

This new Machine is placed at an equal Distance from the Water-Engine at *London-Bridge* and that of *Chelsea*. There is another towards *Islington*, which some Years ago was moved by a Wind-Mill, and now by Horses, or the *New River-Water*, (as I think) by which the Town is supplied on that Side. The new Engine, which has the Shape of a Column or Tower, may be reckoned among the Ornaments of the City; the chief Parts it contains, are, 1. A Hearth. 2. A large Still, three Parts full of Water, which is always kept in an equal Degree of Heat. 3. A Brass Cylinder. 4. A Pipe through which the Steem runs out of the Still into the Cylinder. 5. The Axis, or Regulator, which opens and shuts the Pipe in the Still, and regulates the whole Motion of the Engine. 6. A Valve, which gives vent to the Steem when it is too strong. 7. Two Gauge-Cocks with their Pipes, one of which goes into the Water in the Still, and the other three Inches above the Surface thereof. 8. A Pipe, fixed in the Water, and open at both Ends, and a cylindrick Buoy. 9. A Pipe and Cock, whereby the Still is supplied with Water from the Cylinder. 10. The Shank of the Piston. 11. A Pipe for injecting the cold Water out of the Cistern. 12. An injecting Cock, which opens and shuts with a Wheel. 13. A small Leaver. 14. An Axis with its Shanks. 15. A Beam. 16. A Balance. 17. A Place to receive the Water for the Still. 18. A Pipe, through which the Water is injected from the Cylinder. 19. Another Pipe to carry away the useless Water from the Piston. 20. A Pipe supplying the Valve with Water from the Piston. 21. A Valve, through which the Steem forces the Air, which the injected Water brings into the Cylinder. 22. A Valve to discharge the injected Water. 23. A Cock, supplying the Piston with Water from the Cistern.

Having resolved to see *France*, I purposed to visit *Southwark*, *Deptford*, *Greenwich*, *Blackheath*, *Charleton*, *Woolwich*, *Dartford*, *Rochester*, *Malling*, *Maidstone*, *Tunbridge*, *Lamberhest*, and *Newenden*, and embark at *Rye*. On the Eve of my Departure I supped with a Friend near *London-Stone* in *Cannon-Street*, who gave me a Draught of that Piece of Antiquity, which is Number 2. in my sixth Print, but could tell me nothing of its first Use; neither could I learn any thing concerning the same but what is conjectured, nor will I pretend to give any other Account. If its Use was the same with the first Milliard Stone or Column at *Rome*, the Miles were reckoned from it as from the other, though now there remains no more than a Fragment of such a Column preserved in a Stone Case. I was invited by my Friend, to dine at a Relation's of his at *Charleton* on the Day of my Departure, who accompanied me afterwards to *Dartford*; we set out from *Canon-Street* about half an Hour past Nine in the Morning, and steered our Course to *London-Bridge*, which is not far from it, to get into *Southwark*, which lies to the South thereof. As we passed by the *Monument*,  
whereof

whereof I have made mention in my first Volume, which was erected in Memory of the *London-Fire*, that happened in 1666, and began there\*; and consumed 13700 Houses, 89 Episcopal Churches, several Chappels, and Places of Religious Assemblies belonging to the *Non-Conformists*, and other publick Edifices. My Friend, seeing me fix my Eyes on the Monument, and sensible of the Dispute between me and a *French* Clergyman, who had in rude Terms attacked both my Person and the *English* Edition of my Travels, published in 1724, in his Journal, called the *Bibliothèque Angloise*\*, said very pleasantly and well, *You see the Monument is still on the North Side of the Bridge, as you related; and that your Reverend Critick's Faith was not capable of transporting it to the South, or metamorphosing it into a Pyramid.* In this Column we not only see the Superiority of the *English* Genius flourish, but all the antient *Roman* Architecture revived and improved; being nothing inferiour to that of *Antonine* or *Trajan*, or any other that ever was raised, being of *Dorick* Order, as they are. The Bas-relief on the Pedestal represents the melancholy Occasion of its Erection. It has 15 Feet in Circumference, 202 in Height, 192 Steps of Stairs to mount to to its Balcony, and crowned with a gilt Flame; the whole having cost 13700 Pounds Sterling.

*Southwark* is the largest Borough, that I ever saw. It extends itself between 7 and 8 Miles along the *Thames*, from *Vaux-Hall* to *Deptford*. It contains a great number of fine Buildings and Houses well built, with Gardens. The Palace of the Archbishop of *Canterbury* at *Lambeth* near *Vaux-Hall*, and the Church there, deserves well to be seen. The Lines drawn in the Times of the War between King *Charles the First*, and the Parliament, are at a small Distance from hence, and still considerable. There are only eleven Parish Churches in *Southwark*, which are too few for the Number of Inhabitants; but there was a Talk of building some new ones. *S. Thomas's* Hospital is well built, and richly endowed; and every Day receives new Additions and Embellishments from the Gifts and Legacies of several charitable Persons. It consists of three large Courts, surrounded with Apartments, which are called Quarters, and supported by Stone Pillars; so that every Wing forms a Gallery, which affords a Shelter to walk in in bad Weather. The Quarters are divided according to the different Diseases of the Patients; and no Disease whatever will exclude any Persons thence, who has not wherewith to be cured elsewhere. The Hospital is provided with a sufficient Number of Governours. Physicians, Apothecaries, Servants, Cloaths, &c. We entered *Kent-Street*, and so passed along the River to *Deptford*. I observed by the Way a great Number of good Houses,

\* The *French* Edition says, it ended where the Monument stands.

† The Doctor abuses me, for placing the Pyramid (as he calls it) at the End of the Bridge; but whoever examines the Account I have given of the Monument, will find, that I placed it at the North End, where it stands now, unless his Faith has removed it.

## *The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE*

Houses, built since I was there before. You see on the River a kind of Forest of Ships from the Bridge as far as *Deptford*, and lower. *Deptford* is a Place so full of Houses and Inhabitants, that one Church is not sufficient for the Number; so that they have been obliged to build a new one, which is very beautiful. Here are the King's Docks, with all Things necessary for the Building, Repairing, or Careening their Men of War.

I found *Greenwich*, situated about 2 Miles lower, considerably enlarged, even to the Church, and beautified with new Houses well built. The Number of Inhabitants is so much increased, that they have Occasion for a new Church. The Hospital, which was begun (as I observed in my first Volume) in King *Charles the Second's* Reign, for disabled Sea-Men, is not yet finished. What is already completed, is perfect in its Kind, and very magnificent. The inside of the Dome and the great Hall are adorned with the Paintings of Sir *James Thornhill*. In the Center of the Dome is a Compass, with its proper Points exactly fixed; and the four Winds, painted in Stone Colours with their different Attitudes, cover the rest. I shall not give a particular Description or Detail of the Paintings in the Hall, but content my self with observing, that we saw there, the four Seasons, the four Elements, the four Quarters of the World, the Pagan Gods and Goddesses, representing the Arts, and Sciences, Vertues, &c. under proper human Figures. The Landing of the Prince of *Orange*, and his Congratulation from *Great Britain*, and that of King *George the First*, are, in the Judgment of many Persons, the best Pieces of Painting there; but others give the Preference to Queen *Anne's* Accession to the Throne. However, it is generally agreed, that this noble Building is too much crowded with Paintings. The Academy and the Observatory in the Park, with a great many Houses of Pleasure about it, in which the Architecture is varied with as much Elegance as Judgment, gives the Eye an admirable Prospect. The fine Hospital, built and endowed by *M. Mordant*, for the Reception of decayed and unfortunate *Turkey* Merchants, with a Chappel worthy of it, and the magnificent House of Sir *Gregory Page* upon *Black-Heath* shine at a very great Distance, and deserve to be seen within.

*Charleton* is a Village so well built, that many Boroughs do not equal it, as well as many other Villages near *London*. Its Situation towards the River is upon an Eminence, and even with the Plain almost over-against that Hospital, which lies on the South of it, and it is extremely beautiful. Several fine Houses and Gardens add to the Beauty of it. The Church is neat. Mr. *James Craggs* is buried without, to the S. E. He has a Marble Monument erected to him upon the Wall of the Church, though not very magnificent. His Epitaph is Plain, and tells us, That he was one of the Post-Masters General to the King; that he  
had

had a Son of the same Name, who was Secretary of State, and died about a Month before him, and three Daughters, *Anne*, married to *John Newsham*, Esq; of *Chadshunt* in the County of *Warwick*; *Elizabeth*, married to *Edward Eliot*, Esq; of *Port-Eliot* in the County of *Cornwall*; and *Margaret*, who married *Samuel Trefusis* of *Trefusis* in the same County; and that these three Daughters erected this Monument to their Father's Memory.

They have erected a much more noble one to their Brother, in *Westminster-Abbey*, with two Epitaphs, one in *Latin*, and the other in *English* Verse by Mr. *Pope*. The former tells us, that he was the Favourite of the People, raised by his Merit above Titles and Envy; and that he died in *February*, 1720, aged 35 Years. The latter tells us, that he was a great Statesman, sincere, superiour to all Regards of Self-Interest, ennobled by his own Merit, loved, honoured, and esteemed by all. I went the first time to *Charleton*, *October* the 19, 1721, a Day on which they annually hold *Horn-Fair*, which is a kind of Farce or Masquerade; it begins with a Cavalcade of 20 or 30 Persons well dressed and well mounted, who have some of the largest Horns of Oxen tyed upon their Hats, some of Ram's Horns upon their Swords, and on the Harness and Bridles of their Horses. This Cavalcade meets together at *Cuckold's Point*, between *Deptford* and *Rotherhithe* on the Bank of the *Thames*. There is a prodigious Concourse of People all the Way which they pass, who rally one another with all the low Humour they are capable of. They give every Body, that they see, whether they know him or not, all the low and scandalous Names they can think of, with the same Liberty, that they take in the Boats upon the *Thames*, without any Distinction of Persons, or any Regard to their Rank or Quality. They would scarce spare the King himself, if he were present. And it is in vain to be chagrined at this Treatment, for Resentment would provoke their Raillery the more. The Fair consists of a great Number of moveable Shops, as in other Fairs; these Shops are furnished with divers kinds of Goods, proper to the Country. But there are some, in which they only sell Horns painted with various Colours, and wrought into Knots of Ribbons and Roses, which the Men wear upon their Hats, and the Women upon their Breasts, like Nosegays. A vulgar Tradition gives the following Original of this Fair, which is no less ridiculous than the Fair itself. King *John* being a hunting near this Village, then an Hamlet of a few poor Houses, and separated from his Attendants, entered into a Cottage of a Countryman, and found his Wife alone, who being pleased with her, and happening to please her equally, obtained of her what her Husband only had a Right to. But he coming in unluckily, and surprizing them in *flagrante delicto*, swore the Death of them both; but the King, discovering himself, pacified him with a few Pieces of Gold, and gave him all the Land as far as *Cuckold's*  
N n n Point,

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

*Point*, and made him Lord of the Hamlet. He established likewise a Fair there in his Favour. The Tradition or Fable adds, that he bestowed upon him a great many valuable Priviledges. I had no Inclination to see this Fair a second Time; and indeed it was not so much Curiosity that induced me before, as the fine Season, and the Company of two young *English* Gentlemen of my Acquaintance, who would needs engage me to go with them.

Having dined at *Charleton*, we passed on to *Woolwich*; which I found very much enlarged and beautified since I was there before. It has been judged the most convenient Place upon the *Thames* to build Ships in of the first Rate. I saw there very fine Docks and Roper-Yards, and several large and noble Magazines, which were not there before. The Foundry for Cannons, at present the most famous in all *England*, was repaired and improved. This entertained my Curiosity so agreeably, that we came very late to *Dartford*; which is a little Borough, much longer than it is broad, and contains a great many good Houses. We lay there; and the next Morning I took Leave of my Friend, and before Noon came to *Rocheſter*, after I had passed the River *Medway*, by a Stone-Bridge, one of the finest, or at least the longest in *England*. This City, according to some Authors, is the *Vigniavis* of the Antients, according to others, the *Durobrovis*. It has suffered very often, and very considerably by Fire and War: It consists chiefly of a long and broad Street, as *Slevise* in *Holstein*. This occasions it to be called the longest, and at the same Time the narrowest Street in *England*. It runs along with the *Strand*, which is separated from it only by a Bridge, and may alone pass for a City itself. It is well built, but there is nothing very remarkable in it. The Cathedral is a great *Gothick* Building, and not of the best Architecture in that Kind. It was founded by *Ethelbert*, King of *Kent*, and dedicated to S. *Andrew*; I had seen it before, and observed nothing new in it but an Epitaph of a Physician, which appeared to me so very singular, that I have inserted it below\*. But what deserves our greatest Attention, and gives us the most Satisfaction, is *Chatbam*; which is a fine Town, and with the *Strand* and *Rocheſter*, that lies between them, makes a kind of Tripolis, or triple City. *Chatbam* is the ordinary

\* *Cæsaris & Hygieæ sacrum.* *Augustini Cæsaris* quod fuit mortale hic juxta situm est. Hoc etiam *Augusto* major, quod in humani Generis salutem tantummodo vixit *Augustinus*, nec *Julio* minor; Morborum enim Turmas aliis inexpugnabiles veniens ydidit Victor Medicus.

IH ΤΡΟΣ ΓΑΡ ΑΝΗΡ ΠΟΛΛΩΝ ΑΝΤΑΞΙΟΣ ΑΛΛΩΝ.

Nunc *Durobrovis* luge, luge Cantium nunc exultate Febres, et dira Malorum Cohors, agite Triumphos qui vos cohibere potuit, captivas duxit, humanis cum ΕΥΘΑΝΑΣΙΑ demigravit, Divorum numero jam adscriptus. Ipse *Cæsar*, Vale posteris, ego quidem valeo. This Physician made his own Epitaph, and put me in mind of that of another Physician at *Paris*, named *Troynet*, who made his likewise; wherein he tells us, that his Skill and Learning had very often rescued Men from Deaths: and adds, Mortals, think upon yourselves, since *Troynet* is no more, who shall be able to cure you?

and safest Harbour of the great *British* Fleet. The Houses of the Sea-Officers, Directours, Inspecters, and Workmen belonging to the Navy, are extremely well built. A great Variety of stately Buildings, which surround the spacious Yards, covered for the greatest part with Cannons, Bullets, Bombs, Anchors, Iron unwrought, and other Things, which are Proof against the Weather; divers high and large Magazines, stored with all Things necessary for equipping out the greatest Fleet that ever could be fitted out by any Power in the World; the Forges, Founderies, and Rope-Yards of an incredible Extent; the Canals and Dirches regularly cut and filled with Water, in which float the Pine-Trees for Masts, Oaks, and other Kinds of Wood, proper for building of new Ships, or repairing of old ones; the Docks, Cranes, &c. This Variety, with the private Houses, composes *Chatham*, which is no less populous than magnificent. Captain *Falkner*, in whose Room I lodged on board of Admiral *Norris* in my Return from *Sweden*, insisted upon my lodging at his House in *Chatham*, and shewed me every Thing, that could be seen in the two Days which I staid there. I returned thro' *Rocheſter* and *Strand*. The Town-House and Charity-School, are two of the best publick Buildings in *Rocheſter* and *Strand*, except the Churches. I took the Road of *Malling*, in Company with one of Captain *Falkner's* Friends, who was going thither in a Chaise upon Business, and engaged me to accept of a Place in it, though it was a little out of my Way. It is a little Village, which has nothing very considerable in it but a good Church, and several private Houses built after the modern Fashion. I passed from thence to *Maidstone*, which is about the same Distance from *Rocheſter*, viz. about 8 or 9 Miles S. E. upon the River *Medway*. This River is navigable to this Place for pretty large Vessels, and there is a Bridge over it, which yields in nothing but Length to that of *Rocheſter*. *Maidstone* is properly the antient Capital of *Kent*, and the most considerable Market for all sorts of Provisions, perhaps in the whole Kingdom; as this County is, without Question, the most fertile in Corn and Fruit-Trees, like *Normandy* for Apples, especially Pippins, and for Cherries, which are the best in the World; it produces likewise a prodigious Quantity of Hops for Beer; in this Respect it is the same, that *Burgundy* and *Champaign* are in that of Vine-Yards. Hops are cultivated almost in the same Manner as Vines; they are tied likewise to long Poles, and suffered to grow as high as they can. *Maidstone* carries them to *London*; and in *Southwark* there is a large Magazine always well stored, as also another at *Westminster*. It is scarce possible to see a richer Soil than that, which I passed over, not only to this Place, but also as far as *Tunbridge*. There is an agreeable Variety of Corn-Fields, and Hop-Grounds, Meadows, and Orchards of Pear and Cherry-Trees. The Oxen here are the largest and best in *England*. The Pastures are so good



good in *Kent*, that it may be called the *Hungaria of England*. The Country about *Maidstone*, which is almost all covered with Hops, has had that Advantage over the other Parts of *Kent*, that they began to be planted here in the Time of the Reformation, which apparently gave Occasion to that *Englisch* Distich :

Hops, Reformation, Bayze, and Beer,  
Came into *England* all in a Year.

With Regard to Bayze, they were first began to be made at *Canterbury*, where they make some to this Day, which are very much in Esteem; besides, that this Town is in itself extremely pleasant, there are about it several fine Country-Seats with beautiful Gardens. It is generally believed, that this was the *Durolevum* of the Antients; it is not a large Town, but very populous. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* has a Palace here, which is esteemed very antient, with a Chappel to it. The Architecture of it is *Gothick*, though in a good Taste; and some Parts have been repaired after the modern Manner. That Prelate is Rector of the Parish, the Church of which is large and well built. There is a Colledge here, founded by Archbishop *Courtney*, with a Chappel pretty well built. King *Charles the First* created the Lady *Elizabeth Finch*, Viscountess of *Maidstone*. The late Earl of *Nottingham*, who was of that Family, was then Viscount of it; and my Lord *Winchelsea*, his eldest Son, is so now. I lay there that Night, and I went the next Day no further than *Tunbridge*, or rather *Tunbridge-Wells*; the former about 5 or 6 Miles Southward, and the latter as many more to the East.

*Tunbridge* is situated upon the little River *Tun*, which runs into the *Medway* a little lower. On the southern Bank of this River appear the Ruins of an old Castle, built by *Richard de Clare*, Lord of *Briony* in *Normandy*, who was a natural Son of *Richard the First*, Duke of *Normandy*. Mr. *Cambden* tells us, that he exchanged that Lordship for *Tunbridge*. As to the rest, there is nothing more remarkable in it but this, which is perhaps not much to its Advantage, that its Church is an ordinary Building; its Houses for the most part are ill built, and the Streets badly paved. I staid here about two Hours, and then went to dine at *Tunbridge-Wells*. It is a Spring of mineral Waters, which are drank in this Place, that, with the Neighbourhood of *Tunbridge*, gave it this Name. It might be more properly called *Spelburst-Wells*, as it rises from a Parish of that Name. These Waters work by Transpiration and Urine, and are much frequented; I tasted of them, and found them not disagreeable.

*Tunbridge-Wells* was only a poor Hamlet, before the Waters came into the Request which they are now in; but since that Time it is become a large and populous Town from a great Number of good Houses built here; and it has a Church, or rather Chappel of Ease, which is very neat.

neat. It stands in a Bottom between two Hills, which are called, one of them Mount *Ephraim*, and the other Mount *Sion*, agreeably covered, and diversified with several good Houses, with Gardens and some Trees, for the most part Fruit-Trees. They go and walk there after they have drank the Waters, and play at Bowls, or dance, or take such Exercises as are prescribed, or permitted, by their Physicians, when it is fine Weather. The Well, or (as it may more properly be called) the Bason, which contains the Water, is well paved like a Cistern, and surrounded with a low Wall, with a Pair of Stairs to go down. There is near it a long Gallery, paved and covered over, to walk in in bad Weather, or while they are drinking the Waters; with a Hall to dance in, and Rooms to drink Chocolate or Coffee, or to play at Cards in, &c. There was a Ball in the Hall that Evening in which I was there. Not far off of it is a Market well stored with all Kinds of Provisions.

I left this Place the next Morning at ten a Clock, having hired Horses to *Stone-Couch*, a little Hamlet, in which is the first Post-House on that Side of the Country, to get into the Road of *Rye*. The Rain, which fell for several Weeks before, had swelled the Waters of the little River of *Lamberhurst*, which is a large and fine Village, about seven or eight Miles from thence, through which it runs, so much that it overflowed and covered the Bridge; however, my Postillion led me right over it, and so we passed safely. But my Horse, having by a false Step missed that of *Lynbridge*, about half a Mile further, which was under Water, fell so deep in it, that I was almost over my Head in it: However, he recovered immediately, and swam over with me to the other Side. The Postillion, who had my Portmanteau before him, in which was only a Suit of Cloaths with my Linnen, passed over without any Accident, and had the Water only in his Boots. I shifted myself all thro' at *Stone-Couch*, a little Hamlet, about two or three Miles further, where I took fresh Horses to *Newenden*, about ten Miles beyond it, and there I changed my Horses for the last Time to *Rye*. Here was also another Bridge upon the *Rother*, overflowed by the Water, to pass over. *Newenden*, which is called *Anderida* by Mr. *Cambden*, and was formerly a considerable City, has not now even the Appearance of a Village; for there remain now but three or four poor Houses, the best of which is only an Alehouse, with an indifferent Church, ill-built and out of Repair.

The *English* Writers say, that the *Saxons*, having a Design to expel the *Britons* entirely out of *Kent*, and having beat them near this Village, after a great Effusion of Blood on both Sides, took it by Assault, and put all the Inhabitants to the Sword, burned and quite demolished it; so that it was not rebuilt till some Ages after, under *Edward the First*, in whose Reign the first *Carmelites*, who appeared in *England*, fixed themselves there upon the Encouragement given them by Sir *Thomas Albuger*,

O o o

who

who built and endowed a Monastery for them, which was the first belonging to that Order in *England*. This City, being afterwards considerably enlarged, was called *Newenden*, that is, according to the Etymology given us by *Cambden*, a new City in a little Valley. He informs us, that it had an Harbour very much frequented, at least at the Time that it bore the Name of *Anderida*; but he does not tell us how, or when it was destroyed the last Time, and reduced to the Condition which I have represented; but only, that it is at present a poor Village, with a bad wooden Bridge: This Bridge was covered with Water, so that I did not see it; but the Post-Master assured me, that it was of Stone, and well enough built. Besides the extraordinary Height of the Waters of the *Rother*, their Rapidity was so great, that our Horses were almost carried away with them. This River, dividing here the County of *Kent* from *Sussex*, runs into the Harbour of *Rye*, about eight or nine Miles lower, which I arrived at between five and six a Clock in the Afternoon. *Rye* is one of the Cinque Ports, and in the most Eastern Part of *Sussex*, of which it is the principal Borough on that side. It is situated upon an Hill, which is encompassed with Rocks inaccessible on the Sea-side; an Advantage of Nature, which would render it impregnable, if it were fortified on the side of the Land. It has now only its old Walls, which are ruined in most Parts, and the Ditches are almost all filled up with Earth. There grow here Pulse, Carrots, Cabbages, &c. The Situation of it at the Mouth of the Channel is very advantageous for its Trade, which consists in Hops, Wool, Timber, Cannons, Kettles, Chimney-Pieces, which are cast at the Foundries and Iron-Works of *Bakley* and *Breed* \*. It is a very great Misfortune, that its Harbour has been so much damaged by the Sea, and neglected; for it is almost filled up in several Places, where it was, they say, formerly the deepest and most convenient. Some considerable Families, who have Lands near, have taken advantage of this to extend them further upon the Sands, which the Sea in Storms have gathered and thrown against them. These Sands they have fixed, by digging Ditches to drain out the Water; so that you may see Fields and Meadows, where formerly were the liquid Plains. By this Means what the Sea loses on the one side, the Land gains on the other; and so, *vice versa*, the Sea has gained upon the Land at *Harwich*, where it has divided two Provinces one from the other, and worked a Passage, by cutting as it were solid Ground, that united them, so that the largest Ships can cast Anchor there. I have seen divers Instances of this Kind in my Travels. *Ovid* must have observed somewhat of this Nature †. The Inhabitants of *Rye* assured me, that their Ancestours had seen 400 Ships of divers Nations at one

\* They are Iron-Mines, the first about 4 Miles from *Rye* N. W. the other, about 5 Miles S. W.

† Vidi ego, quod fuerit quondam solidissima Tellus,  
Esse Fretum; vidi fœtas ex æquore Terras.

one time upon that Place, where I then saw several sorts of Cattle feeding. This Harbour, so large and famous as it was, is at present so narrow and shallow, that Ships of a middle Size cannot come to any convenient Distance from the Town, for loading and unloading; whereas formerly the largest Vessels, and even whole Fleets together could come to an Anchor just by the Rocks, upon which the Town is built. The most commodious Place for loading and unloading is in the Channel, called *Breedest* Channel to the S. W. of the Town, into which falls a Rivulet that rises from *Battle*, after having turned the Mills belonging to the Iron-Works at *Breed*; and there falls another less Rivulet, which runs under *Winchelsea*.

The Inhabitants of *Rye*, considering lately that their Harbour was thus almost ruined and come to nothing, laid their Remonstrances about it before the Admiralty at *London*, which they laid before the Parliament, who gave them a Resolution agreeable to their Petition. They were actually cutting a broad and deep Canal, which they had begun at that above mentioned, and which was to be carried to the Sea on the Side of *Winchelsea* for the Use of the two Boroughs. But there were not above 200 Men then employed upon it, and they had ceased working upon it, when I passed that way again in the Year 1729. I cannot tell whether the Jealousy of *Rye*, lest *Winchelsea* should receive the first Advantage of it in Trade, prevented the Progress of this useful and necessary Undertaking; but I am afraid it will never be executed. The Vessel in which I was to pass over to *Diepe*, not being ready to sail for six or seven Days, I had an Opportunity not only to see *Rye* and *Winchelsea*, but also *Hastings* and *Battle*, which I made a Tour to. The Houses of *Rye* are of Brick and very good, though for the most part built after the old Fashion: But there are some modern ones very neat. There is but one Church, which is handsome enough, and more than sufficient for the Number of Inhabitants. In it a small Colony of *French* Refugees, for the most part Fishermen, perform the Exercise of their Religion, and have a Minister of their own Nation, who is paid by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. This Church is too large, for they walled off and converted the Western Part into a Magazine for Planks: When I say it is too large for the Inhabitants, I understand those of the established Church; for there are two Meeting-Houses well built, one for the *Presbyterians*, and the other for the *Quakers*\*. They have likewise turned another Church, which once belonged to a Monastery now quite demolished, into a Store-House for Planks, Hops, and other kinds of Merchandize. This is what is most remarkable at *Rye*, except an old Fort, which commands the Town and Harbour to the N. E. and

\* Though I have not mentioned the Meeting-Houses of the *Nonconformists*, yet there are some in every Town as far as this, except at *Charleston*.

and serves for a Prison to Debtors and Criminals. At the Foot of this Fort lie two large Cannons of Iron, one with those Words in *Gothick* Letters E D. R E X, under a Scutcheon, bearing three Flower-de-Luces, and a Rose crowned with the following Cyphers, M. D. XXX. and 3330, which latter very probably mark the Weight. On the other is represented S. *Edward's* Crown, with these Letters I. R. 2740. There are three more Brass Cannons, one of which bears a single Rose crowned with these Words, *Franciscus Arcanus Italus F*, and above H R. 1535.

*Old-Winchelsea* was built upon the Sea-shore, about two or three Miles from the Place, where the *New* stands. It was a Town of great Trade, was a large and spacious Harbour, and had eighteen Churches in it; but it was wholly swallowed up by the Sea, and the greatest Part of it lies buried in the Sands, and there are now Marshes and Meadows where the rest stood. In the middle of a large Plain, to the S. E. of *Rye*, and to the N. W. of *New-Winchelsea*, there is still to be seen an old Tower, which stood very probably by the Sea. *New-Winchelsea* was built, they say, by *Edward the First*, Part of it upon an Hill about two Miles from the Place where the old one stood, and as far from *Rye*; and Part in a little Valley, where it had an Harbour. This new Town, in the Year 1250, met with the same Fate as the former, except the upper Part of it, which is very high: It was not so large, having only three Parish-Churches. There remains only the Chancel of one, which is more than large enough for the Number of Inhabitants: Its Harbour has been filled up with the Sands, which the Sea, that is now above a Mile distant from hence, cast up into it; and now Grass, &c. grows upon it. There remain only a few Houses in the upper Part of the Town; and there are Bushes, and Grass, and some Trees, to be seen even in its Streets. Amongst the Ruins of the Walls to the S. E. are the Remains of a Castle according to some, or a Monastery according to others. This Town still keeps its Privilege, and sends two Members to Parliament. King *James the First* created the Lady *Finch* Viscountess of this Place, and the Right Honourable the Lord *Daniel Finch* is now Earl of *Winchelsea* \*.

*Hastings* is upon the same Coast to the S. W. about 8 or 9 Miles from it. It consists of two great Streets, with a Parish-Church in each, wherein there is nothing very remarkable. This Town has several good Houses; its Harbour, which was formerly so famous, is now only an indifferent Road for small Vessels, and was ruined by the Storms which destroyed those abovementioned. This was the chief of the Cinque-Ports, and the Burgeffes retain the old Title of Barons. It was at *Hastings*, according to some, but as others think, at *Pevensey*, (another Harbour more Westward, which has also been destroyed by the

\* She was Daughter to Sir *Thomas Henninge*, and Wife of Sir *Moyle Finch*; King *Charles the First* created her Son, *Thomas Finch*, Earl of *Winchelsea* in 1633.

the Sea,) that *William the Conquerour* landed with his Fleet of 900 Sail, in order to gain the *English* Throne, which *Edward the Confessor* had bequeathed him, but which had been seized by *Harold*. It is certain however, that he mustered his Army at *Hastings*, after he had burnt his Ships, being resolved, either to conquer or to perish, rather than to return.

They generally called that the Battle of *Hastings*, in which he gained the Crown, though it was fought about 6 or 7 Miles distant to the N. E. upon a Plain called *Heathfield*; this happened in the Year 1066. I shall recite the Circumstances of this Affair, as they are so fully described by so many Historians, though with some Difference in their Accounts, since I have nothing better or more certain to add. I shall only observe, that *Harold* was slain in this Battle, which was the most bloody one imaginable; for the *English* Historians tell us, that he lost above 60000 Men. *William the Conquerour* kneeled down with his Army upon the Spot, to return Thanks to Heaven for the Victory; and, having given Orders to bury the Dead, he particularly commanded them to search for *Harold's* Body; but it was so deformed by his Wounds and Blood, that it could not have been known, but for a Mistress of that Prince, who discovered it by certain private Marks; he sent it to *Girith* his Mother, who entered it in the Church of *Waltham-Abbey*, which that King had founded\*. *William* founded one of the *Benedictine* Monks in the same Place, where *Harold's* Body was found, which he dedicated to S. *Martin*, and is called *Battle-Abbey*. This Abbey became a Town by the great Number of Houses, which were built there by the Monks, or by the Laymen upon their Encouragement. A Market which was established there, and kept every Sunday and Holy-Day†, and a great many other Privileges, granted to the Abbey by the Founder of it, were a great Advantage to it. The Abbot amongst other Privileges had a Right of delivering from the Gallows any Criminal, if he happened to come by it at the Time of Execution. This Town was called *Battle*, which Name it still retains; The Situation of it is very beautiful, and very like *Crecy*, a Town in

P p p

France,

\* That Church is still standing, about 11 Miles from *London*. I looked in vain for the Tomb of that Prince in it; which, according to Historians, consisted only of a plain flat Stone, with this Inscription, *Hic jacet HAROLDUS infelix*.

† These Days seemed then much properer for Markets and Fairs, as the Ecclesiastical was joined to the Secular Advantage. The Inhabitants of the Towns and the adjacent Parts sold upon these Days the Commodities and Fruits of their Labour all the Week; and, to gain the Blessing of God upon their Work, or to return Thanks for the Profits which they had made, they never failed to offer some Present at the Altar. Many Places grew rich and populous by this Means, especially where any Saint had the Reputation of Working Miracles: As for Instance, *St. Thomas of Canterbury*; for to that City there was a Resort, not only of the People of the Country, but also of a prodigious Number of Foreigners from all Parts of the Christian World; and the Markets and Fairs were held then on the same Days, as it was usual in almost all the other Cities and Towns. This Custom has been abolished by the Reformation, which has dedicated all Sunday to the Worship of God.

*France*, of which I shall speak hereafter; where was fought the famous Battle of that Name, between *Edward the Third*, King of *England*, and *Philip of Valois*, King of *France*. It has several good Houses in it. There still remain some Parts of the Abbey, which are built in a good *Gothick* Manner, and make Part of the House of my Lord *Montacute*, a *Roman Catholick*, which is very neat. I employed but two Days and an half in this Excursion, and walked it almost all the Way. The Vessel being ready to sail, I went to lie on board about a Quarter of a Mile from *Rye* by the Custom-House. There were then two of them, which used to go from thence to *France*, at least twice every Month, with Goods and Passengers; but, the Owners not finding their Advantage in it, this Method was discontinued, when I returned that Way in 1729.

And I then took my Course the most direct and shortest Way from *Southwark* through *Bromley*, *Tunbridge*, &c. *Bromley* is a little Town, which has nothing considerable in it, but the Hospital, founded and endowed by Archbishop *Warner* for Clergymen's Widows, who are too old, or not inclined, to marry again; and I also took Horses at *Rye* for *Dover*, and passed along the rich Pastures and Meadows called *Rumney-Marsh*, covered with all Kinds of Cattle; which, by the Devastations of the Sea, which I have mentioned, were nothing but Water, and covered with Vessels and Boats. Between *Rye* and *Dover* we meet only with *Rumney*, a large fine Village with a little Bay for Fishing-Boats; *Hith*, another fine, though smaller, Village, with a little Harbour; and *Sand-Gate* Castle, where there is a Fort with several Good Houses. A second Tour I also made, from *Rotterdam* by Sea to *France*, as far as *Roan*, in 1728.

There were in the Sloop above mentioned in which I was going to embark from *Rye*, in 1723, no other Passengers but an *Englishman*, who was going to *Dieppe*, and a *Scotchman*, who intended to go to *Paris*, and I for *Fountainbleau*. We set Sail from the Place I mentioned before about 4 o' Clock the next Morning, and the Wind favouring us, we came to *Dieppe* about 3 o' Clock in the Afternoon. This Harbour is not very considerable; there can enter nothing but Frigates and Merchant-Ships; it is almost in the Form of an Half-Moon; two Dikes of Wood, fortified with Artillery, make the two Horns of it, and serve for the Mole. The Town is surrounded with single Walls, and a Ditch not very deep, with a kind of Half-Moons. To the S. E. stands an old Castle, fortified with four irregular Bastions. A pretty good Quay carries you to the Docks, which are fortified with tolerably strong Bastions: On the Land-side it has nothing but a single Wall, with a Ditch indifferently deep. The Harvest having failed them in *France*, Corn was very dear there, and our Sloop was mostly loaded with it. The Trade of *Dieppe* consists chiefly of Fish, which it supplies



plies *Paris* with, which has no Sea-Port nearer; especially with Herring and Oysters, which are accounted the best in *France*: Of Tobacco, the Manufactures of which is worth seeing; of Ebony, Ivory and Horn-Work, and of Lace. This is the *Juliobona Caletorum*; it is supposed, that its present Name comes from the *English* Word deep, because it is situated in a Bottom. It is now one of the finest Towns in *France*: The *English* Bombs, which burnt and destroyed it almost entirely in 1694, have made it rise more magnificent, like a Phenix, out of its Ashes: But the Inhabitants say, that they prefer the Convenience of them old Houses, though they were very ill built, to the Magnificence of the new ones, which are not so commodious, though very regular and uniform. These Houses are supported by Arches, wholly of Brick, except the ornamental Parts, which are of Free-Stone. The Streets are large, regular, and well paved. There are two Parish-Churches, very spacious and well built; and five others belonging to the Convents of the Fryars and Nuns, besides those of the *Jesuits* and Fathers of the Oratory; those which had suffered from the Bombs were rebuilt, or repaired to Advantage; those of the *Jesuits*, the Fathers of the Oratory, and the *Benedictines*, are the finest; the Monastery belonging to the last is one of the best built. As I was willing to see *Fescamp*, *Montvilliers*, *Havre de Grace*, and the other Places situated upon the *Seine* as far as *Roan*, I took my Course on that Side, instead of going directly to that Capital of *Normandy*, which is not this Way above 13 Leagues distant from *Dieppe*; otherwise, I should have seen nothing but the Beauty of the Country, and a few little Villages and Hamlets. *Fescamp* is a pretty good Town, with an Harbour upon the Channel, at the Mouth of a Rivulet of that Name: But what is most considerable in it, is an Abbey of *Benedictine* Monks, which gave rise to this Town, as *Battle-Abbey* did to that mentioned above. This is one of the richest Abbeys in *France*; the Building is antient, except some Parts of it, which have been added or repaired; but it is very beautiful: The Church is answerable to it. You see there the Tombs of *Waringe*, Lord of *Fescamp*, who founded this Abbey for the Monks of this Order: Of *Richard the Second*, Duke of *Normandy*, a Benefactor to it, who restored and adorned it, and very much enriched it, and placed there regular Canons in the Room of the Nuns, whom he removed to *Montvilliers*; of his Son and Successor *Robert*, who settled the *Benedictines* there. There are buried likewise several Abbots of the Place, and their Tombs have the Form and Magnificence of those Times, and consist of Statues prostrate upon their Backs, with their proper Ornaments. *Montvilliers* is about six Leagues from hence, upon the little River *Lezarde*; it is a large Town, for the most part very ill built, with three Parish-Churches, which have nothing remarkable in them; the most considerable is the Abbey

Abbey of the *Benedictine* Nuns, which is very rich, and well built. *Havre de Grace* is but about two Leagues from *Montvilliers*, at the Mouth of the *Seine*; it is a Town well fortified with a Cittadel, which is but small, tho' regular: The Harbour lies between the Town and the Cittadel; it is not large, but very long, and extends itself almost to the furthest Part of the Town, which it divides into two, like that of *Helvoetsluys* in *Holland*. It ends as that does, in a Dock or Bason for building of Ships, and shut up like the other with a Sluice. They were building two Men of War of 60 Guns each, when I returned that Way from *Roterdam* to *Roan*, in 1728. The Houses of this Town are generally built partly of Earth, or Brick, and partly of Wood; the finest are towards the Dock; there are some of Free-Stone after the modern Manner, and very neat. There are but 3 large Streets, and well paved; the rest are narrow and ill paved. This Town has but two Parish-Churches, one dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*, the other to *S. Francis*: These are two fine Buildings, especially the former; that of the *Capuchins* is not very considerable, no more than their Convent; but they are building near it a magnificent Edifice for the Manufacture of Tobacco. The Fortifications of this Town consist of four good Bastions with a double Ditch, walled with Stone, which the Tide fills. Its chief Gold is the side of the *Seine*. There is a fine Rope-Yard that runs along the second Ditch to the S. E. The Vessels anchor in the Road, which is not very safe when the Wind blows strongly West. *Havre de Grace* is one of the Keys of *France*; *Francis the First* began the Fortifications, *Henry the Fourth* continued them, and *Lewis the Thirteenth* put them in the Condition in which they are now. They make here a great Quantity of Linnen-Cloth and Lace. I went by Land in 1725 to *Roan*, and passed through *Graville*, *Harfleur*, *Lillebonne*, and *Candebeac*. In 1728 I went to that City by Water, in the same Vessel which brought me from *Roterdam* to *Havre de Grace*, where she staid a Day and a half, and anchored before *Harfleur*, on the other side of the River, the Day she departed. I saw that City for the second Time, and by the Way also the Abbey of *Grestain*, *Quillebeuf*, *Tankerville*, *Villequier*, *Ducler*, the Castle of *Milleraye*, and the Abbeys of *S. Vaudrille*, *Jumieges*, *S. George*, &c.

*Graville* is about half a League from *Havre de Grace*; it is a Priory, with a fine Church, which is that of the Parish of the same Name, and is served alternately by four or five Monks of *S. Genevieve*; it lies on the left Hand of the great Road, upon an Hill, covered and surrounded with Gardens, Orchards, good arable Fields, and Meadows, which belong to it. The Cloister and the Church are good Buildings; it is a pity they are so much neglected, for some Parts are ready to fall to Ruin.

Har-

*Harfleur*, in *Latin Harflotum*\*, is about half a League further; it is an antient Town, situated upon the Northern Bank of the *Seine*, and has fallen gradually to Decay ever since *Havre de Grace* became a Place of Importance. The *English* took it in 1415; its Harbour, which then received whole Fleets, will now hardly admit Vessels of the smallest Size. Its Fortifications, and even its Walls, have been quite demolished. The Church is an excellent Piece of *Gothick* Architecture, entirely of hard Stone, and is supposed to have been the Work of the *English*. It was never finished, at least the Eastern Part of it; it contains above 300 Paces in Circumference, and its Height is proportionable. Its Steeple is of the same Kind of Stone with the rest, and prodigiously high. It is reckoned the finest in all *Normandy*: The Portico is very grand, and adorned with Figures. The Convent and Church of the *Capuchins* are very elegant. Mr. *Laws* seemed to have a Design to restore this Town to its former Splendour by the Credit of his Money, Notes and *India* Stocks. He sent for Workmen from *England*, to settle here the Manufacture of Cloth, Steel, Iron, Copper, &c. which he pretended to carry to the same Perfection as in that Kingdom. They began to work with some Success in private Houses, till a large and magnificent one, designed for that Purpose, and the Lodgings of the Workmen were finished: But the Walls of this Building were scarce raised, when the Credit, upon which he founded this and several other more considerable Undertakings, fell. He had purchased of the Count *Evreux* the Castle of *Tankerville* for the same Purposes.

*Lillebonne*, about five Leagues higher up, is now only a Village, whereas it was formerly the Capital of the *Caletes*, and a very noble City; which we may judge of by the fine Church, the Remains of an antient Castle, and the Causey of that Name. This Causey is four Leagues and a half long; but it may as properly be called the Causey of *Harfleur*, for it begins there: The Antiquaries call it *Cæsar's* Causey. There is nothing more considerable between this and *Roan*, except the Beauty of the Country, and *Caudebeck*, which is a Town agreeably situated upon the *Seine*, and rising in the Form of an Amphitheatre upon the Declivity of an Hill, covered with Woods N. E. and N. W. The Parish-Church is very beautiful. The Convent and Church of the *Capuchins*, and the *Hôtel-Dieu* deserve to be seen next. Its Trade

Q q q

consists

\* This Town took its Name, according to the learned *M. Huet*, from *Flot*, of which they have made *Fleur*. His Proof of this is, That most Part of the Names, which end in *Fleur*, were in *Flot* in the antient Titles, or Archives. Thus this Town was called *Harflot*, *Honflot*, *Honflot*; *Barflot*, *Barflot*. The last mentioned is in the *Contantin*, about four or five Leagues from *Cherbourg*. I saw it, as well as most of the other Towns in that District, before my Travels into foreign Countries. It was almost quite destroyed by King *Edward the Third of England*, and its Harbour was very near filled up, when I passed by it. This and *Cherbourg* were two of the last Places which the *English* possessed in *France*.

consists of Hats, called *Caudebecks*, which are made here of Leather tanned here, and Woollen Manufactures.

*Honfleur* is on the other Side of the *Seine*, opposite to *Havre de Grace*. It is an antient, populous Town, ill built, with two Parish-Churches; one of Timber, and two Convents. The most remarkable is its Harbour. A Part of the Town-Walls was demolished, in order to dig it in the middle of the Town after the *Dutch* Manner. It is small, but very neat, and flanked with Stone. They stop here with Salt, which is carried hence to *Roan*, which is the general Magazine of it. Upon a Hill near it there is a neat Chappel dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*, whose Image, found there, as it is said, by a Shepherd, has the Fame of working many Miracles. *Grestain* is a rich Abbey of *Benedictines* on the same Side of the River, the Building whereof is very magnificent.

*Quilbeuf*, a little higher up, is a Borough very ill built, and inhabited for the most part by Pilots, with a bad Road, wherein our Ship with two others ran upon the Sands, which gave me an Opportunity of going to the other Side of the River to see *Tankerville*. It is a Castle built after the old Manner, and not very magnificent; however, it pleased the Eye from its Situation between two Hills, and has a delightful Garden. I went to wait for the Vessel at *Vielequier*, a Hamlet on the same Side the River, where they change Pilots. I saw then the Castle of *Milleraye* upon the Southern Bank of the *Seine*, which belongs to the Duke of *Harcourt*. We were delayed there by a Calm for an Hour. It is a noble Building with a fine Chappel, served by the *Capuchins*, who have a little Convent there. *S. Vaudrille* and *Jumieges* were two famous Abbeys of *Benedictines* upon the North Side of the River, magnificently built. A little higher is *Ducler*, a little Borough, with a considerable Market for Corn and Fruit; and not far from it is *S. George*, an Abbey of *Benedictines*, which was rebuilt and enriched by the Duke of *Longueville*, who died here. Not far off is the Commandery of *S. Vanbourg*, which has no manner of Splendour in it. There are here and there several very fine private Houses along the River on the South Side; particularly those of Madam *Mauny*, and Mr. *Morin*, a Banker of *Roan*. As we come near to *Roan*, we see the Remains of *Robert the Devil's* Castle, situated upon a Hill about a Quarter of a League from the River. It was called so from the Difficulties, which *Henry the Fourth* met with to reduce it, amongst the many prodigious Inconveniences, which he was obliged to surmount, before he could settle himself in the Throne. On the same Side stands the noble Monastery of the *Carthusians*, one of the finest and largest in *France*. On the other Side, a little nearer the River *Roan*, are the two spacious and magnificent Hospitals of *S. Lewis* and *S. Roch*, surrounded with Gardens

dens and Meadows, (like the Monastery,) and designed for the Plague; but employed at present for storing of Goods.

I stayed but one Day at *Roan* in 1725, and two in 1728. I had also seen it formerly. There are so many Accounts given of this City, that I shall speak but little of it. It has retained the Defect common to most antient Cities, of narrow dark Streets, darkened by the height of the Houses, which are built partly of Timber, and partly of Earth and Stone plaistered. It were to be wished that these Streets were made broader and more regular by building new and uniform Houses, as I found they had done at *Paris*. I did not observe many Alterations in this City, since I had seen it before. The chief were a new and vast Magazine for Salt upon the Southern Bank of the River *Seine*, and the new Custom-House upon the opposite side. These two Buildings are very noble in their kind, and all of Free-Stone. The Custom-House was finished in 1725; but the Magazine was but begun then; and I found it completed in 1728. The Front of the former is adorned with fine Bas-reliefs. There is *Mercury* smiling with a Purse in his Hand, attended with a Groupe of Children and Slaves, packing and unpacking of Goods: The Inscription is inserted below \*. They had opened on each Side of this Edifice two fine Gates of Stone, leading from the Key into the City. There are also six old ones besides to go in from the same Key, including the old Palace, which stands a little lower down the River; but the latter have no Magnificence, except that of *Paris*, and that of the *Bac*, which is properly a Triumphal Arch, and faces the great Bridge of Boats. They had built in the Suburb of *S. Severe*, where the Salt-Magazine stands, and in that of *Martinville* on the N. E. of the River several fine Houses. The publick Edifices, which deserve the greatest Attention are the old Palace, which stands below the Custom-House; the Boat-Bridge, so called from its lying upon 20 large Boats, and rises and falls as the Tide; the Hospitals above mentioned; the General Hospital; the Place where the Parliament meets; the Chamber of Accounts; and the Archbishop's Palace: Among the Churches, the Cathedral, that of *S. Owen*, with its Monastery of *Benedictine* Monks; that of *S. Amant*, with its Monastery for Nuns, of the same Order; that of *S. Maclon*; those of the *Celestine* Monks, and *Jesuits* and above thirty more, which have all their proper Beauties. As I am very fond of walking, I went round the Town in less than two Hours. I began from the Custom-House, and proceeded N. E. in a Part of the City, which the two Rivulets *Aubette* and *Robee* wash on that Side, by the Gate of *Martinville*, after having crossed the Suburb of this Name. That Gate has no manner of Beauty, nor any of the other six on the Land-Side. I passed through the Gate of *S. Hi-*

\* Tutando, & amplificando Commercio, ut quod Gentium usquam est, in Gallia quasi Domina habebatur *Ludovicus XV.* An. Regn. X. R. S. M. CC. XXV.

*laire*, from whence there is a dry Ditch to the Gate of *Cauchoise*, which is the last of them, and is a pretty handsome one. There is upon all these Gates a Statue of the Virgin *Mary*, with Lanthorns lighted by the Devotion of the Inhabitants. I asked in the Suburb of *Cauchoise* of a young Girl, my Way to the Key, who answered very ingenuously, That I might follow the Troop of Asses, which I saw before me loaded with Sacks of Plaister, and were going thither without a Guide: I thanked her, but as those Gentlemen walked too gravely for me, I enquired of the first Person I met, who shewed me the Way. I looked upon my Watch at my Return to the Custom-House, and found, that I had been gone from it but 1 Hour and 3 Quarters.

The Solemnity of the King's Marriage, in 1725, drew a great many Strangers to *France*. In the Inn where I lodged, there was an *Italian* Gentleman, who was going to see it; we agreed to go together, and set out from *Roan* by Water, and went in a Boat to *S. Owen's* Port, about two Leagues above that City; it is a pretty large and good Village, where we took some poor Horses, called *Marettes*, to go to *Roule*, another Village, about 5 Leagues further, where we embarked on one of those Kinds of Galleots, called *Batelets*. The Country is very agreeable between *S. Owen* and *Roule*; we rode through *Pont de l'Arche*, a pretty Village, which took its Name from a long Stone-Bridge, with thirty Arches upon the *Seine*. From *Roule* to *Paris*, we saw *Vernon*, *Mantes*, *Meulan*, *Poissy*, and *S. Germain en Laye*.

I shall say little of these Places, which I had seen formerly, because there have been several Accounts given of them, as well as of the others, which I passed through in my three last Journeys to *France*, I shall only enlarge upon those, which have not been sufficiently described.

*Vernon* is a pretty populous Town; there are seen upon an Hill some ancient Trenches, called the Camp of *Cesar*; from whence it is conjectured, that this was an important Passage during the Wars of *Gaul*. *Mantes* and *Meulan* are not considerable for any thing, but their Situation upon the same River, and their Manufactures of Leather. The former of these Towns has a fine collegiate Church, and a Hill near it, upon which stands a magnificent Monastery of *Celestine* Monks, adds much to the Pleasantness of its Situation: As the latter Village receives the same Advantage from the Prospect of a neighbouring Island, in which the Abbot *Bignon* has a noble Country-Seat. The Parish Church of *S. Nicaise*, and a Monastery of *Benedictine* Monks, are the chief Ornaments of that Town. *Poissy* had formerly a fine Castle, where the Kings used to reside in Summer, before that of *S. Germain* was built. *S. Lewis* was born here, and took the Name of *Lewis de Poissy*; that which is most considerable here, is the fine Church of the *Dominican* Nuns. *S. Germain en Laye*, has the Advantage of a good Air and agreeable Situation. *Lewis the Fourteenth* was born here on the 5th of September,

*ber*, 1638. *James the Second*, King of *England*, resided in this Castle from the Time of his Retreat in 1689, till his Death in 1701. This Town is very populous, and adorned with a great Number of Hotels, which are built upon Occasion of the Court's residing here: We took here the ordinary Coach for *Paris*.

I found this Capital of the Kingdom prodigiously enlarged and beautified. The Suburb of *S. Germain* was extended as far as the Hotel of the Invalids, which was formerly a quarter of a League distant from it. This Space, which was then void, is now covered with magnificent Houses and long regular Streets. I found it in 1728 and 1729, yet more embellished and extended along the *Seine*. The Dutchess Dowager of *Bourbon* had erected there one of the most magnificent Palaces in *France*; which terminates the Suburb on that Side; in short, the Passion of Building was carried so far in all the Suburbs, that the King in 1726 published a Prohibition, which is engraved upon hard Stones at the end of every Suburb, that no Person hereafter shall build beyond those Limits. I observed as a great Convenience, that most of these Streets had not only been enlarged, but that the Names of them were engraved on hard Stones, or painted on Copper-Plates, at both the Ends of them, as well as of the others. The *Italian Gentleman* and I went to lodge in the Quarter of the Temple; he was well skilled in Architecture, Sculpture, and Painting, and had a Curiosity to see the Churches; I accompanied him thither, and found a great many advantageous Alterations and Reparations in most of them, especially in the Cathedral, wherein the Choir was repaired and almost entirely changed: The High-Altar is now one of the finest and richest in the World: The *Italian Gentleman* found some of those Churches of an excellent Design and admirable Architecture after the modern Manner; but he said, there were very few in that Perfection, as the Builders imitated one another: He found a great many Faults in others, in which (as one of the Authors of *the Description of Paris* observes, speaking of the Portico of the Church of the *Capuchins*, in the Suburb of *S. Honore*, which faces the Equestrian Statue of the *Place des Conquêtes*, the Architects seem to have copied each other\*. There was not any Difference either in the Manner of Building, or in the Steeples, Towers, &c. nor that Variety of Forms, which give such a Beauty to a City. I told him upon this, that to see that, he should take a Tour to *London*, where he might observe every Thing that he could wish in those Points, all the Ornaments of the several Orders of fine *Roman* Architecture, not only observed and disposed with an admirable Judgment in the Structure of their Churches and other Buildings, but also

R r r

im-

\* This Author and others speak thus of the Front of that Church, and of that of the Assumption: 'We observe too many Instances in *Paris*, in which the *French* Architects shew the Barrenness of their Genius, by always copying from one another, even in their very Faults'.



improved with a great many Inventions, by the Excellency of the *English* Genius. For among 130 Steeples in the City and Suburbs, there are scarce two of the same Form; and all this is done without any Confusion: He replied, that he had a Design to visit that Country some Time or other; and that he knew there the famous Virtuoso Mr. *Haym*, whom he was extremely pleased to find was one of my particular Friends. He admired the Place *des Conquêtes*, and the magnificent Buildings which inclose it, with the Statue of *Lewis the Fourteenth* in the Middle. I was equally surpris'd at it, not having seen it before; for this Place was not finished when I left *France* in the Beginning of 1698; and the Statue, according to the Inscription, was not erected till 1699. He admired as much the Place *des Victoires*. As I did not see there the four Supporters compos'd of three *Doric* Columns each, with the fine Lanthorns upon them, to light this Place in the Night; I asked the Reason of it, and was told, that the Regent had ordered them to be taken down to save the Expence of the Lights, and had made a Present of them to the *Theatine*-Fathers of *Mazarin* Key, to adorn the Portico of their Church. This Church was begun above 50 Years ago, and was to have been finish'd very soon; but it was not so when I was at *Paris* in 1729. 'Tis obvious to guess at the Reasons of this, as well as of several others continuing still unfinished, though begun above a Century ago, and which perhaps will never be compleated: By this Means, the Possessours of them are no Losers. I have hinted somewhat upon this Affair in my former Travels. We went the Day we were in this Quarter, to hear Vespers at the Nuns of the Assumption in the Street of *S. Honoire*, behind the Place *des Conquêtes* \*. The *Italian* Gentleman was charmed with their Manner of Singing, and their Voices, but was sorry to see, that so rich Materials, as those of their Church, were so ill used: He found no Proportion between the Cupola, the Pillars, the Ornaments of the Portico, and the Body of the Building. Among several noble Houses lately built in the Suburb of *S. Anthony*, we could not but exceedingly admire the new Hotel of the King's black Musketeers.

I only name some of these new Buildings, that I may copy from others; but you may read a full Account of them in the *New Description of Paris*. We went every Evening to walk in the Garden of the Temple, which is very pleasant. The Priory-House is well built, and very much beautified since I left *France*. I mentioned in my first Chapter, how cruelly *Philip the Fair* expelled the Knights *Templars* out of *France*. His Successours gave the Temple, with Part of their Revenues, to the Knights of *Malta*, who built the Priory-House.

\* This Monastery, in my Time, was so famous for the fine Voice of the Superiour, (who was extremely well-skilled in Musick, and of the other Nuns, that the Street was always full of Coaches, to hear their Vespers and other Services.

House. The Church is served by six Ecclesiasticks of this Order. To destroy even the Memory of the *Templars*, there was not one Tomb of them remaining. This Church, and the Houses belonging to it, are not near so beautiful and regular, as those in the Temple at *London*, represented in Plate VI. The five high Towers, built in 1304, make a noble Figure. The Archives of the Order of *Malta*, and the great Chapter-Hall below, deserve to be seen. We departed for *Fountainbleau* on the 3d of *September*, upon the News that we heard of the Ceremony of the King's Marriage, which was to be performed there on the 5th. We hired Horses to *Corbeil*, and crossed the Suburb of *S. Anthony S. E.* by *Charenton-Street*. We soon had the Sight of the stately Houses of the Duke of *Roban*, *M. Pajot*, *la Croix*, &c. of *Conflans* belonging to the Archbishop of *Paris* (so called from its being seated at the Confluence of the River *Seine*, with the River *Marne*) and of the large Borough of *Charenton*. We staid there about an Hour, and saw a fine Church with the Monastery of the Nuns of *S. Sacrement*, built upon the Ruins of the largest and noblest Church, which the Protestants had in *France*. We crossed the *Marne* by a fine Stone-Bridge, and passed about three Leagues higher through *Villeneuve S. George*, a pretty little Town upon the *Seine*, where *Mr. Pelletier* has a noble Country-Seat. *Corbeil* is three Leagues further; it is a large Town, and very populous. The *Seine* and the *Juine* divide it into four Parts; there are four Parish-Churches, two belonging to Convents, and one to a Priory, which have their particular Beauties. We took there the Water-Coach, and went to lodge at *Melun*, 3 Leagues above *Corbeil*; it is a very ancient Town, where the Goddess *Isis* had a Temple, the Ruins of which are still to be seen, at least four old Walls, which are supposed to be so. *Melun* is divided into three Parts by the *Seine*, which forms an Island, upon which stands that Part, which is called the City, with an old Castle and a collegiate Church. There are here six more Churches, three Parish ones, and three belonging to Monasteries. Hearing on the 4th that the Queen was arrived that Day at *Montereau*, that the King was gone then to meet her, that she was to lie at *Meret*, and that *Fountainbleau* was so full, that we should not be able to procure a Lodging there, we staid at *Melun* till the 5th. I had formerly seen those Places, as well as the abovementioned, and a great Part of *Champaigne*, and had crossed *Lorraine* as far as *Strasburgh*, where I had a Relation, who died in that City, and left me some Money, which served in my first Travels. *Montereau* is about seven Leagues from *Melun*; it is a little Village, situated at the Conflux of the River *Tone* and the *Seine*, with an old Castle. *John*, Duke of *Burgundy*, was killed here in the Presence of the Dauphin *Charles*, after *Charles the Seventh* of *France*. It stands between three Provinces, *la Brie*, *Gathinois*, and *Champaigne*. *Moret* is another lesser Town with a Castle, or rather a Tower, covered

vered with a Terrass. There is a great Church, which is a pretty good *Gothick* Building, and a Nunnery. This, with a fine Plain, is all that I can remember between these two Places. We went next Day early in the Morning to *Fountainbleau*, which is four Leagues beyond *Nic-lem*. I shall say but little of this Place, since the Author of the *New Description of France* in six or seven Volumes has given so full an Account of this and many other Places. My *Italian* Gentleman had read what Cardinal *Bentivoglio* says of it, which he found very conformable to the Original. The Situation of it in the middle of a vast Forest, very fit for Hunting, occasioned the Building of the Castle, and the Plenty of good and clear Springs gave it the Name of *Fountainbleau*. The Borough of that Name has but one Parish-Church, which is very beautiful. The Borough was begun to be built, when the Kings first resided here. It is well built, and consists chiefly of Inns, because of the great Concourse of People, who always followed the Court hither. I enquired after, and found here, Count *Tarlo*, a *Polish* Lord, whom I had the Honour to be acquainted with in *Bender*. He received me very kindly. He remained a constant Adherent to King *Stanislaus*, and had been sent in the Beginning of *July* to the *French* Court, with full Power from his Majesty, the Queen, and the Princess *Mary*, for signing the Contract of the Marriage of *Lewis the Fifteenth* with that Princess; whom the Duke of *Orleans* had espoused at *Strasburgh* in his Name. He received the Order of the *Holy Ghost*, which, as I observed in my first Chapter, is the most noble in *France*; but it gradually sinks now in its Honour, since the King has admitted so great Numbers into it; or, as it is said, since it has been bought of those, who have received it. This Count procured us an Opportunity of going into the grand Royal Chappel, which was prepared for the Solemnity, notwithstanding the Hurry and Business of the Day. The Complaisance of the *French* is such, that they admit none to see every Thing, that deserves to be seen in this Palace, or rather Palaces; for they seem to have been four Palaces, joined together at different Times. A Servant in it, to whom the Count had recommended us, in order to be admitted into the Chappel, conducted us almost over every Part of it, except the King's Cabinet, where his Majesty was, and the Queen's Apartment, where she was then expected. We saw not only the outward Parts of this noble Pile of Buildings, the Courts, adorned with fine Statues of Marble, Brass, &c. especially that of the *Fountain*, so called from a magnificent Basen, in the middle of which there are several Figures, which cast up the Waters different Ways and very agreeably; but we likewise saw the Inside of them, particularly in the old Castle the little Chappel, the Ceiling of which strikes the Eye very delightfully, the Cabinet of Paintings, &c. In the other Parts of the Buildings, the Halls for Balls and Comedies, the Galleries, painted finely in different Manners, or adorned with

with Pictures, Basso-Relievo's, &c. especially the great Gallery, those of *Diana*, of the Stage, of the Queen, of *Francis the First*, and of the Reformed. It is a Pity, that the *Fresco's* of these two Galleries have been so neglected and defaced. We were in the latter, when the Queen came and was conducted to her Apartment. It was past 10 o' Clock, and our Introducer told us, that it was time to go to the Royal Chappel of Trinity. The *Italian Gentleman* offered him some Pieces of Silver into his Hand, but he refused them, intimating to him, that the *French* do not sell their Civility, but think themselves obliged to pay it, especially to Strangers. We went down from this Gallery by the great Pair of Stairs called *Fer a Cheval* to the Chappel, which is not far off. This Chappel is large, well built, adorned with fine Paintings, and paved with Marble of divers Colours. There was erected in the middle a kind of Alcove two Steps high, covered with a rich Carpet. At the further End towards the Altar stood a Pew, with two Elbow-Chairs, and two Cushions covered with purple Velvet embroidered with Flower de Luce of Gold, and embellished with other Ornaments. The Form of these Cushions was like that marked A in Plate V. under the Crown. Over this Pew was a Canopy of the same Silk, and embroidered with the Arms of *France* and *Navarre* in the middle. There were near the Altar, which is magnificently adorned with Columns of fine Marble and Figures, &c. on the Epistle-side, three Elbow-Chairs, one for the Cardinal of *Roban*, Great Almoner of *France* and Bishop of *Strasburgh*, who had performed the Ceremonies of the Espousals in that City, and was to say Mass; the two others for the Bishops of *Soissons*, and *Viviers*, the former of whom was to serve his Eminency as Deacon, and the other as Subdeacon. Lower on both sides of the Altar were Seats or Benches for above 60 of the Clergy, both Prelates and Abbots, and for several Lords of the Courts; and other Seats on both sides of the Pew for the Knights of *Malta*. All round the Chappel, in the Arches of the little Chappels, were erected Amphitheatres for Strangers and Ladies. The Master of Ceremonies placed every one according to his Quality. The four Princes of *Bavaria*, who were come the Day before to see the Ceremony, and appeared in publick under borrowed Names \*, were placed in a Balcony with some Lords of their Retinue. We stood upon the Floor as well as several others of greater Quality than our selves. About eleven of the Clock, their Majesties entered, attended with the Princes and Princesses of the Blood. The King had a Habit of Gold Brocade, with Buttons of Diamonds, and a Mantle adorned with Gold Lace, called Point of *Spain*. The Queen had her Head dressed in her Hair, and upon it a Crown of rich Diamonds represented in Plate V. The fore Sides of her Peticoats and Stayes shone with Jewels. She had

S f f

\* The Electour of *Cologne*, was named the Abbot of *Stromberg*; the Bishop of *Ratisbon*, the Abbot of *Wassembourg*; the Electoral Prince of *Bavaria*, the Count of *Haug*; and the Duke *Ferdinand*, the Count of *Cling*.

had on a Royal Mantle of Purple Velvet spread with Flower de Lices of Gold, lined with Ermines; and her Train was supported by the Dutches Dowager of *Bourbon*, the Princess of *Conti*, and Mademoiselle de *Charolois*. Their Majesties, having ascended the Alcove, kneeled down before the Pew; the Princes and Princesses of the Blood did the like on both sides of the Alcove, and all the others likewise. Then the Cardinal de *Roban*, dressed in his Pontifical Habit, came out of the Vestry with the Bishops of *Soissons* and *Viviers*. He saluted the Altar, then the King and Queen bowed three times, and ascended to the Altar. Then he faced the Royal Pew: At the same time the King at Arms, and the Marquis of *Dreux*, Grand Master of the Ceremonies, saluted the Altar, and then their Majesties in the same Manner, to give them a Sign to come near the Altar, which they did; and the Cardinal addressed them with a short Speech proper to the Subject, and gave them the Nuptial Blessing. After this they returned to their Pew, where his Eminency, accompanied with the two Bishops, carried them the Holy Water. Then, returning to the Altar, he began the Mass; the Deacon, having sung the Gospel, gave him the Book to kiss, according to the Custom; and then, attended with the Bishop of *Metz*, carried it to their Majesties, who kissed it. After the Offertory, the King at Arms and the Marquis of *Dreux*, made a Sign each of them, by four Salutations to the Altar, to the King, and Queen, and Duke of *Orleans* to come near the Altar. The Duke of *Orleans* went first down, and kneeled before it, holding a Wax-Taper charged with 20 Lewis d' Ors, which he received from the Marquis of *Dreux*. Then the King went to kneel down on a Cushion before the Cardinal, who sat in his Elbow-Chair in the midst of his assistant Prelates in theirs; he kissed the Bishop's Ring, and presented him the Taper, which his Majesty had received from the Duke of *Orleans*. The King, being returned to the Pew, the Queen went down, and did the same; she kneeled down, kissed the Bishop's Ring, and offered another Taper charged also with 20 Lewis d' Ors, which she received from the Dutches of *Orleans*. At the end of the *Pater Noster*, the King at Arms and the Marquis of *Dreux*, having repeated the usual Salutations, their Majesties went both together again to kneel before the Cardinal upon two Cushions. Then the Bishop of *Metz* on the right Hand, and the Bishop of *Frejus* on the left, extended a Pall of Silver Brocade above their Heads, which they did not remove, till the Cardinal had ended the usual Prayers. Then the Bishops of *Metz* and *Viviers* gave together to their Majesties the *Pax* \* to kiss. His Eminency, having ended the Mass, and sung, *Itē, Missa est.* gave them the Holy Water, and offered them the

*Corporale*

\* Every Person, especially among Protestants, does not know what the *Pax* is, any more than the *Corporale*. The first is a Gold, Silver, or Copper Plate gilt, with a Crucifix represented upon it in Relievo; or it is often the Backside of the Patten. I think, that I have explained this in my first Volume, where I describe the sacred Utensils.

*Corporale*\* to kiss; then they went back to their Pew, and seated themselves in their Elbow-Chairs. The Curate of *Fountainbleau*, coming near it, with the Marriage-Register in his Hands, the Cardinal took and presented it to the King and Queen, with a Pen to write their Names in it. The Princes of the Blood received it, to whom the Abbot of *Preze* presented the Pen, who signed also. While they were signing, the Herald of Arms distributed Medals with Devices on both Sides, represented by B. and Plate V. The Cardinal, returning to the Altar, set the *Te Deum*, which was sung by the King's Musicians. Then their Majesties walked most of the Chappel, attended as before, the Duke of *Orleans* holding the Queen by the Hand, and retired to their Apartments to take off their Royal Ornaments. After this the King and Queen dined, and the Dutchess Dowager of *Bourbon*, the Dutchess of *Orleans*, the Princess of *Conti*, *Mesdemoiselles de Charrolais, de Clermont*, and *Rochester-Ton*, had the Honour to dine with them. Then they saw the Representation of the Comedy of *Amphitryon*; after which they supped. In the mean Time the Parterre of the *Tiher* was illuminated, upon which an infinite Number of Fire-Pots and Pyramids of Fire formed a noble and delightful Spectacle. After Supper their Majesties came with their Company into the Hall of the *Cent-Suisses*, and placed themselves at the Windows, which face the Parterre, to see the Illumination. As soon as they appeared, there were a great many Fuses thrown up, which formed several agreeable Figures; and then followed a Fire-Work, the most curious that could be contrived, which lasted above a quarter of an Hour. After this we went back to lie at *Melun*; and as the *Italian Gentleman* and I became pleased with each other's Company, and he was to go to *Chartres*, where he had some Business, and then to return to *Roan*; and as I had formerly at *Estampes* a very good Friend, the Abbot *Godeau*, who had been my Regent in Rhetorick at *Paris*, and had now a Benefice in that Town; and another Friend at *Dreux*, who had been my fellow Student in Philosophy in the same Colledge; and especially M. *Darmenouville*, my intimate Friend and Contemporary in the Colledge at *Gisors*, I took a Resolution to go with them, and so we agreed to take our Course through these three Places, and I promised to accompany him as far as *Vernon*. We departed the next Morning, and having only crossed *Fort-Alais*, a little Town on the *Juin*, we went to lie at *Estampes*. It is a pretty large Town, with five Parish-Churches, the best of which is dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*; two Convents for Men, and two for Women; the Churches belonging to which are neat enough. I understood here, that M. *Godeau* had left his Benefice in this Town for another. We took here Post-Horses to *Chartres*,

\* This is a very fine consecrated Linnen, which the Priest spreads upon the Altar, like a Napkin, and spreads over the Host, after Consecration to receive the Fragments when he breaks it, He gives the flat Case, in which this Linnen is kept, to kiss.

*Chartres*, which is only three Posts distant from it. There is nothing remarkable between *Estampes* and *Chartres*, and between this City and *Dreux*, but the Beauty and Fruitfulness of the Country in Corn, Fruits, Wines, and good Pastorage. The Wool there is much esteemed, especially that about *Estampes*. *Chartres* is a much larger City, better built, and more populous, and well known by the several Accounts which have been given of it. It is situated upon the *Eure*, which divides it into two Parts. According to some Writers it is one of the most ancient Cities in the World: They tell us it was built a little after the Flood by the *Gomerites*, but the common Opinion ascribes it to the *Druids*\*, as well as that of *Dreux*. They held here their Assemblies, which were at first religious, and by Degrees became political; and these gave Rise to Parliaments or Diets; so that from Priests they became Sovereigns. They established a temporal and spiritual despotick Power in *Gaul* and the other Parts of *Europe*; and by this Means the People endeavoured to shew them the most absolute Submission, and enrich them most with the Fruits of their Servitude. The *Templars* and *Teutonic* Knights have very well imitated the *Druids* in these Points, and the other religious Orders still follow their Steps with prodigious Success in another Part of the World. They had at *Chartres* a Temple dedicated to the *Virgin Mary, who was to bring forth*; on the Ruins of which, they say, stands the Cathedral, dedicated to the *Virgin, who has brought forth*. This Church is a fine *Gothick* Building, adorned with excellent Sculpture and Paintings. The History of Jesus Christ, round the Choir in hard Stone, is one of the best Pieces of Sculpture of the famous *Goujon*. Its two high Steeples of Stone are reckoned the finest in *France*. Several other Churches have their peculiar Beauties, as well as the Defects of the Times, in which they were built.

*Dreux* is about seven Leagues from *Chartres*, upon the River *Blaise*, which runs into the *Eure*. There stands upon the Top of a Hill, an old Castle half ruined. The Walls of the Town are built after the antique Manner, very strong, and well preserved: It is not so large as *Chartres*, but as populous in Proportion. There are two Parish-Churches, and four belonging to Convents, a Commandery of *Malta*, and a good Woollen Manufacture, which makes the chief Branch of its Trade. *Henry the Fifth*, King of *England*, and Master of almost all *France*, took it in 1421, after a short Siege, and died in 1422. His Son *Henry*, who was born at *Windsor* during the Siege, was proclaimed at *London*, King of *England*, *France*, &c. *Charles the Sixth*, King of *France*, dying a few Years after, that Prince was also proclaimed King of *France* at *Paris*, and Successour to his Throne; and the Duke of *Bedford* was pro-

\* The Figure and Habits of those Masters of Religion and Politicks in those Times, is described in Plate VII, No. 1 and 3.



proclaimed and acknowledged Regent of *France*. *Dreux* gave Birth to the learned *Anthony Godeau*, Bishop of *Vence*, celebrated for his Works, especially for his sacred Pieces of Poetry, amongst which, his Paraphrase of the Hymn, *Benedicite omnia*, &c. procured him the Abbey of *Grasse*. The famous Tragi-Comic Poet, Mr. *Rotrou* was also born here. I found at *Dreux* my Friend, whom I wanted; who was as much surpris'd, as glad to see me, not having heard of me for 27 or 28 Years. He treated us very nobly for the two Days which we staid at *Dreux*, and did what he could to detain me longer. He went to live at *Paris*, where he died lately. He was a zealous *Jansenist*, which was no Advantage to his Interest and Fortune. He gave me a very pathetick Account of the entire Destruction of *Port-Royal des Champs*, which I have mentioned in my first Volume: He told me, that they had not left one Stone upon another; that they had even dug up the dead Bodies, and thrown their Ashes into the Air; in short, that they had strewed the Place with Salt, where that celebrated Monastery had stood. We stopt no longer between *Evreux* and *Vernon*, than just to view the Outside, and the fine Situation of the Abbey of *Ivry*, of the Order of *S. Bennet*. The Country is every where agreeable and fruitful: We parted at *Vernon* after having dined together, and promised to correspond by Letters with each other. I went N. E. along the *Epta*, which falls into the *Seine*, a little above *Vernon*; I called at the Abbey *du Tresor*, of the *Cistercian* Order, where I had formerly a Nun of my Acquaintance; but, hearing that she was dead, I went to lie at *S. Cler* or *Clair*, which is a Borough, not well peopled, with an old Castle almost demolished upon the *Epta*, which divides the *Norman* from the *French Vexin*, and gave Occasion to the *Latin Verse* below\*. There is but one Church in it, which is a very indifferent Building, dedicated to the *S.* of that Name, and to *S. Ceryn*, his Companion in Religion and Devotion. A little farther to the S. E. stands an Hermitage, with a little Chappel also dedicated to *S. Clair*, and a Fountain of very clear Water, to which is ascribed the Virtue of preserving the Sight, and curing sore Eyes. The History of this Saint, printed at *Roan*, with the Approbation of the Divines, intitled *the Life of S. Clair*, represents him as descended from a Royal Family of *England*, and among other Miracles, as a Proof of his Sanctity, it mentions this: 'That a  
' very beautiful and rich Lady of *Neustria*, now called *Normandy*, fall-  
' ing passionately in love with him, and urging him to return the Proofs  
' of his Affection, he fled away, in order to avoid her criminal Impor-  
' tunities: The Lady, being exasperated at his Contempt of her Ad-  
' dresses, vowed his Death, and engaged a Set of Ruffians to find him  
' out, and to bring his Head to her. They discovered his Place of Re-  
' tirement, where the Hermitage is now, where he raised a little Hut  
' of Clay, and Branches of Trees; one of them struck him over the

T t t

' Head

\* *Epta licet parvus Francorum dividit Arva.*

‘ Head with his Scimiter, which pierced his Scull to the Brain, and  
 ‘ another cut off his Head ; but, leaving it upon the Ground till the  
 ‘ Blood was drained out, they were so much surpris’d, to see the Mar-  
 ‘ tyr take up his Head, and go and wash it in the Fountain, and then  
 ‘ deliver it to them himself, that they run away without it. This Mi-  
 ‘ racle, with a great many others, which he worked by the Means of  
 ‘ these Waters in favour of the Blind, who, washing their Eyes in it  
 ‘ with true Faith, recovered the Use of them, occasioned a little Cha-  
 ‘ pel, with the Hermitage to be erected to him’. I saw one Her-  
 mit there, who was blind, and died so. Instead of going the direct  
 Way to *Gisors*, which is not above two Leagues, I took that which  
 is three Leagues, through *Parnes*, *Montjavou*, and *Vaudancourt*, (three  
 pretty Villages.) As I went out of *S. Clair*, I left the Road of *Paris*  
 on my right Hand, opposite to which stands *Buby*, a fine Country-  
 Seat of the Marquis of *Broglie*, now Ambassadour to *England*; and  
 about 7 and 800 Paces to the left Hand, I pass’d by *S. Eloy*, another  
 fine Seat, which belongs to the Chevalier *Broglie*, and which is much  
 beautified, since I saw it before. *Parnes* is the smallest of the Villa-  
 ges abovementioned. Here is an antient Priory converted to secular  
 Uses, and farm’d out, which is, together with the Village, a Depen-  
 dence upon the Castle of *Alaincourt*, belonging to the House of *Vil-  
 leroi*, about half a League from *Parnes*. The Church is a large and  
 indifferent Building, dedicated to *S. Josse*. I cannot yet learn the Ori-  
 ginal of this Priory. The House, which is so called to this Day,  
 is join’d to the Church. The Personage is divided from it by the  
 Church-Yard and a Street. Perhaps this Church was formerly ser-  
 ved by *Monks*, as that of *S. Josse* in *Panthieu* is by the *Benedic-  
 tines*, who have a Monastery there, which I shall speak of hereaf-  
 ter. Father *Mabillon* represents this Saint as descended from one of  
 the Kings of *Bretagne*, and tells us, that he renounced the Royal Dig-  
 nity to embrace the Priesthood and a monastick Life. The Statue, which  
 stands above the great Altar of *Parnes* Church, represents him in the  
 Habit of a King and a Sacrificer, with a Crown upon his Head, such  
 as the Painters and Statuaries generally give to the Royal Prophet *Da-  
 vid*. *Montjavou* is a neat populous Village, situated upon a high Hill,  
 a small League from *Parnes*; which, I think, is called *Mons Jovis* in  
*Latin*. Some imagine that *Jupiter* had a Temple here. The Church  
 is well built of Free-Stone, dedicated to *S. Martin*, with a high  
 Tower of the same Stone. *Vaudancourt*, about half a League further,  
 is as neat as this, and almost as large; but the Church is very indiffe-  
 rent. *Gisors*, which you see from thence very plainly, stands partly  
 on a Bottom, and partly upon the Declivity of a Hill, upon which is  
 an old Castle, or rather considerable Remains of it, which I shall speak  
 of hereafter. I entered into the lower Part of the Town by the Gate  
 of *S. Magny*, upon which stands an Image of the Virgin *Mary* with  
 these

these Words, *Gisortium Virginis Douarium*\*. This Part of the Town is in the *French Vexin*, and the Street of *Magny*, which I passed through, reaches to a Bridge on the River *Epta*, by which they go over into the other Part called the *Borough*. This Bridge is remarkable in History for the Danger which *Philip Augustus* was in of being drowned here. The Story is thus: *Richard the First*, being at last returned to *England* after his long Captivity, passed over into *France* with an Army, to revenge himself for the ungenerous Advantage, which *Philip* had made of his Absence. After divers great Successes in *Normandy* against *Philip*, who, being seized with a panick Fear, fled before him; he pursued him as far as the *French Vexin*, where he had retired. He took and burnt the Castles of *Cerifontaine* and *Courcelles*, (now two poor Villages, with a few Ruins of those Castles;) he joined him between *Courcelles* and *Gisors*, which is not above a League distant, and defeated him. *Philip*, dreading to fall into the Hands of a conquering Enemy, especially one so formidable as *Richard*, whom he had so unjustly wronged, fled with the utmost Precipitation to *Gisors*, with those of his Men who could follow him. The Bridge, which was then of Timber, broke down under his Horse, and he fell into the *Epta*; his Deliverance was esteemed a Miracle: There was then, as it is reported, a Gate with an Image of the Virgin *Mary* upon it, and a Wall on the Northern Bank of the River; some Remains are still to be seen there. In the mean Time, a Legate, whom *Innocent the Third* had sent into *France*, to mediate a Peace between the two Kings, brought the Affair so far, as to induce *Richard* to come to a Conference with *Philip*. The Design of the Pope was to engage them in another Crusade, for the Recovery of *Jerusalem*; but they were too much displeased with the last. They met between *Gisors* and *Trie*, where was held the little Council, mentioned in my first Chapter, and many other religious and political Assemblies before. They concluded upon a Truce for five Years. It may well be supposed, that *Richard* got ample Satisfaction by this Treaty: However, *Gisors* was to remain in *Philip's* Hands, though the other would not renounce his Pretensions to it. *Philip*, being rescued from Danger, repaired the Bridge. The Historians, who relate this Accident, as *Monmirel*, *Duchefne*, and others, tell us, that he ordered the Image of the Virgin to be cloathed with Gold Brocade, and the Gate to be covered with pure Gold; from whence it was

\* That is, *Gisors* is under the Protection of the Virgin *Mary*. *Papirius Masson*, with other Writers, call it her Dowry, because the Land is very fertile, and the Woman's Dowry cannot be alienated. Some call it in *Latin*, *Cæsar Otium*, *Cæsaris Otium*, *Cæsar's* Pleasure or Rest; for they pretend, that he made it his ordinary Residence to refresh himself from the Fatigues of the *Belgick* War. Some say that he built it; but he generally destroyed the Cities of *Gaul*, and we never find that he built any one. Others call it *Divortium*, not only because it divides the two *Vexins*, but because it was the Occasion of so many Wars between the Kings of *France* and *England*. See *Newbridge*, Lib. 1. Hist.

was afterwards called *The Golden Gate*. There was a Medal struck upon that Occasion, representing *Philip* on Horseback in the middle of the River, with these Words, *Fracto Ponte, Caesar oceano sospes enatat*. *M. de S. André*, a Rector of the Parish-Church in *Gisors*, had made the following Verses among others upon that Subject;

*Anglum debellans aliquando Philippus in Eptam,  
Cursu præcipiti Ponte ruente cadit :  
Auratam Augustus pinxit sub Virgine Portam,  
Liber aquis quam nunc prompta ruina tulit.  
Hinc procul hæc Porta ! est Turris Lodoicus in hostes ;  
Nil timeas, tuto perge, Viator, iter.*

The first House that appears on the left Hand, after we pass this Bridge, is that of *M. Darmenouville*. There never were two Friends more intimate, sincere and constant, than we had been ; nor more pleased to see each other again, after a Separation of 28 Years. *M. Darmenouville*, his Father, was at his Country-Seat in *Vely*, a large Village, two Leagues distant, where I had formerly passed a Part of the Vacations very agreeably. The Necessity I was under to return to *Holland*, to hasten the *French* Impression of my Travels, would not permit to see him. I promised my Friend to return after the Impression was finished : But, when I came again to *Gisors* in 1728, the old Gentleman was dead. He was a Person of great Probity, and as much regretted after his Death, as he was esteemed in his Life. He divided his Time between Business, History, the Study of Medals, and the innocent Pleasures of the Country. His Son employs his Leisure almost in the same Way, but bestows Part of it upon Poetry, for which he has no less Inclination, than Talents from Nature. He succeeds equally upon sacred and profane Subjects, and in the antient, as well as modern Stile and Languages. He imitates *Marot*, even to his Orthography and the Boldness of his Expressions, especially in his Epigrams and other Poems of that Nature. He makes no Scruple, any more than that Poet, to call Things by their proper Names, that he may not, he says, corrupt the Simplicity of his Muse. The Air of *Gisors* seems to inspire a peculiar Genius for Poetry and other Sciences. There are several Persons there, who write finely in Verse and Prose. Abbot *Compé*, the Regent of the Colledge, a young Man of extensive Learning, is the *Virgil* of this Place. His Modesty is such, that I cannot enlarge upon his other excellent Qualifications for fear of offending him. The King's Advocate is a *Tirenio*, who, being deprived of his bodily Eyes, seems to have his Mind the more enlarged by it. His perfect Knowledge of the Law, the Use he makes of it, his Integrity and many other valuable Qualifications, which I do not mention for the same Reason

Reason of not shocking his Modesty, render him the Love and Esteem of every Person. *Odericus Vitalis* commends very much the Ingenuity and Probity of the Inhabitants of this Country, whom he calls *Vulcasinenses*, the Capital of which is *Gisors*. His Words are these, *Quibus ingenuitas & ingens probitas inest*

*Vexin* was called *Vulcasinus*, or *Vulcani sinus*, because of its Forests and Mines, which rendered it fit for Iron-Works and Forges, of which *Vulcan*, it is known, was the God.

*Gisors* is one of the most celebrated Places of the Kingdom in History and Geography, though Travellers seem to have known but little of it, or wrote scarce any Thing. The Author of the last *Description of France* has hardly given so many Lines concerning it, as he has wrote Volumes. He places there three Convents of Friars, and four of Nuns. There are three Convents of the latter, viz. of the *Annunciation*, the Church of which I found beautified; of *our Lady of Mount Carmel*, with a fine Church, built after the modern Manner, and that of *S. Ursula*. There is but one Convent of Friars, who are *Recolets*. There is a Priory, or the Remains of a Priory, which was formerly a little Monastery of *Benedictines*. The Abbot *de Vase* had it as a Benefice, and resigned it to the *Jesuits*, on their promising to make a Colledge of it for teaching the Youth *gratis*; but they have not executed their Promise yet, and are powerful enough to do but just what they please themselves. They have converted it into a Farm, as that of *Pearne*. The Church, which was dedicated to *S. Owen*, is fallen to Ruins. The Images of God and the Saints are quite defaced: However, they send every Year, or Quarter of a Year, one of the Fathers, to say Mass for the Rest of the Founder's Soul, and to receive at the same Time their Rent from the Farmers. This Priory, and the Convents are in that Part of the Town, which I mentioned above. In the other Part, called the *Borough*, is an *Hotel-Dieu*, joining to the House of *M. Darmenouville*, of which it was formerly a Part; but sacrificed by the Piety of one of his Ancestours to that charitable Use. It is served by young Ladies of antient Families in *Bretagne*, who are called *Mesdemoiselles*, not Sisters, as those of other *Hotel-Dieus*. The *Description*, quoted above, tells us, That there is but one Parish-Church in *Gisors*, which is large, beautiful, and adorned with fine Pieces of Sculpture, which are ascribed for the most part to the celebrated *John Goujon*. This is true. The Church is in the *Borough*, not far from the *Hotel-Dieu*. The largest Piece of Sculpture is the Virgin *Mary's* Decease in the Chappel of the *Assumption*. It consists of 32, or 33 Figures, all well preserved, and bigger than Life, of the Apostles and Disciples of Jesus Christ. Every Figure has all the Spirit, Attention, and Attitude agreeable to the Subject. *S. Peter* is represented in his sacerdotal Habit, holding a Sprinkler, with which he throws holy Water upon the Body of the Virgin, which

U u u

is

## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE

is covered with a fine Drapery. Her Face is uncovered, Death is exquisitely well represented in it. One of the Disciples holds the Holy Water-Pot; another a Cross; a third a Censor, in which he blows up the Fire very naturally. In short, it is a great and exquisite Work. Another Piece above this in *Alto Relievo* gilt represents her triumphant Assumption into Heaven. You see about her Towers, and other Ornaments, with the Attributes ascribed to her in her Litany, and among others a Sun, with these Words, *Sol Justitie*; a Gate with these, *Porta Cœli*; about the Towers, *Turris Davidica*, *Turris Eburnea*, &c. Upon the Epistle-side in the same Kind of *Relievo* against the Wall there is a kind of Procession of the Fraternity of the *Assumption*, founded, or endowed, by *Charles the Fifth* of *France*, or rather a solemn Confirmation of them by the Archbishop of *Roan* in 1360: *Charles the Fifth* is represented kneeling at the Feet of that Prelate, who is attended with the Clergy in their Habits of Ceremony. The Archiepiscopal Cross is carried by a Subdeacon. All the Figures are standing, except that of the King. *Henry the Fifth*, King of *England*, Regent of *France*, and declared and acknowledged by him an Heir to that Kingdom, was a Benefactor to them, and confirmed their Privileges and Revenues, as appears from an Extract of the Martyrology below \*. There is a great Number of other Pieces of Sculpture in the Chappels about the Choir, in those about the Nave, and in the Nave itself. Among others four fine Images of the Fathers of the Church, above the two Chappels which are on both Sides of the great Door of the Choir. *S. Jerome* is represented with a Cardinal's Hat, but the Sculptour has been mistaken in this, as well as in the Holy Water, which he makes *S. Peter* sprinkle upon the Virgin *Mary*: For there were no such Things in Use in those Times. Among the other Pieces in the 14 Chappels about the Nave, the two last are on the South Side in *S. Clair's* Chappel, and in another, in which *M. Darmenouville* is buried. *Gisors* boasts of having among its Relicts a Piece of the Skull, and two Bones of one of *S. Clair's* Arms. In his Chappel his Image with that of one of the Ruffians, who cut off his Head, is very fine. But the chief is a dead Body represented in *Alto Relievo*, cut out of hard Stone, which looks like an opened Coffin. The Body seems to have been emaciated by a long Sickness. The *Latin* Distich below † shews it to be a Grave, but does not mention of whom. The Skin appears as if it were only pasted upon the Bones,

and

\* Nos Henricus, Rex Angliæ, &c. Hæres Regens Franciæ, & Dominus Hiberniæ, &c. omnibus, ad quos præf. Litteræ pervenerint. Sciatis, quod de gratiâ nostrâ statutum est, ut Divinum Officium, ac alia pietatis opera, quæ in Beatæ Mariæ de la *My Aout* fundata in Ecclesia *S. Gervaisi* & *Gisors* fieri debeant, plus solito accrescant, & ibidem laudabilius manû teneantur, concessimus Fratibus & Sororibus prædictæ omnia temporalia eidem qualiter cunque spectantia habeant in sustentationem Divini Officii, &c. de Domo nostro. In cujus rei testimonium hæc Litt. fieri facimus dominante me apud Civit. *Parisios* D. 10 Sept. Ann. Reg. nostri 8.

† Quod quis ades; tu Morte cades, respice plura;

Sum, quod eris, modicum Cineris, pro me, precor, ora.

and through it are distinguished the Muscles, Arteries, Veins, and, in short all that gives Motion to the human Machine. The Hands lie across upon a Drapery, which covers the Middle, and conceals the Difference of Sex: But the Sculptour modestly insinuates it by a Head with long Hair, a Beardless Chin, and short Legs. In the latter Chappel is the Tree of Jesse, in *Alto Relievo* gilt, like the Assumption. It covers almost the whole Wall above the Altar. It is a noble Piece, and the finest Representation of our Saviour's Genealogy that I have seen. The Vault of this Gallery, the Stone-Gallery, upon which stands the Organ near that Chappel, the Stairs to go up to it, and the Organ itself, deserve a peculiar Attention. The Painting of the Glass-Windows is very fine, and not charged with Blue, Brown, Red, and other Colours, by which so many Churches are darkened. The finest of those Windows is in S. *Nicholas's* Chappel; it is entirely of Chrystal. Among other excellent Pictures, there is the History of the Virgin *Mary* from the Annunciation to the Birth of our Saviour, and beyond that Period. The Pillars, with the several Varieties of Form and Ornaments, the Vaults, &c. Porticos of fine select Stone, belonging to this Church, are admirable; in short, every Thing is answerable to the Magnificence of it. The Tower, in which the Bells are, and the Bells themselves, are worth seeing. I say the Tower, for there is but one finished, the other is only begun. The Clergy of *Gisors* are Persons of distinguished Merit. The Parish-Church was formerly near the Castle, where some Ruins of it are still to be seen. It was removed to where it stands now by *Robert de Belesme*, Count of *Perch*, in the Year 1101, and, having been much damaged by Fire, the Choir was rebuilt by Queen *Blanche* of *Castille*; and the Nave and Chappels by the Inhabitants. There is still an ancient Chappel in the Castle, which is called the Chappel of S. *Thomas of Canterbury*, where they pretend he said Mass. This Chappel is near a high Tower, called S. *Thomas's* Tower, which is one of the best preserved Parts of the Castle. This Castle is near as large as that of *Dover*, and very like it in Form. It is inhabited only by a Gardener, who cultivates a little Garden in it. The Casements are yet pretty entire. It is generally said, that *Cæsar* was the first who built a Castle here, and that the Beauty of the Country about it induced him to build the Borough of *Gisors*. Perhaps there is as much Foundation for this, as that he built *Dover-Castle*, the Tower of *London*, which was the Work of *William the Conquerour*, and a great many other Castles, and Cities, and Boroughs, which he does not mention a Word of in his *Commentaries*, and was probably never upon the Ground where they are built. *Newbridge*, *Jumieges*, and other Writers tell us, that the Castle of *Gisors* was built by *William the Second*, surnamed *Rufus*, in the Year 1087. *Odericus Vitalis* says, it was not till 1096, which is most probable, since he had Work enough to secure himself upon the *English* Throne, which he



## The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE

he seized upon in the Year 1087, in Prejudice of the Right of his elder Brother *Robert* \*, who had a strong Party both in *England* and *France*. *Lewis the Sixth*, surnamed the *Gross*, who succeeded *Philip the First*, in the Year 1108, while *Henry the First* reigned in *England*, made the first Efforts upon *Gisors*, during those Wars, which were almost continual between the *English* and *French* Kings; especially after *William the First's* Reign, *France* took as much Advantage as was possible from the Differences of his Sons about the Succession. *Henry* had made Use of the Opportunity of Duke *Robert's* Absence †, to seize upon the Throne. He had made him Prisoner a little after his Return at the Battle of *Tinchebray* in *Lower Normandy*, and had detained him ever since in the Castle of *Cardiff* in *Wales*. Pope *Gelasius the Second* had endeavoured, by his Legates and other Persons, to procure his Liberty. And *Calixtus the Second*, his Successour, attempted the same Purpose. The Princes of the *Croisade* gave to *Robert* almost the whole Glory of taking *Jerusalem*. We may observe, that those Popes were much less successful in this Point, than in that of the Differences between *William the Second*, *Henry*, and *Anselm*, Archbishop of *Caterbury*, on Occasion of the Investitures‖. In the mean Time *Lewis* had made a Treaty of Peace with *Henry*, one Condition of which was, that he should rase the Walls of *Gisors*; but he neglecting to do it, the War broke out again with greater Violence. *Calixtus* being come into *France*, called a Council at *Rheims*, where it was proposed to excommunicate *Henry*, for his obstinate Refusal to set his Brother at Liberty; but the Pope, being unwilling to break with that King, went to him at *Gisors*, in order to try his last Efforts in favour of the Prisoner, and to mediate a Peace between the two Kings. *Henry* was just returned from burning the Castles

\* *Robert* ought to have succeeded *William the First*, as the eldest of his three Sons; but he declared his second Son *William Rufus* his Successour, because the Eldest had taken up Arms against him. However, he left him *Normandy* by his Will, and to *Henry*, his third Son, only Money.

† *Robert* was in *Palestine* in 1100, when *William the Second* was killed accidentally, by *S. Walter Tyrrel*, with an Arrow shot at a Stag, in the new Forest of *Cberringham*. The *Croises* offered him the Crown of *Jerusalem*, which he refused; and yet he could not at his Return, with all the Assistance of his Friends both in *France* and *England*, gain that of *England*; but on the contrary lost his Liberty, and died in Prison.

‖ The Kings of *England* used to give the Investiture of Benefices, the pastoral Staff, and the Ring to Abbots and Prelates, after they had taken the Oath of Allegiance and done Homage for it. *Anselm*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, had great Differences with *William the Second* about the Rights of the Church, so that being gone to *Rome* to plead that Cause, he was forbidden by the King to return to *England*. *Henry the Second* recalled him upon his Accession to the Throne; but his Zeal, for the Interests of the Church, was become the warmer by his long Stay at *Rome*. He began with excommunicating the married Clergy, who would not leave their Wives, or those that married. *Henry the Second* did not concern himself about this; but the Investitures and the Oath of Allegiance being condemned by a Council at *Rome* in 1104, *Anselm* began openly to dispute those Rights, which occasioned a Quarrel between them. *Pascal the Second*, then reigning, accommodated the Matter so, as that *Henry* kept the Homage, and the Archbishop got the Investitures. *Henry*, after that Prelate's Death, would have taken them to himself again, but the Court of *Rome* cajoled him so, that he continued by what *Pascal* had done.

Castles of *Dangu*, *Chaumont*, and *Evreux*, and preparing to march against *Lewis*, who had fled. When the Pope came, he threw himself at his Feet, kissed his holy Slipper, received the apostolical Benediction, and gave him a most splendid and respectful Reception; but could not be induced to release his Brother. His Holiness obtained his Consent for a Conference with *Lewis* to treat of Peace, and assisted himself at it with his Cardinals and other Prelates of his Retinue. *Lewis*, on his Arrival at the Place of Conference, paid him the same Respects as *Henry* had done, and the two Kings embraced each other, and in a few Days made a Peace, which lasted four Years, and was broken by a clandestine Attempt of *Thibaud*, upon the Castle of *Gisors* \*. They seem on both Sides to have made Peace only to recover themselves, and to begin the War again with greater Vigour. *Calixtus* and *Henry* agreed upon the Affair of the Investitures. He gave them up solemnly to the Church, and retained only the Homage as before. He permitted his Legate to thunder out in *England* his Anathemas against the Marriage of Priests, as *Anselm* had done, who died ten Years before, and was to be canonized for his Zeal, and the Miracles ascribed to him, which was done, and he is called S. *Anselm*. This Conference of Peace was one of the first that was held near *Gisors*, under a large Elm, the Branches of which were very thick and long, in the Middle of a Plain between that City and *Trie*. It was under this Tree that the little Council, mentioned in the first Chapter, was held; some of those, who wrote of it, say, that a luminous Cross (*Cruz miro fulgore fulgens*) appeared then in the Air over it, when the Archbishop of *Tyr* was giving the Crosses to *Henry the Second*, *Philip Augustus*, and the other Princes for the Expedition to the Holy-Land. This Plain was thereupon called the *sacred Field*, and a Cross fixed in it in Memory of that Event. There were several Battles fought in it; the last but one was between those two Kings, and called the Battle of the ironed Elm, which was one of the most fatal to *Henry*, and the beginning of all his Misfortunes, which continued to his Death. One of the Reasons of that Name was this; that *Henry* being told, that *Philip* had boasted he would cut down his Elm, he ordered Trenches to be dug round

X x x

about

\* The Occasion of the renewing the War was this. One *Monday*, which is the Market-Day at *Gisors*, in *November*, 1124, some *French* Soldiers came in, dressed like Peasants, with Provisions, according to a Scheme concerted by *Thibaud*, who lived in that City, and was Lord of some Fiefs. He invited *Robert Cbandos*, Governour of the Castle, to a Feast, who promised to wait on him; but his Lady, upon some Suspicion or other, prevented him from going; so that he sent his Services with his Excuses for not coming. Upon this *Baudry*, a *French* Officer, said, loud enough to be heard by the Servant, *We are betrayed then*; which being told to *Cbandos*, he went out of the Castle with a strong Body of Soldiers into the Market-Place, where he found *Bawdry* at the Head of his Troop of armed Peasants, and attacked him, and killed and took Prisoners a great many of his People. *Baudry* escaped into *Thibaud's* House, which was near the Castle-Gate, full of armed Men, and set it on fire, but so unhappily, that the Wind blowing N. E. it burnt part of the Castle, and very much of the Borough, and even of the great Church, which had been repaired but four Years before, and blessed by *Calixtus*.

about it, and the Body of the Tree to be covered with Iron-Bars and Plates: But this Precaution proved in vain; for, having lost the Battle, in spite of all the Miracles of Valour, which he and his Son *Richard*, who was then reconciled to him, had performed, the Soldiers of *Philip* pulled out, with Pincers and other Instruments, the Bars and Plates of Iron, cut down the Tree, and carried away great Part of the Branches, as Laurels in Sign of Victory. *Philip* had the Advantage of the Field of Battle, but he lost as many Men as *Henry*, who returned to *Gisors* very much chagrined for the Loss of his Elm; as *Gulielmus Armoricus* tells us in the Verses recited at the bottom\*; but much more so, as one may imagine, for that of the Battle. The Action of *Philip*, in cutting down the Tree, was accounted a great Impiety, as it had been so long consecrated to the most solemn Treaties and Assemblies, and had covered with its Branches so many crowned Heads, Popes, Cardinals, and even Saints; for *Bernard*, Abbot of *Citeaux*, two Archbishops of *Canterbury*, *Anselm*, and *Thomas Becket* were canonized as such; besides Generals of Armies, and other considerable Persons. I said Popes, because *Innocent the Second* came thither in 1127, in order to make a Peace, like that which *Calixtus the Second* had made before, which was broken by the Attempt of *Thibaud*, upon the Castle of *Gisors*; a Peace, in which that Pope was very much interested. I shall mention some Circumstances of it. *Henry* no sooner heard of the Attempt of *Thibaud*, which was defeated by the Care of *Robert Chandos*, but he left *Ponteau de Mer*, where he then was, and came to *Gisors*, where he confiscated all his Fiefs and Estates, banished all the *French* out of the City, complained loudly of *Lewis*, and threatened Revenge. *Lewis* protested, that he had given no Orders for what was done; but added, that *Henry*, by breaking so often his Promise to demolish that Castle, had given Occasion to this Attempt. *Odericus Vitalis* says, upon this, that *Lewis*, seeing his Ambassadors could obtain no Satisfaction, but only Promises without Effect, proposed to him to decide the Affair by single Combat between themselves†. On the other Hand, *Honorius the Second*, Successor of *Calixtus*, seeing, that *Henry* did observe what he had promised to the deceased Pope, and that *William Corbet*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, though otherwise very zealous in the Cause of the Church, was too indulgent in the Case of Priests Marriages, many of whom still kept their Wives, and others married, sent Cardinal *John de Creme* as his Legate to *England*, who was as violent as the Archbishop had been moderate. He thundered out Anathemas, and exclaimed against that Practice, as condemned by a Council; saying, that it

was

\* *Gisortium fugit Hehricus, qui pace negata*

*Se vinci, cædique suum dolet anxius Ulmum.*

† *Ludovicus offert Anglo aut Castrum Gisortii subvertere, aut de fractæ fidei perfidia personaliter contra se defendere. V. pag. 119.*

was an horrid Sin for a Priest to rise from the Embraces of a Woman, and to take into his Hands and Mouth the Body of Jesus Christ. One *Huntington*, Son of a Priest, and a married Priest himself, asserted, that Fornication, Actæonism, and *In-Ganymedising*\*, were the Consequences of involuntary Celibacy; and, doubting of that Prelate's Continnence, he caused him to be watched, so that he was found in Bed with another Man's Wife, after having said Mass the Day before, and he made no Scruple to say it the Day after: However, the Cardinal observing, that his spiritual Thunderbolts did not prove effectual, had recourse to the secular Arm, and demanded the Assistance of *Henry*, in the Name of *Honorius*. That Monarch desired to be vested with a full Authority for it by that Pope; but, instead of using it according to the Intention of his Holiness, he sold to the Clergy the Permission of marrying or keeping their Wives for a certain Sum of Money, which he said he had Occasion for, to carry on the War with *France*. The Pope was very uneasy at this, and threatened him highly; but, he dying in 1127, there followed an Anti-popedom. *Lewis* acknowledged *Innocent the Second*, and *Henry*, to make himself courted, shewed some Inclination towards *Anacletus*. Upon this, *Innocent* waited on *Henry* at *Gisors*, with a double Design, to draw him over to his Side, and to reconcile the two Kings, and succeeded therein. The Conference was held under the Elm, with as much Solemnity, as that wherein *Calixtus* assisted. There was another Tree planted where that stood, as I have been informed. This Tree is pretty large; I could not embrace it with a good Span. I observed that *Richard* made his Treaty with *Philip Augustus*, between *Gisors* and *Trie*, after the Danger, which the latter was in of being drowned at the Bridge; perhaps *Richard* might have caused another Tree to be planted there, if his Father had not done it; but that which I saw, did not appear so old. 'Tis probable, that they plant another, as one dies. All the Writers are not agreed about the Time, nor Place of this Treaty, nor of the Victory itself. *Odericus Vitalis* says, that it was in 1194. *Diceto*, and the publick Acts of *London* confirm that Victory of *Richard*, and say, that the Treaty was made in 1195. *Richard* died in 1199, being wounded by an Arrow, which was shot at him by one *Bertrand*, at the Siege of *Chaluz* Castle in *Limosin*. About half a Quarter of a League from hence near *Trie*, stands the Hospice of *S. Marguerite*, an indifferent Building, which seems to have been Part of a larger one, which is supposed to have been at first a House of the *Templars*. There is a little Church, served, I think, by a Couple of *Franciscans*; but I have digressed insensibly from *Gisors*, to which I now return. In entering on this Side, we go through the Suburb of *Paris*, called also the

\* There were never any Canons made in *England* against *Poderasty*, before the Clergy were obliged to Celibacy, and till *Anselm* had called the national Synod at *London* in 1102, whereof this Crime was the 20th Article.

the Suburb of *Cappe-ville-Gate*; and then pass through *Paris-Gate*, upon which stands the Image of the Virgin *Mary*. I believe there are two Images, one without, and the other within; but I remember, that I read on the latter, in the old Manner of Writing, *Ung Dieu, ung Roi, ungne Loy*. Then, leaving on the left Hand the Priory of S. *Owen* and the *Carmelite* Nuns, we meet with *Cappe-ville-Gate*, where there is a Bridge upon the *Epta*. This Gate is about 100 Paces above the Place, where the gilded Gate stood. It is often called the *Clock-Gate*, on account of a Tower, in which is the publick Clock. We pass by that Gate into the Market-Street, which is very broad, strait, and well paved, and extends itself as far as *Neaufle-Gate*, which terminates the Borough on that Side. The Castle, which lies on the right Hand, as we go up, ends here on that Side. Upon this Gate, there is an Image of the Virgin *Mary* with the Inscription cited at the bottom\*. And on the other Side towards *Neaufle* are the Arms of the City, which are Gules, with a Cross engrailed with Gold. These Arms are cut in *Relievo*. *Henry the Second*, King of *England*, added to them the Escutcheon with three Flower-de-Luces. I entered by this Gate in 1728, taking my Course directly for *Gisors* from *Roule*, where I left the *Mazettes*, and went to cross the *Seine* a little higher up, over against the *Little Andeli*, where the *Gambon*, after having washed the *Great Andeli*, about a Quarter of a League further, falls into this River. There is in the *Little Andeli* a Parish-Church, rather large than beautiful, with two Convents, one of Friars, and the other of Nuns, in which there is nothing considerable. There are no Remains of the famous Castle *Gaillard*, but a Tower with some Part of the double Wall, which surrounded it, and some Casements. It is now inhabited only by Rabbits, who burrow in the Ground. The *Great Andeli* is situated in a pleasant Valley, which is rendered so by the Variety of Gardens, Cornfields, and Meadows in it. There is a noble collegiate Church, erected by S. *Clotilde*, and about 30 or 40 Paces from it a neat Chappel, built long since her Death by the Inhabitants, who dedicated it to her. At the further end of the Town there is a Fountain, to which great Virtues are ascribed; as the curing or preserving from the Itch, and other contagious Distempers. A Tradition, generally received, tells us, that one of the first Miracles of this Saint, was changing the Water of that Fountain into Wine, out of Kindness to the Workmen, who built the collegiate Church. There is an annual Procession about it on the Eve of her Festival, in Memory of the Miracle. The Dean, at the Head of the Chapter, throws into it a certain Quantity of Wine; and then the Pilgrims and other Persons of both Sexes, strip themselves in separate Rooms, and wash in it, the Men in Drawers, and the Women in

\* Sum umbra Alarum tuarum protege nos,  
Ne infalutata hospite Mariâ transferis.

in their Shifts. There are also in this Town two Convents of Nuns, one of the *Benedictine*, and the other of the *Ursuline* Order, which are well built. This is all that is worth observing in *Great Andeli*, except the Woollen Manufacture-House, which is a pretty good Building. I lay there, and next Morning hired Horses to *Gisors*, which is but six Leagues distant. I passed by *Danyn*, the Castle of which was purchased by the Count of *Belle-Isle*, of the House of *Luxemburgh*, to whom it belonged in my Time. He repaired and beautified it very considerably. I passed then by *Neaufle*; there is nothing left of its old Castle, but a high round Tower. According to a Manuscript belonging to the Abbey of *S. Victor* in *Paris* \*, *Philip Augustus* besieged the Castle of *Gisors* during the Captivity of *Richard the First*, King of *England*; and *Gilbert Vasquiel*, who was then Governour of it, and of that of *Neaufle*, delivered up both to him, and went over to his Service. *William Breton*, in his *Philippides* † represents *Richard* complaining, that whilst he was detained Prisoner, *Philip* took and destroyed his Castles. *William Newbridge*, in his History of *Richard* says ‡, that the Proceeding of *Philip* appeared scandalous and base to all the World; to declare War against a Man, who was bound, and incapable of defending himself; and that he invaded *Normandy*, and seized upon the noble Castle of *Gisors* by the Treachery of Governour *Gilbert*. Two Queens of *France*, *Blanche* of *Castile*, the Mother of *S. Lewis*, and *Blanche* of *Evreux*, had *Gisors* with *Neaufle*, for their Dowry. It is supposed that *William the Second* built the Castle of *Neaufle*, about the same Time as that of *Gisors*. However, it is certain, that *Neaufle* has been ever since his Reign the Liberty of the latter.

As we come near to *Gisors*, we see on the left Hand upon an Hill somewhat higher than that, upon which the Castle is built, a Monastery of the *Fathers of the Redemption of Captives*. They are called in *France* *Mathurins*. The Church is dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*, under the Name of *Notre-Dame de Lusse*. The Monastery is called by this Name. A regular Plantation of Wild-Trees, and a Garden and Orchard of Fruit-Trees, makes this Place equally solitary and pleasant. This Monastery was repairing and enlarging in the Year 1728. The Father superiour, under whose Direction this was done, is a Virtuoso of good Skill not only in Architecture, but also in other Arts and Sciences. He contributed to it out of his own Purse; and he has augmented the Library himself. It is small, but contains a good Choise of Books with

Y y

some

\* *Rex Francia* obsedit *Gisortium*; *Gilbertus* vero de *Vasquiel*, qui habebat in Custodia Castellum de *Gisortio* & de *Neaufle*, tradidit utrumque illique adhæsit.

† Dum moror hic captus, mea Rex Castra *Philippus*,

Dirigit ad libitum *Gisorti* Mœnia fregit.

‡ *Philippus* Bellum victo indicens, hostile propositum declaravit; nam indecorum omnibus visum est homini sui penitus impotenti Bellum indicare. Ille quiescere nescius *Normanniam* invasit, moxque *Gisortium* nobile Castellum proditione *Gilberti* Gubernatoris cepit.

some Manuscripts. The Library-Keeper is a very ingenious and polite young Gentleman; and the other Fathers are of the same Character.

I came in 1729 to *Gisors*, in Company with an *English* Gentleman, who wanted to see a Part of *France*. We took our Course by *Calais*, *Boulogne*, *Montreuil*, *Abbeville*, *Poix*, and *Beauvais*. I had taken almost the same Course in my Return to *England*, except that I set out from *Paris*, and passed through *Beaumont* upon the *Oyse*, (a little Town in *Beauvoisis*, which has nothing considerable in it;) and so through *Compiègne*; which I returned through again in 1729, with my *English* Gentleman, and of which I shall speak something hereafter. I went then through *Crecy*, *S. Riquier*, *S. Josse*, *Estaples*, and embarked at *Calais* for *Deal*; from whence I passed through *Sandwich*, *Canterbury*, and *Rocheſter*, and so directly to *London*, the same Way that I came to the last Place in 1725. I shall speak of the three former, as also of *Dover*, in my next Chapter. I shall not enlarge upon what I have said in my first Volume of *Calais*, but only observe, that since I passed through it in 1698, they have added to their Fortifications three Bastions with Orillons and Epaulments. I saw on the Bulwark the great Calverin of *Nancy*, which was brought from *Dunkirk*, after the Demolition of it by the Treaty of *Utrecht*. I found it an Inch and an half longer than that of *Dover-Castle*. I saw the second Time, between *Calais* and *Boulogne*, the Pyramid erected to the Memory of the unfortunate *English* Gentlemen, murdered there in the Year 1723. in a very barbarous Manner, by High-Way-Men. This Case is as unusual in *England*, as it is common in *France*, and several other Countries; for the *English* High-Way-Men are satisfied with bidding Travellers deliver their Purse, and threaten them perhaps, though very often they use them civilly, without attempting their Lives. If it ever happens that they kill any Person, it is upon their Defence, when they are first fired at. This Pyramid is covered on the outside with square flat Stones, but very ordinary ones. The Inscription, which was printed in *England*, with an Account of their Murder, is very much defaced; and some malicious Hand has taken away the Iron-Cross, which was upon the Top of it, and at the same Time pulled down two of the Stones.

*Boulogne* is seven Leagues beyond *Calais*. It is divided into the upper and lower Town, but inclosed with Walls, which are much neglected. The former is situated upon an Eminence; the latter extends itself from the Declivity thereof to the Mouth of the little River *Liane*, where the Harbour is. This Harbour is very narrow, and so shallow, that none but very small Vessels can enter. There are some Remains of Brick Walls about it, which are said to be those of a Castle built by the *Romans*. The Bricks however are like those, which I have seen in some old Walls of *Rome*. But what is most certain is, that the *English*, when they were Masters of this Country, raised there some



some Fortifications, in which perhaps they made use of the antient Materials. This double Town has no remarkable Beauties in it; nor indeed have any of its Churches, except the Cathedral, which is very elegant; and the Church of the Fathers of the Oratory, and that of the *Ursuline* Nuns, which are in the upper Town; and that of the Fathers of *S. Lazarus* with their Seminary in the lower Town. This is all which this Place affords worth seeing, except the General Hospital and the Town-House.

*Etaples*, three Leagues and a half from *Boulogne*, is a poor Borough upon the River *Conche*. It is inhabited for the most part by Fishermen. The greatest Trade of it consists in Fish. They take a great Quantity of Mackerels on the Coast, which they carry to *Paris*. Fishing for Soles was prohibited here, as well as at *Berche*, for seven Years.

*S. Josse* is a very antient Abbey of *Benedictines*, agreeably situated upon the top of a high Hill, from whence one may see *Montreuil*, which is above two Leagues distant from it. The Church belonging to the Monastery is large, and was formerly much bigger; for they have cut off, and walled in, Part of it for a Barn. There is nothing in the Structure, nor in the Ornaments of this Church, that deserves any Attention: But the Vestry and Monastery, which were then almost wholly built a-new, with the Refectory and Kitchen, are fine Buildings. The Garden is very neat; and adapted both for Pleasure and Use. The Parish-Church, which is not far off, is very indifferent. At a small Distance from the Monastery Eastward there is a Spring, which rose out, they say, from the Earth, at the Order or Prayer of *S. Josse*, to which great Virtues are ascribed; and this is reckoned amongst his first Miracles.

*Montreuil sur Mer*, (on the Sea) as they call it, though above three Leagues from the Sea, is situated also on a Hill, the Foot of which is watered by the *Conche*; and the Tide brings up hither pretty large Boats, loaded with Goods. It is divided into the higher and lower Towns, like *Boulogne*, and only separated by a single Wall. Among eight or nine Churches, which there are in this double Town, scarce three are worth the seeing. The two Abbeys of *Benedictine* Monks and Nuns are of that Number. The former, dedicated to *S. Salve*, must be very antient, because they assure us it was built a long Time before that Saint was born. The latter was repairing very magnificently, when we passed that Way. *Montreuil* was accounted formerly a very strong Place; but the Fortifications have been neglected ever since *Calais* was taken from the *English*, in the Reign of Queen *Mary the First*. *Crespy*, or *Crecy*, (as it is generally written) is a little Borough, ill-built, upon the River *Anhie*, about three Leagues and a Quarter from *Abbeville*, with a Parish-Church dedicated to *S. Martin*, which is likewise very indifferent. It is very famous in the History of *England* for the Battle

Battle of that Name, which was fought on the 26th of *August*, in 1346, between *Philip de Valois*, King of *France*, and *Edward the Third*, King of *England*. The former lost here in this Battle, according to the *English* Writers, 36000 Men; but, according to the *French* Account, there remained in the fatal Field of Battle, as they call it, 30000 Foot, and 12000 Horse. Both Accounts agree in this, that, among the most illustrious that were killed, there were, the King of *Bohemia*, the Earl *Charles* of *Alençon*, King *Philip's* own Brother, and the Earl of *Blois* his Nephew, the Earl of *Rasul*, the Duke of *Lorrain*, and the Earls of *Flanders* and of *Harcourt*; besides a great Number of *French* and foreign Nobility. This Battle was fought in the great Plain of *Bulcan*. This Plain and the Forest of *Crecy* render the Country about this Borough very pleasant. They take here a great Number of Woodcocks, with several other Sorts of Game, which they carry to Market at *Paris*.

*S. Riquier* was formerly called *Centula* from 100 Towers, which, it is pretended, the Walls of it were flanked with, and which seems to be confirmed from the Verse cited below\*. However, there are at present 15 remaining, including that high Tower which stands in the Town. The present Name of it is from the Abbey of *S. Riquier* of the *Benedictine* Order. This Abbey was founded, as some will have it, in the Year 630; as others, in 700. It is a large splendid Building, repaired after the modern Manner, and well preserved. The Church belonging to it is very beautiful, the Materials are rich, it is paved with Marble, and the Ornaments within side are very costly. This is all that is considerable at *S. Riquier*.

*Abbeville*, the Capital of *Ponthieu*, is situated upon the *Somme*. It is a large City, well peopled, with 13 Parish-Churches, 2 Abbeys of *Bernardine* Monks, a Priory of *Benedictines*, and a great many other Convents of both Sexes. These Abbeys, the Collegiate Church of *S. Vulfran*, the Parish-Churches of *S. Austerberg*, *S. George*, and *S. Giles*, with the Woollen Manufacture of *Van Robets*, are the most considerable Things to be seen in this City.

*Poix* is at present a poor ill-built Town, with three Churches. There are two too many for the Number of Inhabitants. That of *S. Dennis* is the only one that is worth seeing. It is very indifferently built in the *Gothick* Manner. The Castle, to which this Church joins, was ready to fall; but the Dutchess Dowager of *Richelieu*, having purchased it, was rebuilding it magnificently after the modern Way, when I passed by it in 1728, and had scarce finished it when she died.

*Beauvais*, on the River *Terain*, is a large City, and was formerly very strong; but the Walls of it have been neglected and fallen to Ruin. It has held several Sieges, and this not so much by the Strength of the Ramparts, as the Bravery of its Inhabitants. The most remarkable

was

\* Turribus a centum *Centula* nomen habet.

was in the Year 1472, by the Duke of *Burgundy*, wherein he lost above 50000 Men. The Women distinguished themselves so then, that in an annual Procession, which is made to this Day in Memory of it, they are allowed the Precedency of the Men. The Houses are generally no better built than those at *Roan*, neither so high; but the Streets are wider. The Churches are fine. The Cathedral would be a Master-Piece of *Gothick* Architecture, if it were finished. The Choir, which is compleated, is accounted so. The Seminary of *S. Lazarus*, with the Church belonging to it, built after the modern Manner, upon a steep Hill beyond the Walls, is worth seeing. The Country about *Beauvais* is equally pleasant and fruitful. It is six Leagues from hence to *Gisors*. *M. Darmenouville* received us in the most obliging Manner in the World, and entertained us splendidly for the 15 Days which we staid there. I staid with him much longer in 1728, though not so long as he would have had me. He was for detaining us longer; but my *English* Gentleman was impatient to see *Paris*. We took Coach at the *Golden Lyon*, which is the last House of the Suburb of *Cappeville*, as I had done the Year before. We passed through *Trie*, then by the Abbey of *Gomer-Fontaine*, *Chaumont*, *Pontoise*, and *S. Dennis*. I went in 1725 from *Gisors* to *Paris*, by *Allaincourt* and *Magny* to *Pontoise*; and then by the same Road.

*Allaincourt* is above two Leagues from *Gisors*. It is a large Castle, built after the antique Manner, which I have named already, speaking of *Parnes*, with the Title of Marquisate. It was one of the finest and largest of its Time; but is now one of the most neglected from the Absence of its Masters. I saw it formerly all covered with Slates, but a violent Hail reduced them almost entirely to Dust; and it was tiled afterwards. There is scarce a third Part of the Rooms habitable now; nothing has been better preserved in it than the Chappel, which is large and fine. *M. le Marié*, who was then Keeper of that Castle, and had been one of my School-Fellows, would have had me to stay with him there for some Time; but I pleaded the same Excuse as I had done to *M. Darmenouville*, and made him the like Promise. But he was dead when I went again to *France* in 1728. I took only a Dinner with him, and went to take Post-Horses at *Magny*, a good half League further. *Magny* is generally supposed to have been the *Petromentalium* of the Antients. It lies 14 Leagues from *Roan*, and as many from *Paris*. It is a pretty little Town, with a Parish-Church dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*, which is very ordinary, a *Hotel-Dieu*, and three Convents, one of *Franciscans*, and two of *Benedictine* and *Ursuline* Nuns. The Convent of *Franciscans* is the finest, and built, as well as the Church, after the modern Manner. I changed Horses at *Bordbaut-de Vigny*, three Leagues further, and went to lie at *Pontoise*, about four Leagues beyond it.

Z z z

*Pontoise*

*Pontoise* is a large and fine Town, with four Parishes, and several Convents of both Sexes, the Churches of which are well built; it takes its Name from a Bridge upon the River *Oise*. The Jurisdiction of the Diocese of *Raon* extends, it is said, to the Middle of the Bridge, where there is a Cross fixed. I observed, at least, when I passed that Way in 1728, that it was an Holy-Day on one Side of the Bridge, and not on the other. Among the publick Buildings, the *Vicarial* Palace, and the *Hôtel-Dieu* are the finest; the latter had been lately converted into a Priory, and a natural Daughter of King *James the Second* of *England*, was made Prioress of it. It is very rich, and all the poor sick Persons, without any Distinction of Provinces are received here, and served by Nuns of *S. Austin's* Order: It is a long Building, that extends from East to West below the Bridge, along the Northern Bank of the River. A little lower is the Colledge of the *Jesuits*, with a Church and Garden, that extends almost to the same Bank of the River, and is terminated with a fine Terrass. About 600 Paces lower without the Town, is the Abbey of *S. Martin*, of the *Benedictine* Order; it is a Dependence upon that of *S. Dennis*. *Maubuisson*, a Royal Abbey of *Cister-tian* Nuns, stands about 800 Paces beyond the Bridge, in the Road to *Paris* on the left Hand, and is well worth seeing. The Church is much finer than that of *S. Martin*; it has generally had Princesses for its Abbeesses.

*Trie* is a good Village, about half a League distant from *Gisors*, with a Castle built after the antique Manner; it is not so large as that of *Abbeincourt*, but less neglected: There is a noble Gallery in it.

*Gomer-Fontaine* is a fine Abbey of *Cister-tian* Nuns.

*Chaumont* is a pretty large Borough ill-built, with the Remains of an old Castle, upon an Hill, which was destroyed in the Wars between the Kings of *France* and *England*. There are two Parish-Churches well built; that of *S. Andrew* is the finest. There is also a Convent of Monks, and two of Nuns.

There is nothing remarkable between *Pontoise* and *S. Dennis*, after we pass *Maubuisson*, except the Corn-Fields and Vineyards on both Sides of the Highway. The Coach stops for Dinner at *Franconville*, a Village, or rather a Hamlet, with two Inns. In the Year 1728, I left the Coach at *S. Dennis*, to see the new Buildings of the Abbey, which I found very magnificent. I did the same in 1729, to let my *English* Gentleman see this rich Abbey, with the Church, the Treasure, and the Tombs of the Royal Family. For above six Weeks which we staid at *Paris* and the adjacent Parts, I showed him every thing considerable: I would have carried him to *Chantilly* and *Fountainbleau*, but his Curiosity was exhausted, and he would not go further than to *S. Germain*, and the Castle and Machine of *Marli*; which he admired very much, as also *Versailles*. I had been there the Year before to pay my  
Respects

Respects to King *Stanislaus*, who was come to visit the Queen his Daughter, and, hearing by Count *Bethune*, that I was at *Paris*, did me the Honour of desiring to see me. I found him the same, and as affable in the midst of a numerous and magnificent Court, as I had seen him in his *Incognito* of 1713, attended only by four or five Persons, when M. *Fabrice* and I went to meet him on the Road of *Bender*. He enquired very kindly of him, and charged me to assure him of the Continuance of his Esteem and Benevolence. He added very graciously, that when Count *Bethune* told him I was in *Paris*, he was reading that Chapter of my 2d Volume, in which I mention the King of *Sweden* and himself. I answered, I have not flattered your Majesty no more than that King. He replied, that he did not esteem me the less for it.

My *English* Gentleman, having taken his Resolution to return, and desiring to see some Part of *Flanders* and *Holland*, we hired a Post-Chaise for *Dunkirk*. The chief Places, which we passed through from *Paris* to the *Hague*, were *Compiègne*, *Aras*, *Bethune*, *Aire*, *S. Omer*, *Gravelines*, *Mardick*, and *Dunkirk*, where we left our Post-Chaise; *Nieuport*, *Bruges*, *Ghent*, *Brussels*, *Malines*, *Anvers*, and *Rotterdam*. I had, in the Year 1725, taken *Brussels*-Coach at *Paris*, for my Return to the *Hague*, going directly by *Senlis*, *Gournay*, *Pont S. Maxence*, *Roye*, *Nesle*, *Peronne*, *Cambray*, *Valenciennes*, *Mons*, and *Brussels*; from thence by Water to *Antwerp*, and so by Water again to *Rotterdam*; and soon arrived at the *Hague*.

Besides the Obligation I am under to finish this Account, that I may not miss the Opportunity of going a Voyage to *America*, within two Months with my Lord *Baltimore*, who has been pleased to promise the Favour of his Ship, there are so many Accounts of the Places above-mentioned, that I shall pass over some of them very cursorily. I may probably add to that of *America*, the Omissions or Mistakes of some Travellers about those Places, or others, which I intend to see in *Flanders* after my Return. I shall at present only enlarge upon *Dunkirk*, because I have been desired to do it by some of my *English* Subscribers, who have expressed so good an Opinion of my Impartiality, as to depend upon what I shall say about it.

*Compiègne* is a second *Fountainbleau* for its Forest, which is very fit for Hunting. *Lewis the Fifteenth*, who is regularly delighted with this innocent Diversion, divides it between this and the other Forest; and indeed he loves no other Diversions, but what are innocent. The Royal Castle, the Abbey of *S. Corneille*, the Convents of *Franciscans* and *Dominicans*, with the *Hôtel-Dieu*, and the Town-house, are the most considerable in *Compiègne*.

*Senlis* is a large and antient City; that Part of it which is called the City, is supposed to be a Work of the *Romans*. The Churches here are fine. The Abbey of our *Lady of Victory*, is said to have been built upon

upon a Vow of *Philip Augustus*, after the Victory at *Bovines*\*, who dedicated the Church to the Virgin *Mary* under that Name. The Elegance of it made some Criticks say, that *Philip* must have been under great Feat, when he made such a Vow.

*Cambray* is a fine City, and well fortified with a strong Cittadel. There are here several beautiful Churches. The Cathedral, the Collegiate Church of *S. Gerry*, that of the *Holy Cross*, and that of the *Jesuits* with their Colledge, deserve the greatest Attention. The Abbot of *S. Albin*, the late Regent's natural Son, succeeded Cardinal *Dubois* in this Archbishoprick.

The City of *Valenciennes*, is also very beautiful and well fortified; the most considerable Buildings are the Earl's Palace, the Hall, the Front of which is an excellent Piece of Architecture; the Abbey of *S. John* and its Church, with that of the *Jesuits* and their Colledge.

*Mons* is not so large, but agreeably situated upon a Hill, which gives Name to it. The most considerable Thing in it is the Church of *S. Vautrude*, with a Chapter of 30 Canonesses, who must all be of noble Extract, both by Father's and Mother's Side. It is the Emperour, who nominates to the Prebends, as Lord of the Country. They assist at divine Service in Ecclesiastical Habits; but upon other Occasions wear a Lay-Dress, and have their particular Houses. Among other excellent Pieces of Sculpture in this Church, nothing strikes the Eye more than the Figure of a dead Carcase eaten by Worms. It is as lively and perfect an Imitation of Nature, as that at *Gisors*.

*Aras* is a large and fine City, with a good Cittadel. The Cathedral, the Abbey of *S. Vauts*, of the *Benedictine* Order, the Colledge and Church of the *Jesuits*, with the Town-House, are its chief Ornaments.

*Bethune* has nothing considerable in it, but its Fortifications, and the Colledge-Church of the *Jesuits*.

*Aire* has suffered much by the War; it has several very fine Churches, particularly that of the *English* Nuns of *S. Clair's* Order. The chief Things to be seen in *S. Omer*, is the famous Abbey of *S. Berlin*, and the two Colledges of *Walloon* and *English Jesuits*, where they teach Humanity Studies; the latter is the most splendid and most frequented; they had then at least 200 Boarders.

*Gravelines* has nothing remarkable in it, but its Fortifications, a large Cistern adjoining to the Parish Church, as that of *Calais*, and the Monastery of *English* Nuns of *S. Clair*, which is the Head of this Order in *Flanders*. My *English* Gentleman visited here a Relation of his, who is the Superiour of the Nunnery. We saw, about a Quarter of a League further, the magnificent Colledge of *English Jesuits*, called *Vates*, which is a Dependence upon that of *S. Omer*; where they teach

\* It is a little Town upon the *Mense*, about four Leagues from *Namur*.

teach Philosophy and Divinity. A violent Hail had broken the Windows of it and those of the Church, which is a very fine one, and destroyed their Corn and Fruits.

*Bourbourg* is a little Town very ill built. We found the famous Canal of *Mardick* marked (4) in Plate V \* reduced to the Condition stipulated in the Treaty concluded at the *Hague* in 1717. And we found the same done in the Harbour of *Dunkirk*; its Cittadel, Castles, and Fortifications, were demolished according to the Treaty of *Utrecht*, in 1713. We saw none but very small Ships in the Harbour. The Inhabitants of that Town complained of nothing but the Sacrifice, which was made of it to Policy, which they said was the Ruin of their Trade. However they were not without Hopes, that the Waters running out through the Canals, which are left to prevent the Town from an Inundation, might some Time or other clean it enough, to admit all sorts of Merchant-Ships: But, added they, we shall be dead before that Time. As to the Town, it has been preserved in all its former Beauty within; the Houses are well built, the Streets broad, and well paved. The great Church is a noble *Gothick* Building, adorned with excellent Paintings. That of the *Jesuits*, with their Colledge built after the modern Manner, is prodigiously approved of. There are several Convents of both Sexes. That of the *English* Nuns of *S. Clair* is very neat. The *English Carthusians*, who had formerly a large and rich Monastery at *Sheen* near *Richmond*, have a pretty small one at *Nieuport*. It consists of 10 Fathers and 6 Brothers. This Town is stronger by Nature than by Art. The Parish-Church is reckoned the finest in all *Flanders*.

*Bruges*, is a large Town with above 50 Churches, including those of the Convents. Those of *S. Saviour*, of *Our Lady*, and *S. Donatus*, with the Town-House, are the most beautiful *Gothick* Buildings; and of the modern is that of the *Jesuits*, and of the *English Augustinian* Nuns, whose Superiour was my Lord *Powis's* Sister. The great Canal of *Bruges* to *Ostend* is so broad and deep, that it can bear the largest Men of War.

*Ghent* is esteemed the largest City in all *Flanders*, (and according to some even in all *Europe*. But it contains so many Gardens and void Places, that if they were cut off, and the Houses joined together, as in *Bruges*, it would scarce be so large. There are in this City, several

A a a a

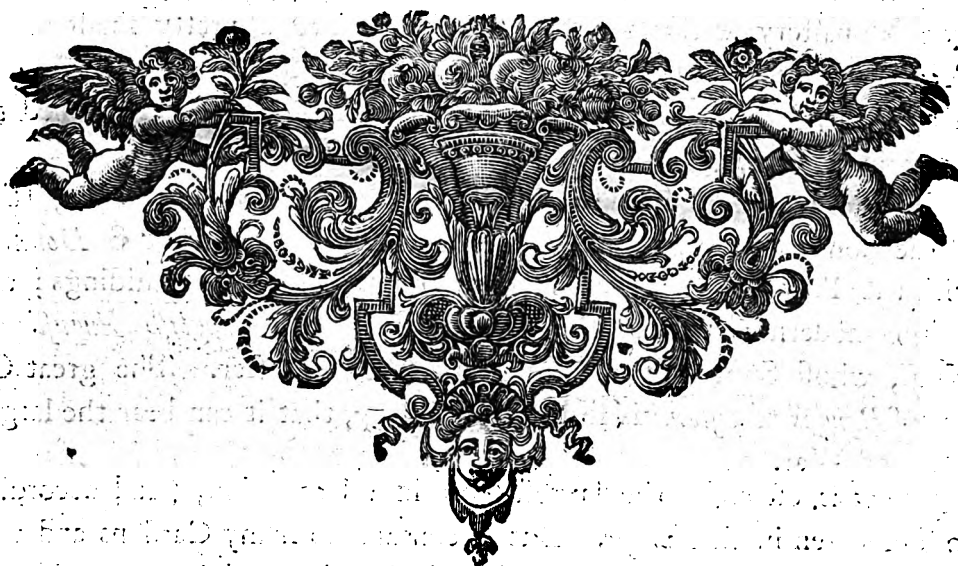
fine

\* I have found the *French* Plan of *Mardick* and *Dunkirk* with the adjacent Parts so exact, that I have given it here. 1. Eastward is the *Bank-Brack*. 1. Westward is the Point of it. 2. 3. The great Road for Ships; the other cyphers the Depth. a. b. *Strand*. c. The old Fort of *Mardick*. 4. The great Canal. 5. 5. The Banks of it before their Destruction. 6. The old Castle. 7. The *Hope* Castle. 8. The *Green* Castle. 9. A *Risbank*. 10. *Castle-Galland*. 11. *White* ditto. 12. *Graveline's* Road. 13. Old *Mardick*. 14. Little *Mardick*. 15. The *Great-Sluice*, the Passage of which was 44 Foot broad has been destroyed and the *Little-Sluice* reduced to 16 Feet in Breadth. 16. The *High Dunes*. d. Batteries. 17. The Cittadel. 18. The *Bafon*. 19. The Port. 20. The Fortifications of the Town. 21. *Bourbourg* Channel. 22. *Furnes* ditto. 23. *Borgues* ditto. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. Other Channels. 32. Fort *Lewis*.



fine Churches. The Cathedral, dedicated to *S. Bavon*, is a noble Building. I saw in it four beautiful Candlesticks above 10 Foot high, of Brass, adorned with Figures, and the Arms of *England* in excellent *Relievo*; which they say were formerly in that of *S. Peter's Westminster*, before the Dissolution of the *Abbey*

*Brussels*, is a large and fine City, whose chief Edifices are the Town-House; the King's Palace, that called the Court where the Arch-Dutchess resided, and lately burnt, was one of the most antient Palaces; *S. Gulude*, and that of the *Jesuits*, are the chiefest Churches. At *Antwerp*, those Fathers have three or four Churches joined to Colledges or Seminaries, the finest of which had been burnt a few Years before my first Journey thither, but was since rebuilt; and is now one of the most magnificent in their Possession. The Cathedral is the largest, highest and best *Gothick* Building, in all *Flanders*, but the Town-House and Cittadel deserve the greatest Admiration of any Thing at *Antwerp*, as the Cathedral, the Commandery of the *Teutonic* Knights, the Arsenal, and the Foundry for Cannon, do at *Malines*.



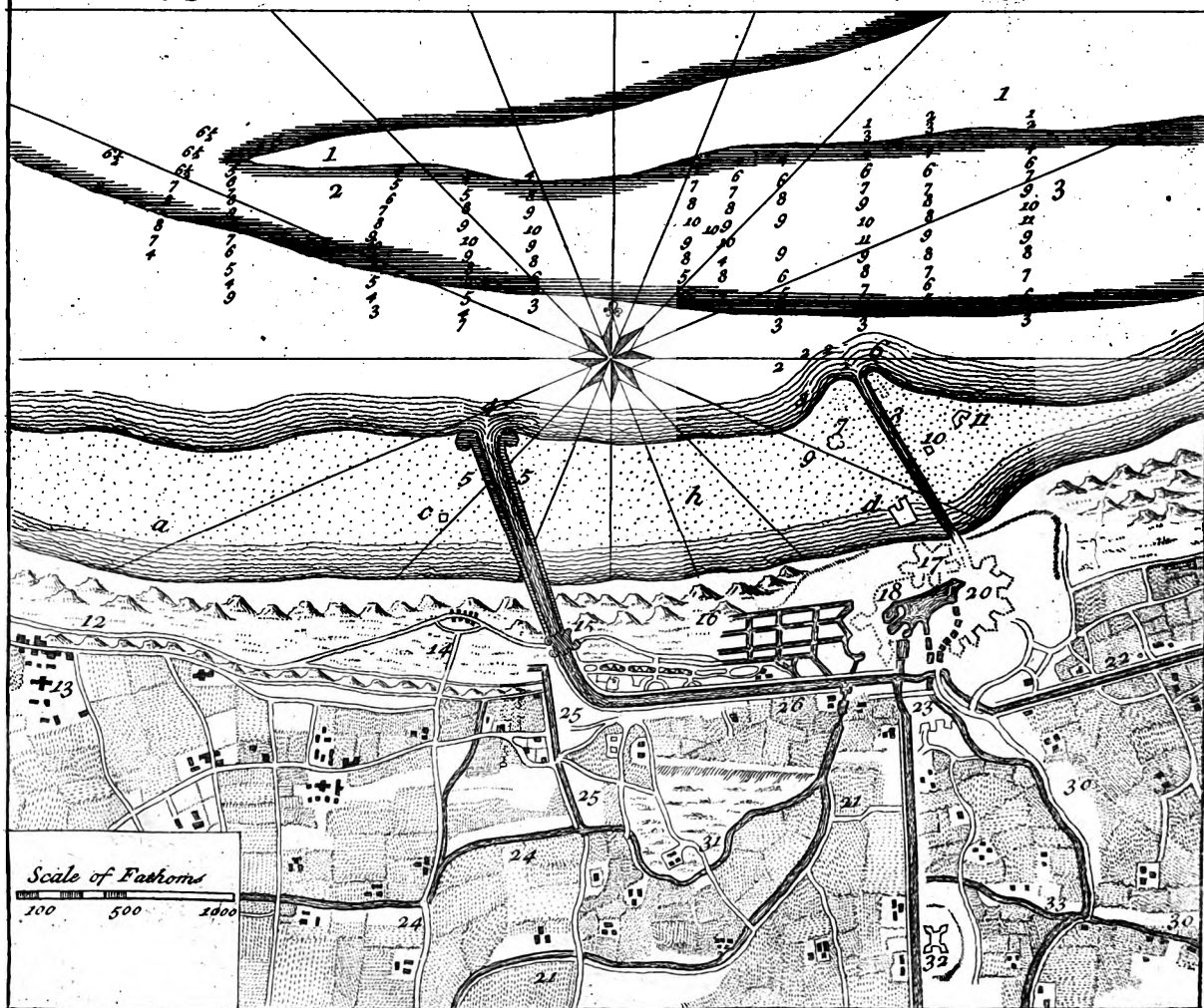
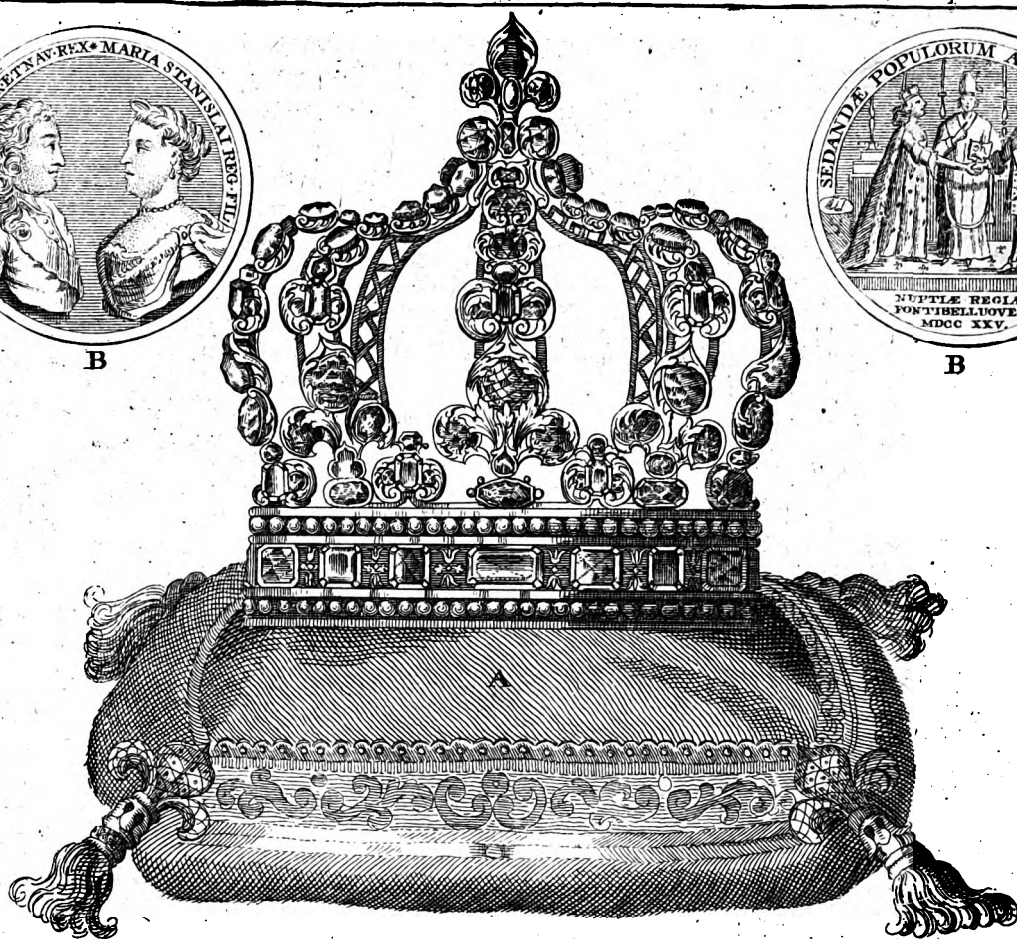
THE

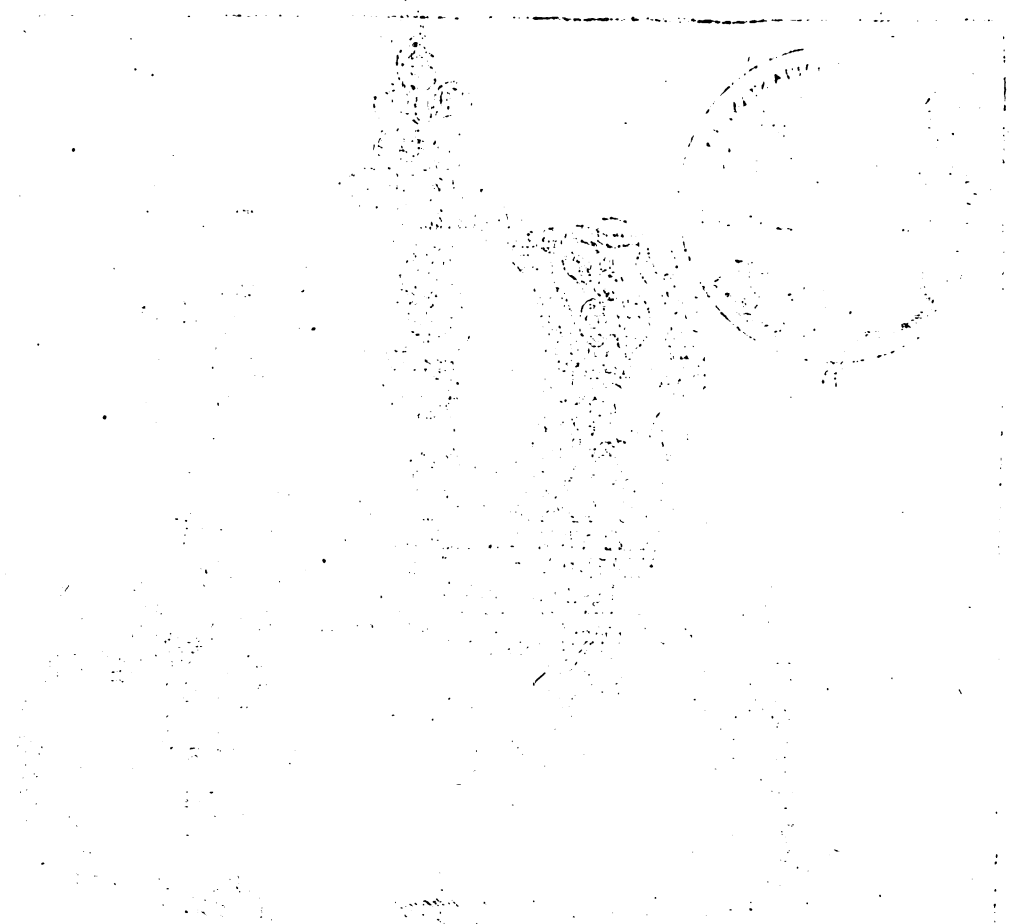


B

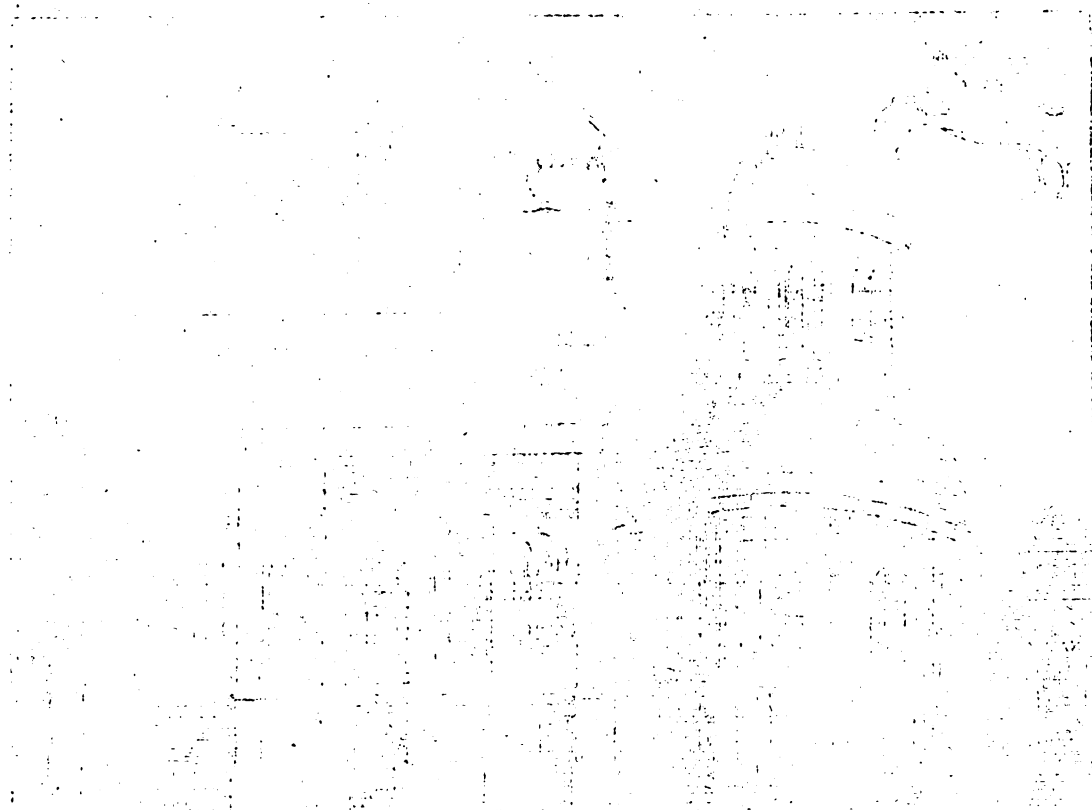


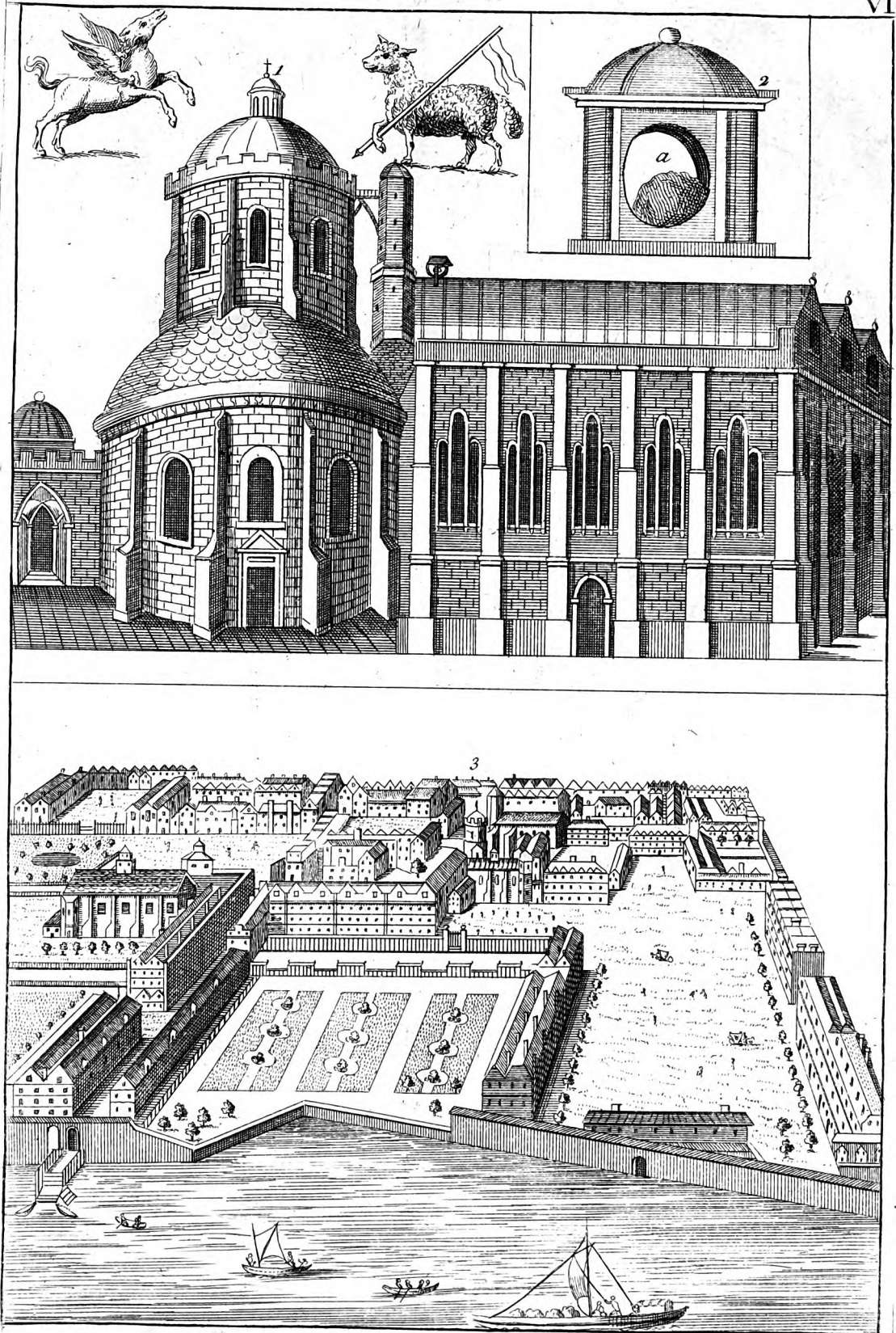
B





6







The TRAVELS of  
*A. de la MOTRAIE.*

C H A P. VI.

*Containing some superficial Remarks on the Death of George the First, King of Great Britain; on England; on the New-Building at London; on Cornwall, and Part of Kent; on Ireland, particularly Cork and Dublin, and the Parts adjacent.*



IN the Month of June, 1727, being at the *Hague*, and hearing that King George was to land at *Vratz*, a small Village, near the Rivers *Iffes* and *Leck*, and two Leagues from *Utrecht*, to visit his German Dominions, I repaired thither, to present his Majesty with my Travels in *French*, which I had dedicated to him in *English* three Years before. His Majesty, being tired of the Calm he was taken in, landed near *Schonhoven*, taking only the Chamberlain *Fabrice*, and two or three Persons more along with him, and arrived at *Vratz*, after eleven of the Clock at Night. The Baron *Sporken*, his Envoy from *Hanover* to the *States-General*, and Monsieur *Reynard*, his Agent at *Amsterdam*, being there at the same Time, we had the Honour to pay his Majesty our Respects, where we met with a most gracious Reception, and conferred half an Hour with him. His Majesty being told, that there was nothing for Supper but a Carp, and some hung, or smoaked Salmon, the King approved of it, ordered it to be dressed, and supped very heartily; but the next Morning complained of some Disorder in his Stomach, which he said, had hindered his Rest that Night. Monsieur *Fabrice* having expressed his Concern for the same, his Majesty told him, all was over, and that he found himself very well. About seven of the Clock in the Forenoon, he was very cheerful, when he took Coach, accompanied by Monsieur *Fabrice*, at which Time, we took the Opportunity of wishing him a good Journey. Having never seen *Viane*, which lies on the other



other Side of the River, almost opposite to *Vratz*, I took a Trip thither, and found it to be a well built, and populous City, with two Churches, for the Use of the *French* and *Dutch* Nations. The Minister of the latter being prosecuted for Sodomy, of which he was accused by some Persons executed for that Crime in *Holland*, absented for some Time, but having returned, in order to justify himself, which he was not able to do, remains still suspended from his Office. This Nation was always the least suspected of this unnatural Vice, and accuses the *French* of having introduced it amongst them; though it is not just, to charge a whole Nation with the Vices of some few.

I had seen two Lists of the Names of such as were impeached of that unnatural Practice, and had made their Escape from Justice, fixed on the justiciary Court-Gate at the *Hague*; at the Head of which List were two *Frenchmen*; one, the Author of the *Phillipiques*, who retired from thence a considerable Time before the Prosecutions began, and the other a *Refugee*. *Viane* is thought to have been the *Faunium Dianæ*, mentioned by *Ptolomy*, rebuilt and enlarged by *Severus*, Count of *Culembourgh*; it fell to the Family of the *Broderodes*, by *Waldgrave Broderode's* marrying Count *Henry* of *Culembourgh's* only Daughter. This Family, being extinct, it descended to that of *Donha*, as the nearest Heir; and lastly to that of *la Lippe*, by Count *Simon la Lippe's* marrying Count *Donha's* Sister, who died issueless. Their High Mightinesses bought it of them lately, and is now a Place of Sanctuary; whither Monsieur *Huguetan*, now known by the Name of Count of *Guldestin*, retired after his famous Bankruptcy, bought the Bailiwick thereof, ~~fold it again~~, and went to *Denmark*, where, to add Honour to his Riches, he purchased the County of *Guldestin*, the Order of the *Elephant*, and the Golden Key belonging to the King of *Denmark's* Chamberlain. There remains of the Castle but one Tower, and some Apartments out of Repair and neglected: The Neighbourhood of *Viane* is very pleasant and full of Fruit, especially Cherries. About a Quarter of a League South East of this Place are the Remains of the Palace, where the Confederates, against the Introduction of the Inquisition into the *Low-Countries*, held their first Conference; the Hall wherein they met is very beautiful, and in good Order. Amongst several *Latin* and *Spanish* Devices, most of which were effaced, I read the following *Liber-ralis Incunabula*, The Nursery of Liberty; *Antes Muerto que Mudado*, Sooner dead than Inconstant. There is also a fine Garden here; I went that Night to *Isselstein*, a small Town on the River *Issel*, a League and a Quar-

\* 'Tis a Regent abounding with ill Language, and the basest Investives against the Regent of *France*, *Philip*, Duke of *Oleans*; wherein several Persons of the Royal Family, and even crowned Heads, in Alliance with that Prince (and among them King *George the First* of *England*) are treated in the same Manner. There were several Manuscripts thereof given about in *Holland*, where the Author had taken Sanctuary, and where the Printing of it was prohibited.



a Quarter distant from *Viane*; its Fortifications are very much neglected, though it belongs to the Prince of *Orange*. The Church, which is pretty large, has nothing in it; the following Epitaph in *Dutch* is on an old Tomb, **Here lies interred the very noble Dame Alid, Daughter of — — Culemburgh, and Sovereign of Yffelftein, who died the 20th of July, 1480.**

On my Return to the *Hague* I was informed of the Empress of *Russia*'s Death, and on the next Day of the King of *England*'s to my great Surprise. M. *Fabrice*, who returned to the *Hague* on his Way to *England*, was overwhelmed with Grief for the Loss of so good a Master; and told us, that on the Day they had set out from *Vartz*, which was the 20th, his Majesty had travelled as far as *Delden*, where he lay that Night; that, the Landlady having presented him with a couple of *China* Oranges\*, he eat one of them, and gave the other to M. *Fabrice*; and that his Majesty had tasted no other Fruit: Having afterwards supped heartily, he rested well that Night, and set out from *Delden* about four of the Clock the next Morning. Between eight and nine his Majesty ordered his Coach to stop in order to make Water, and then, perceiving that one of his Hands hung motionless, said, *I cannot move this Hand*. M. *Fabrice* rubbed it with both his, but to no Effect; whereupon he called the Surgeon that followed on Horseback, who rubbed it also with some Spirits: In this Interval his Majesty's Mouth and Eyes began to move strangely, and his Tongue to swell, insomuch that he could not speak. The Surgeon, taking it for an Apoplectick Fit, opened his Majesty a Vein, whereby he recovered his Speech, so as to say, *Hasten to Osnaburgh*; but immediately fell into a Slumber in M. *Fabrice*'s Arms. As the violent Motion of the Coach could not keep the King awake, M. *Fabrice* asked the Surgeon, What he thought of him? who answered, That he despaired of his Life. M. *Fabrice* ordered him to take care of his Majesty, and rid post himself from the last Stage to *Osnaburgh*, to prepare the Duke of *Tork* for such unexpected News. The King, having arrived, was immediately carried to Bed, where he continued speechless, and in Agonies, till two of the Clock in the Morning, when he expired; though the Doctors of the Town had done all their Endeavours to give him Ease to no Purpose, and approved of the Measures taken by the Surgeon to save his Majesty's Life. M. *Fabrice* spent the Remainder of the Night in Writing, and dispatching Couriers to the Courts of *England* and *Hanover*; and receiving Orders at the *Hague*, from King *George the Second*, to bring back all the Papers, and other Things of Value, which his late Majesty had carried along with him, we embarked together, and arrived at *London* about the latter End of *July*.

I shall not enlarge on the new Buildings at *London* for the Reason mentioned before; a compleat Description thereof would make a Vo-

B b b b

lume

\* The King eat no Melons, as was reported.

lume as large as this. *London* and *Great Britain* deserve as ample an one, as *Paris* and *France* do; which I resolve to give on my Return from *America*. I have seen a great Part of *England* already, and resolve to see it all, together with *Scotland* and *Ireland*, and the Islands adjacent. I am perfectly well acquainted with the City of *London*, and dare say, it is the largest and most populous of any in *Europe*, or of the other two Parts of the World, which I have seen. By the Calculation, drawn up in 1713 for the Duke d'Aumont, then Ambassadour from *France* at this Court, it was indisputably proved, that there were here 150000 Souls more than at *Paris*, 120 Parish-Churches, besides the Cathedral, *Westminster-Abbey*, and the 50 new Churches; 27 Chapels of Ease, or belonging to Hospitals and private Persons; 100 Meeting-Houses, and upwards, for Natives and Foreigners; 20 Markets, and as many Squares, besides the *Royal Exchange*; an infinite Number of Courts and Alleys; 108000 Houses, 4 Colledges, 14 Inns of Court, 24 Free-Schools, and an infinite Number of private ones; 49 Corporation-Halls. It is almost incredible, how much this City has been enlarged and embellished since that Year. The *Londoners* and *Parisians* seemed to have been possessed with the same Spirit of building on Earth as well as in the Air; witness *Mississippi* and the *South-Sea Bubble*; which ruined several, while others built a great Number of magnificent Edifices. *Grosvenor-Square*, and *Cavendish-Square*, on the North-East Side of *London*, together with the Churches, Houses and Markets, newly built thereabouts, would form a handsome City by themselves. Most of the old Houses in *London* have been taken down, and rebuilt according to the modern Taste. In the Year 1726 an Equestrian Statue was erected for King *George the First* in *Grosvenor-Square*. The Earl of *Oxford*, who is a great Virtuoso had a fine Chappel built near *Cavendish-Square*, being Part of his Estate; in short, it is no easy Task to enumerate all the lofty Buildings, both sacred and prophane, that have been erected at *London*, since the Architecture, which flourished in *Augustus's* Reign, has been re-established here; and chiefly, since the Conflagration of 1666. It is manifest how much the *English* Genius has improved this Art, which plainly appears in the Architecture of the *Banqueting-House*, the Remains of *Whitehall*, the Palaces of *Montague*, *Lindsey*, *Powis*, *Burlington*, &c. and the other Edifice erected by the Lord *Burlington*, who is reputed the best Architect in *England*; the Gallery of *Somerset-House*, the *Royal Exchange*, and a vast Number of other sumptuous Buildings, as well in this City, as all over the Kingdom; chiefly at *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, where they still continue to build. These two Universities are the most famous in the World, as well for their Learning, as for the modern and *Gothick* Architecture. *Blenheim-House* at *Woodstock*, *Houghton* in *Norfolk*, *Cheving* in *Kent*, and *Wilton* in *Wiltshire* are Master-Pieces. The  
Palace

Palace of *Holy-Rood*, in *Edinburgh*, is one of the chiefest in all *Scotland*. I will mention those of *Ireland*, when I treat of that Kingdom. *S. Paul's* of *London* is the most exquisite Piece of that Architecture in *Europe*, except *S. Peter's* at *Rome*; and was so of the *Gothick*, before it was burnt in 1666. That of *S. Paul's Covent-Garden*, built by the famous *Inigo Jones*, one of the first Restorers of the *Roman* Architecture in *England*, is another exquisite Piece of Building, as is *S. Clements*, *S. Mary le Strand*, *S. Bridgets*, in *Fleet-Street*, *Bow-Church* in *Cheapside*, and *S. Michael's*, *Cornhill*, which has the finest Ring of Bells in *London*. *S. Botholph's*, near *Bishopsgate*, which has been lately rebuilt, together with all *Petty-France*, after the modern Gout. *S. John Baptist*, and *S. Mary, Spittle-Fields*, which was formerly a Priory dedicated to the Virgin *Mary* under that Name, are now two of the fifty new Churches, and were lately consecrated and built with carved Stone, which cost one hundred thousand Pounds Sterling. The chiefest of the *Gothick* Architecture is *Westminster-Abbey*, next *King Henry the Seventh's* Chappel; that of *Lincoln's Inn* is a very good Piece, as is the *Temple* Chappel, which is larger than the former, and surpasses it in every Thing except the Glass of its Windows; it is marked Number 1, in my sixth Print, it was dedicated to the Virgin by *Heracitus*, the Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, when he came to *England* to demand *Henry the Second's* Succour for the *Christians* of the *Holy Land*. The *Knights Templars*, were treated with more Humanity in *England* than in *France*, as I have observed in my first and fifth Chapter. The Tombs of ten Knights of this Order are seen in grey Marble, inclosed with Iron Ballustrades, in two small Squares, under the Cupola of this Chappel; nine of them are represented laying on their Backs with their Armour on; the tenth has no Figure at all on his Tomb; they are all kept in good Order, as are the Tombs of *John Selden*, *John King*, a famous Lawyer, and of that great Divine and Bishop of *Exeter*, *Ralph Brownrig*. This Chappel is rich in its Materials, and neat in its Workmanship, supported with fine Pillars of *Suffex* Marble, and paved with black and white *Devonshire* and *Cornwall* Marble; the Buildings are stately, the Walks are fine, and the Gardens agreeable and in good Order. The whole is divided into *Middle* and *Inner-Temple*, and is inhabited mostly by Lawyers, and Students at Law, and is a privileged Place.

A Friend of mine, who hath a Country-House at *Ashted* in *Surrey*, importuned me to take a Trip along with him to *Cornwall*, where he was Member of Parliament for some Borough, in the precedent Reign. We set out from *London* about the middle of *September*, and traversed *Southwark*, *Non-Such*, *Banstead-Downs*, Part of *Epsom*, and by my Lord *Baltimore's* Park.

*Non-Such* was formerly a Royal-Palace, very magnificent and agreeably situated, but now an ordinary Farm-House. King *Charles the Second*

cond having made the Dutchess of *Cleveland* a Present of it, she sold it to my Lord *Barkley*, who built a fine Seat, called *Durdans*, near *Epsom*, with the Materials thereof. It is now in the Possession of my Lord *Guilford*, a *Roman Catholick*, who has built a pretty Chappel there.

*Banstead* lies between *Non-Such* and *Epsom*, and is the next famous Place for Horse-Races in *England* after *New-Market*. The *English* Horses have the Beauty and Swiftnes of the *Spanish*, *Turkish* and *Circassian* Horses, and succeed them in every Thing else. I do not believe that any other Horses can run four *English* Miles in seven or eight Minutes, as they do. *Epsom* is a large Village, where the *London* Merchants have several fine Houses. It was very much frequented when I first came to *England*, on Account of its Mineral Waters, which are not much esteemed now, and should be called *Ashted* Waters, since the Fountain, which is on a rising Ground, is nearer that Village than *Epsom*; the Hall and Gallery, and all the other Apartments, are almost ruined; there Remains but one House inhabited by a Country-Man and his Wife, who carry the Water in Bottles to *Epsom* and other neighbouring Places. My Lord *Baltimore's* Seat, called *Woodcot*, is a large Mile from *Epsom*, near *Ashted*, and about sixteen or seventeen from *London*; his Park is very delightful and full of Deer; that Lord is also a great Virtuoso, which is as common amongst the Nobility in *England*, as it is rare in other Countries; he has very much beautified his Seat and Gardens, and has a great Inclination for Navigation, and the building of Ships, in both which Arts he has made a surprizing Progress. His Lordship has a Ship of his own, mounted with several Pieces of Cannon, in which he has made several Voyages to the *Mediterranean* and *Baltick*, as well as to the neighbouring Seas, for his Pleasure, and resolves to make one to *America*, in which the Province of *Maryland* belongs to him. *Ashted* is rendered a pleasant Village by the many fine Houses and Country-Seats about it; that of my Lady *Fielding's*, with her fine Garden and Park, which are nothing inferiour to the Lord *Baltimore's*, exceed all the rest. That, in which the late Bishop of *Durham* dwelt the Summer before, together with Mr. *Bedford's* and my Friend Mr. *Cooke's*, are very neat, and the Gardens very pleasant. Parks are as common in *England*, as they are rare in other Countries, where scarcely any but Sovereigns have them, with a few or no Deer; though even private Gentlemen in *England* have them, as well as the Nobility. The Country hereabouts is very beautiful, through the variety of Country-Seats, Hills, and Plains covered with Sheep, Fountains, Rivers, and other rich Gifts of Nature, gave Room to the following Remarks; first, That no Country has so many fine Bridges as *England*; second, That its Mountains are less barren and steep than any other; third, That its Waters are in more plenty, and more useful;

ful; fourth, Its fine Churches; fifth, Its fine Women; sixth, Its Plenty of fine Wool; to which I may add, the Excellency of its Universities and Schools founded by the *Romans* themselves after their Conquest of *Gaul* and *Britain*\*; the prodigious Number of Deer inclosed in Parks; the constant Verdure of the Fields; the Ports and Havens; the Horses; the Cocks; the Largeness and Goodness of their Beef; and the Gardens, which afford Plenty and Pleasure. *Surrey* chiefly abounds in Game, Walnut-Trees, Box, and towards the North yields plenty of Corn. There are upwards of twenty Country-Seats, besides those already mentioned, the chiefest of which are *Clermont*, belonging to the Duke of *Newcastle*; *Sudbrook*, to the Duke of *Argyle*; *Croydon-Palace*, to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*; and the Castle of *Farnham*, to the Bishop of *Winchester*.

We left *Asted* the 24th of *September* on our Journey to *Cornwall*, and rid through *Leatherhead*, two Miles from the former; we passed by Mr. *Moore*'s Country-Seat, and about a Mile from *Working* we crossed the River *Wey*, and near *Henley-Park* we passed over a Branch of the same River, soon after entered *Hampshire*, arrived at *Alresford*, and continued our Rout between *Stockbridge* and *Winchester*; we entered *Wiltshire* near *Buckot-Forest*, and rid over the Plains to *Salisbury-Town*, from whence we proceeded to *Dorchester*, *Bridport*, *Charmouth*, *Axminster*, *Honiton*, *Exeter* the Capital of *Devon*, *Okehampton*, *Lidford*, *Horse-Bride*, where we entered *Cornwall*, then to *Leschard*, and arrived at last at *Port-Elliott* and *S. Germans*.

*Leatherhead* is a small Market-Town, adorned with several good Houses and Gardens, belonging to Gentlemen; it is situated on the River *Mole*, which runs from thence four Miles under Ground, and breaks up near *Box-Hill*, (so called for the Plenty it bears of that Wood) where there is a fine Bridge. Mr. *Moore*'s Country-Seat is very agreeably situated on a rising Ground, with a delicious Garden. *Alresford* has been burnt, but tolerably well rebuilt. It is said, that there was a *Roman* Causeway from *London-Stone* to this Tower, and to *Winchester* and *Alton*; though there are hardly any Remains of it now. Near *Alresford* is a large Basin, or Pond, which is thought to be *Roman* Workmanship. The Duke of *Bolton* has here a fine Country-Seat. The Soil of *Hampshire* is very fit for Grain, and produces Plenty of Fruit, Hops, and Wood. The *New-Forest* has Plenty of fine Oak to build Ships with. This Shire abounds also in good Pasturage, Honey and Wool.

*Winchester* is a large Town, pleasantly situated in a Valley, surrounded with green Hills; the Cathedral is a good *Gothick* Edifice, with a

C c c c

beau-

\* *Tacitus*, in the 21st Chapter of *Agricola's* Life, relates, that he used to say, that the *Britons* exceeded the *Gauls* in Genius and Talents for liberal Arts, and wished that all the Youth of illustrious Birth would apply themselves to such Study, as would render them most capable of serving the Republick.

beautiful Altar; and the Choir has been very much embellished by Bishop *Fox*. Among the several Monuments in this Church, those of the six *Saxon* Kings are the most curious, whose Ashes are kept in six gilt Coffins. King *Charles the Second* had designed to build a stately Palace on the Ruins of the old Castle here, which, if it had been entirely compleated, according to its Foundation, would have been one of the finest in all *England*. King *George the First* made a Present to the Duke of *Bolton* of the fine Pillars of *Italian* Marble, which were to have supported its Stair-Case. On the North Side of the Town stands Part of a Monastery, inhabited by a Society of *Roman Catholics*, whose Chappel is very well adorned. They have a Seminary about three Miles from the Town for the Instruction of their Youth, and are very numerous in this Country. The Colledge and Free-School at *Winchester* are well endowed. King *Arthur's* Round Table, being one Piece of Wood, is supported by Marble-Pillars in a Hall here. There is an Hospital about a Mile from the Town, which was formerly a Monastery, founded by *William Rufus*; where it is a Custom to this Day to give a Piece of wheaten Bread and a Pint of Beer to all Travellers on asking for it; and where several aged and decayed Gentlemen are kept. It is reckoned, that no less than 600000 Sheep constantly feed on *Salisbury*-Plains and *Dorsetshire*-Downs, whose Wool is looked upon to be the very best.

*Salisbury* is a large City, remarkable for the Beauty of its Cathedral, and the Height of its Steeple; it has as many Doors as Months in the Year, ~~as many~~ Windows as Days, and as many Columns and Pillars as Hours; it is an exceeding good Piece of *Gothick* Building. The Bishop's Palace is very fine, as is the Town-House; there is here a good Woollen Manufactory. The Town is advantageously situated in a Valley on the River *Avon*, which furnishes it with Plenty of Water. There remain no Ruins of old *Sarum*, though situated but half a Mile from *Salisbury*, and where the Election for Members of Parliament is held to this Day. In this Neighbourhood there is nothing deserves more Attention than *Wilton-House*, my Lord *Pembroke's* Country-Seat, who is a first-rate Virtuoso, and an Ornament to the *English* Nobility; his Gardens and Parks are very delightful, and he has a great many Curiosities both antient and modern.

*Dorchester* is a large Town, well built; the neighbouring Country is as pleasant as it is fertile, particularly towards *Bridport*, where Flax and Hemp are very plenty. *Bridport* is a good Borough. *Charmouth* is a small abandoned Town, half a Quarter of a Mile from the Sea, and half a Mile from *Lime*, situated on the Sea-Coast, which is a Borough, and famous for the Duke of *Monmouth's* Landing there on the 11th of *June* in 1685, when he attempted to dispute the Crown with King *James the Second*, but, having lost the Battle of *Seigmore*, was  
taken

taken Prisoner, and beheaded at *London*. *Axminster*, on the Frontiers of *Devonshire*, is a small Town, as much neglected as *Charmouth*. *Honiton* is a good Borough, and famous for the Lace made there.

*Exeter* is a large City, well built, on the River *Ex*, and very populous; the Cathedral is a magnificent *Gothick* Edifice, with two Steeples, one whereof contains the largest Bell in *England* next to those of *Oxford* and *Lincoln*; and the other a good Ring of ten middling Bells. The Portico is adorned with fine Figures, and the Church with fine Tombs, and a curious Library, which is kept in *S. Mary's* Chappel. At *Szeal*, a good Village between *Exeter* and *Okehampton*, is a high Cross of one Piece of hard Stone on a round Pedestal of the same, three Steps high. *Okehampton* is a Borough, near whose Market-Place is another Pedestal of the same Stone without a Cross. This Borough is situated on the River *Oke*. The Mutton here is esteemed the best of the whole Country. *Lidford* was formerly a Town, whereof nothing remains but the Church, and one of the Castle Towers, with a few ruined Houses; near this Place the River *Lid* runs among the Rocks, and makes a hideous Noise: There is a good Stone-Bridge here, over which we crossed. *Horfe-Bridge* is a Hamlet, where there is a good Bridge over the River *Tamer*, Instead of going to *Port-Elliot* by *Casynodon* and *Molenick*, we went to *Leschard* to see Mr. *Elliot*, Recorder thereof. There were formerly some Tin-Mines in the Neighbourhood of *Casynodon*, but none now. *Casynodon* is a small Village, four Miles from *Horfe-Bridge*; the Church is pretty good, with an old forsaken Chappel, near which stands a Stone-Cross, adorned with three Crosslets in Relief. *Molenick* is Sir *Nicholas Travanion's* Country-Seat; he is Commissioner of the Docks, has a fine Slate-Quarry here, where he entertained us, together with Mr. *Elliot*, his Brother-in-Law, very splendidly.

*Leschard* is a tolerable large, well built, and populous Place, with a good Church dedicated to *S. Martin*, on the North Side of which there was formerly a Castle, and a Chappel, much frequented by Pilgrims; but all that is now decayed. There is a Fountain of very clear Water in the Town, where out of Devotion several People used to drink and wash themselves, and attributed several Miracles to that Ceremony before the Reformation. Now that I am on this Subject, I must say something concerning other different Prodigies of this Kind, which I saw when I went along with Mr. *Elliot* to the Election of a Mayor at *Leschard*; these Prodigies are in the Parishes of *S. Clair* and *S. Neot*. That of *S. Clair* is a small Pond, surrounded with large Stones, by whose Water (it is said) all Maladies were cured. That of *S. Neot*, which is called *Trithevie*, and marked Number 2. in the eighth Print, is six very large Stones, placed very much like those of *Salisbury-Plains*, of which I have made mention in my first Volume, called in *Latin*, *Cosa Gigantis*, and can contain five or six Men of the largest Size; it is covered



vered with one Stone, which is 15 Feet long, and nine or ten broad. Four or five Miles to the North-East of this there is still a more marvellous Piece of Nature's Prodigies, marked Number 5. in the said Print, and called *Ponder-Stone*, three Feet thick and two Ells long, so exactly ballanced on a Rock, that it may be moved with the little Finger. *Mean-Amber*, marked Number 6, is of the like Nature. Having travelled about two Miles to the North of *Trithevie*, I saw a large square Stone, fixed in the Earth, with the Inscription Number 1. in the seventh Print. There is another of the same Form, fixed in the Earth very near it, which seems to be Part of the other, and is called the *Other Half-Stone*. About three or four Miles further I saw another of the same Form, about 15 Feet high, without any Inscription; yet it had two small *Greek Crosses*, surrounded with a Circle carved in Relief on its Summits, one on the East, and the other on the West Side. Not far from this I saw the large Stones, commonly called *Hurlers*, marked Number 3. in the eighth Print. The *Roman Catholicks* here say, that some young Men, having on *S. Neot's Day* played at Ball without any Regard to the Festivity, were transformed into these Stones. The *Protestants* say, this Prodigy happened on a certain Sunday, which is observed with great Devotion in *England*, as I have observed elsewhere. I afterwards saw *Chefwings*, which is a high Hill about a Quarter of a Mile in Circumference, and covered with large Stones, as may be seen Number 4. At some Distance they look like a large Town, Nature having exceeded Art in forming and placing of them. About two Miles South-East of *Chefwings* I saw on a Hill, as large again as the latter, a Lake, called *Dofmary-Pool*, and though but a Fathom and a half deep at most, the Water never encreases or diminishes, having no other Fish but Eels. The Country from *Trithevie* to *Ponderstone*, and thereabouts, is very barren; the Grass is very thin, and only fit for small Cattle. I returned to *Leschard*, where I had left Mr. Cook, with whom I followed Mr. Elliot to *Port-Elliot*, where we were very kindly entertained. Mr. Cook's Affairs obliged him to return to *London* in three Weeks Time; but I staid with Mr. Elliot till the Beginning of *December*, when we both came to Town together. In the mean Time we visited Sir *John Corryton's* Country-Seat, likewise Mr. *Moyle's*, Sir *William Carrew's*, Mr. *Edgecomb's*, Mr. *Treby's* and Mr. *Glanville's*; but soon after Mr. Cook's Departure we went to *Dorchester*, to meet Madam Elliot, who was on her Return from *London*, and made *Plymouth*, *Plymton-Mary*, *Asburton* and *Chudleigh* our Road.

*Port Elliot* is on the River *Liner*, at the Bottom of a Bay, and was formerly called *Port-Prior*, because of the Priory founded there. The Form of the Bay is marked in the eighth Print. The Tide comes up as far as *Tideford*; the River is rendered very agreeable, by the fine Coun-  
try-

try-Seats built on its Banks all along to the Docks\*, which are ten or eleven Miles distant from the Town. Mr. *Elliot's* House, which is separated from the North-Gate of the Church, by a Parterre and a little Court, is well built, and embellished with the additional Apartments. That which was formerly the Refectory of the Religious, is turned into a fine Hall, where Mr. *Elliot* very frequently entertains his Friends and Tenants, as also the Mayor and chief Inhabitants of *S. Germans*; the Gardens produce fine Peaches, Apples, Pears, Grapes, &c. Mr. *Elliot's* Ancestors purchased this Priory after the Dissolution of the Churches by King *Henry the Eighth*; Mr. *Edward Elliot*, the elder Brother, possessed it last, but dying in 1722, the Estate fell to his only Son *James*, a Minor, now under the Tutelage of his Uncle, Mr. *Richard Elliot*. *S. Germans* is a Market-Town, which sends two Representatives to Parliament; it is built in the Form of an Amphitheatre, on a rising Ground; it was formerly a considerable Place, as may be seen by the many Ruins of Houses, Streets and Pavements, which are still there: It has been a Bishop's See, translated thither from *Bodmin*, and from thence to *Crediton*, which was then one of the best Towns in that Shire, though not much better than a Village now; lastly, it was translated to *Exeter*. This Borough takes its Name from *S. German*, Bishop of *Auxerre* in *Burgundy*, who came over from *France* to preach against the *Pelagian* Heresy, which began to spread then in *England*, and resided here. *Leofridus*, Bishop of *Exeter*, placed regular Canons at *Port-Prior*, in the Room of the Seculars that enjoyed that Living. The Episcopal Palace was pleasantly situated on a rising Ground at *Cuttenbeck*, about a Mile and a half from the Town, which was afterwards made a Farm-House, the Ruins thereof still remain. Mr. *Elliot* pays a yearly Acknowledgment in Money to the Bishop of *Exeter* for this Estate; his Brother was a great Benefactor to *S. Germans*, having built and endowed a publick School there, repaired the Sessions-House, chose a new Mayor every Year, and kept the Church in good Order, where he was buried, and has a fine *Italian* party-coloured Marble-Monument, erected for him by his Widow, which cost her upwards of a thousand Pounds Sterling; his Arms in large *Relievo* crown this Monument; about the middle thereof, is his Lady's Bust, supported by two Angels; a little lower, are two Urns of black Marble, evapourating Golden Flames; Mr. *Elliot* is represented in a *Roman* Dress, as large as the Life, leaning on a Cushion with one Hand on his Breast, and a Sabre

D d d d

in

\* The Docks, marked in the seventh Print, are on Point *Froward* near the River *Tamer*, which formerly separated the *Engliss* from the *Britons*, according to the following Verse, *Hinc Anglos, illinc cernit Tamara Britannos*. The Docks are hewn in the Side of a large high Rock, on the Banks of the River. The Houses built here for the Officers and Commissioners of the Admiralty, are very neat, as are also the Admiralty, the Arsenal, the Magazines and Rope-Yards. Before these Improvements, this Estate was not worth more than thirty Pounds a Year, though now one thousand Pounds.

in the other; on his left Side sits a Woman weeping, supporting her Head with her left Hand, and a Book open in her right: These Figures are exceedingly well carved: His Epitaph, which is in *Latin*, praises his Piety, and says, that he was a dutiful Son, a kind Brother, a faithful Friend, the tenderest of Husbands, and the best of Fathers, &c. that he was twice married, first to *Susan*, the Daughter of Sir *William Coryton*, of *Newton*, Baronet, by whom he had no Issue; his second Wife was *Elizabeth*, the Daughter of *James Craggs*, whom I have mentioned in the beginning of the fifth Chapter; by this Lady he had one Son and a Daughter, the Son succeeds him in his Estate, but the Daughter died the fifth of *February*, 1722; and that himself paid the same Tribute to Nature on the 28th of *September* following, in the thirty-ninth Year of his Age. This Monument is on the Epistle-Side of the Altar. There is still an old Episcopal Chair in the Church, and several others belonging to Canons. Sir *William Coryton's* Country-Seat, called *Newton*, is situated on a rising Ground near the River *Liner*, in the Parish of *S. Melyn*, and has been magnificently rebuilt according to the modern Taste. Mr. *Moyle's* Country-Seat is very beautiful, and is called *Bake*, situated in the Parish of *S. Germans*; there is in one of his Gardens an antient Fountain of very good Water, which was before the Reformation very much visited by the Devotees of them Times. *Catchfrench*, which is Mr. *Granville's* Country-Seat, is more antient. *E. Antony*, which is Sir *William Carrew's*, is a fine Edifice, built according to the modern Taste, with fine Gardens, and situated on the River *Liner*. *Mount Edgcomb* is an antient but neat House, with fine Gardens, and a Park well stocked with Deer, situated on a Hill, and has a lovely Prospect to the Docks, *Plymouth*, *Stone-House*, and to several other Seats on the Rivers *Liner* and *Tamer*, and discovers also seven Parish-Churches round the Country. The Churches of *Devonshire* and *Cornwall* are of carved Stone, well built, with high square Steeples, terminating in pyramidick Pinnacles, adorned with Figures in Relievo. Mr. *Treby's* Country-Seat, which is contiguous to *Plymton-Maurice*, is exceedingly well built in the modern Taste. *Plymouth* is a large populous Town with a Cittadel, two fine Churches, and two or three Meeting-Houses for Dissenters, and *French* Refugees; a Free-School, and an Hospital for Blue-Coat Boys: The Port which lies at the Mouth of the River *Plym*, is very good. *Plymton-Mary*, the Parish-Church of *Plymton-Maurice*, is a fine *Gothick* Building, at some Distance from the latter, and was formerly a Priory of Canons. *Asbburton* is a long and narrow Town, with several good Houses, an old ordinary Church dedicated to *S. Andrew*, and a large ruined Chapel to *S. Laurence*, Part of which has been converted into a School, wherein the Election for Members of Parliament is held, and all other publick Business transacted. Sir *John Shepheard* has near this Place a  
fine

fine Seat, pleasantly situated in a Valley, adorned with *Cornish* and *Devon* Marble. My *Lord Clifford*, who is a *Roman Catholick*, and very much beloved in this Country, has a fine Seat, about ten Miles distant. *Chudleigh* is another small Town, with a good Bridge over the River *Tinga*. Mr. *Truebody*, Rector of *S. Germans*, favoured my Curiosity in a liberal Manner, and went with me to his Brother's Mine at *Boscondle* in the Parish of *S. Austel*. On our Journey we passed through *Elstow* and *Welftow*, where I could see nothing remarkable, and by *Baconick*, an ancient Country-Seat; with a Park belonging to the Lord *Mohun*, next to *Fowey*, a considerable large Town, whose Church though antient is very fine, and its Port formerly famous. About a Mile further, and near the high Road which leads to *Lestwithiel*, stands a Stone much like to that near the *Hurlers*, but not so square, and terminating in an Obelisque, with a small Cross in *Bass Relievo*, and an Inscription almost worn out. Some say the Inscription was, *Hic jacit Cerucius; Cunovori* (and others, *Hunomori*) *filius*. *Lestwithiel* was the antient Residence of the Dukes of *Cornwall*, where now are seen the Ruins of a Castle wherein they keep their Treasure, and a good Church, whose Steeple was very much damaged by *Oliver's* Soldiers in 1644, and bears the Marks of their Outrage to this Day. The Town now is considerable for nothing but the Sessions which are held there, and Coining or Stamping of Tin. The Ruins of the Ducal Castle are on a rising Ground at a little Distance from thence. *S. Blaise* is a small Town with a handsome Church, and a Statue of that Saint, on the Presbytery Door, which has been very much disfigured; and also a Cross and Inscription that have had the same Fate, near the Alms-House. In a Field near *Boscondle* we saw a fine Cock-Pit\*. The Manner of Digging the Tin-Mines here, together with the Foundery and Instruments, are much the same with those of *Sweden* and *Hanover*, which I have mentioned in my second Volume. The *English* Writers have published several Accounts of them in their own Language, and I hope I shall be able to give one in *French* for the Satisfaction of Foreigners. *Cornwall* abounds in these Mines, which are reckoned the best in the World, and were formerly highly esteemed by the *Phenicians*, *Carthaginians*, and the *Romans*, who sent their Criminals thither to dig them. We stayed at Mr. *Truebody's* Brother's near *Boscondle* five or six Days, and went no further than *S. Austel*, where the principal Mines are in our Way thither. We saw a large Stone 13 Feet high, but had no Figure nor Inscription on it, and 'tis likely had been the Tree of a Cross. *S. Austel* tho a Village is more considerable than some Towns; the Church which is *Gothick* built, is in very good Order, and its Gates adorned with the Figures of the Divinity

\* *England* has always been very famous for Horses, Cocks, and Dogs, especially such as they use in Bull-Baiting; and this Sort of Dogs was also much in Repute in the Time of the *Romans*, as is evident from *Claudian* in the following Verse:

Magnaue Taurorum fracturi Colla *Britanni*.

Divinity and Saints; the Inscription on the Southern Gate is such as I have marked it Number 2. on the 7th Print.

Having, in Company with Mr. *Truebody*, seen *Jacobstow*, where he has a Benefice, I advanced as far as the *Irisb-Sea* to visit *Stow* and *Tintagel* near *Newton*, through which we passed. Mr. *Truebody* shewed me two Stones, called the Buck and the Ram, placed there in Remembrance of a famous Battle fought by such Animals, whercin the latter was killed. Not far from this Place we saw the Tree of a white Marble-Cross of a *Pentagon* Figure, with five Crosslets in *Relievo*. We also passed through the Parishes of *Santhiel*, *Nertbill*, *Lauranick*, and *Tresmere*, which is the next to his Benefice, where we arrived the third Day after our Setting-out. *Jacobstow* is a good Village, which has a good Church, but in danger of falling, occasioned by the Graves that are dug near its Foundation. It is surprizing that none but the *Mahometans* have retained the anient Custom of burying their Dead in Fields designed for that Purpose. The Act of Parliament for building the 50 new Churches forbids to bury any Body in them; and it were to be wished that it had taken away that Liberty from all other Churches.

Having left Mr. *Truebody* at *Jacobstow* to settle some Affairs he had there, I set out for *Stow* and *Tintagel*, and passed through *Paulstock* \*, a small Village where the famous Rhetor. *Farnabius* built a School, from whence I coasted along to *Widemouth*, a large Bay full of Rocks; thence to *Efford*, a Country-Seat belonging to the *Arundel* Family, and now a Farm; next to *Bude*, a good Village, with a Bridge over the River *Escot*, whole Bay was formerly in Esteem, and called *Beet-Haven* in the Maps; but 'tis now full of Sand. *Stow*, a large Country-Seat belonging to the *Grandville* Family †, is very much neglected at present. The Portico, which leads to the lower Apartments, is paved with Marble, and built in the Form of a Gallery with several fine Arches of carved Stone. The Rain comes through the Vault thereof, which will soon bring it to ruin if not timely prevented. The upper Apartments are very well contrived and adorned with fine Pictures, where still remains King *Charles the Second's* Bed of red Damask, embroidered and adorned with Gold Lace and Fringes. The Gardens are also very much neglected; the Park is well stocked with Deer and Wood. From *Widemouth* to *Tintagel* I could see nothing remarkable but *Boscastle*, which is a small Market-Town, with a Church well built, but in the same Condition as that of *Jacobstow*. *Tintagel-Castle*, which is commonly called King *Arthur's* Palace, and said to be the Place of his Birth, is

\* This Village together with *Bude* are marked in none of the Maps that I have hitherto seen.

† This Family is as considerable for the Honour and Fame they acquired in War, as its antient Nobility. Witnels the two Brothers, who were called *Richards*, and signalized themselves, the one in the Conquest of *Glanmorganshire* in *Wales*, under *William Rufus*; and the other against the *Spaniards*, at the *Azores*, where he died in the Bed of Honour.

is in its Ruins, except two Appartments which are in tolerable good Order. I was assured by those from whom I had the Draught, Number 7 in the 8th Print, that their Fathers had seen it, as it is there represented, and that it was situated partly on a Peninsula, and partly on the Continent, which were joined and communicated by a Draw-Bridge, which is ruined.

I shall dwell no longer on my Account of *Cornwall* or *England*, reserving that for an ample Relation of *Great-Britain* in general, as I have promised, and shall only add a few Remarks on Part of *Ireland*, whither I travelled in the Year 1729.

Having embarked at *Roterdam*, on the 6th of *August* Old Stile, for *Cork*, to visit Mr. *James Jeffreys* Governour thereof, as I had promised him, we were detained by contrary Winds at *Helvoetsluys* till the 10th, when, a small Gale favouring us, we got as far as *Dover* in four Days; and, being then taken in a Calm, were forced to anchor at *Folston*, where we waited till another Gale had risen, which blew us to the Isle of *Wight*, where we were again becalmed a whole Day and a Night; but the Wind blowing fresh we gained the *Lizard*, and sailed as wide as we could from the Rocks called the *Staggs*, where the Lord *Belhaven*, when he was going Governour to *Jamaica* in a Man of War, was cast away; we sailed by the Isles of *Silly*, where Admiral *Shovel* with three Men of War was lost, and the Rock, called the *Wolf*, and the Isle of *Bresun*, (the *Lisia* of the Antients) which are very near the *Lands-End*, and is about 50 Miles from *Tintagel*. The Westerly Wind which blew very smart, and protected us from the Danger of *Silly*, would have carried us on the Rocks called the *Bishop and his Clerks*, if it had not veered a little to the South-East. The Night being very dark, ~~we hoisted our Sails~~; the next Morning, the Weather being very clear, we saw *S. David's Cape* in *Wales*, and the *Irish Coast*. Towards the Evening we entered the Channel of *Cork*, where the River *Lea*, or the *Luvius* of the Antients, discharges itself into the *Irish Sea*. The Channel is large and serpentine. Soon after we saw the Rocks called the *Bullock and the Calf*, and several of King *John's* old Castles, though there has been none in *Cork* that can make any Defence since the late Reduction of *Ireland*. About nine of the Clock at Night we cast Anchor near *Cow*, a small Market-Town seven Miles from *Cork*. Next Morning we advanced as far as *Passage*, which is a good Village two Miles further, where Ships of large Burthen load and unload, the Water not being sufficient to carry them up higher. Having here landed, I travelled along the River-Side, where I saw several Country Seats and Gardens which rendered my Journey very pleasant on to *Cork*. M. *de la Vitte*, a *French* Refugee, has a fine Country-Seat on the North Side of the River, and several Ware-Houses. This City is the Capital of the Province of *Munster*, which was formerly a Kingdom, when *Ire-*

E e e e

land

land was divided into five, and is agreeably situated partly in a Valley and partly on Hills, and has the most Trade of any Town in the Nation. Its Commerce consists for the most part in salt Beef and Tallow, which is sent to *America*. *M. de la Vitte*, and *M. Carné*, a Refugee also, have acquired vast Riches by these two Branches of Trade. I have been assured, that upwards of fourscore thousand Oxen are killed here every Year. The Town is large and populous, has a great many very good Houses and Buildings, whereof the Custom-House, which is built after the *Italian* Manner, is the best. The North and South Gates, which have been lately rebuilt, are very magnificent; there is a fine Bridge on the *Lea* near the former. The *Exchange*, and the County-House, or Town-House, where the Assizes are kept, are small, but very well built. The Barracks are more commodious than beautiful; the Churches, except two which have been lately rebuilt, are very ordinary; those two, are *Christ-Church* near the Southern Gate, and *S. Mary Shanon*, five or six hundred Paces from the North Gate; the latter not being then finished, divine Service was performed in an old Chappel of Ease for that Parish, which is of prodigious extent; the Chappel is very large, and about fourscore Paces from the North Gate. This Church was battered by *Shanon-Castle* in the late Wars, when a Party of King *William's* Soldiers attacked the Castle from a rising Ground near the Church, and almost opposite to the Castle, which stood out for King *James the Second*. The Cathedral is a large *Gothick* Building, founded, as 'tis thought, by *S. Finbar*, one of the first Bishops of *Cork*. Since *Cromwell* melted the Bells of the Churches here, and sent them to the Foundries to be cast into Canon, there have been no Rings of them. There are three or four neat Meeting-Houses. The *French* Refugees perform divine Service in a Church, which belonged formerly, as I have been told, to a Monastery of Nuns, and is all that remains of the same. Before the Reformation, there were no less than fifteen Convents of both Sexes in *Cork*, as I am assured. The House wherein the Sugar is refined has been one, Part of whose Church and Tower are now extant; that of the *Cisterians*, called the *Red-Abbey*, was at a Place now called *Fryers-Walk*. The Situation of this Town is exceedingly pleasant, and has a most beautiful Prospect over several small Hills and pleasant Vallies, through which the River *Lea* runs, whose Banks are adorned with several good Villages and Country-Seats, whereof the Bishop of *Cork's* is the finest. Mr. *Jeffreys* being then at *Blarney*, his Country-Seat, about two Miles \* out of Town, Captain *Taylor*, his Brother-in-Law, very obligingly furnished me with Horses and a Guide to conduct me thither; I went out of Town by the North Gate, and rid through the poorest, and worse built Part of the Town; the Houses were no better than Huts, but in a little Time was

\* An *Irish* Mile is one and a Quarter *English*



was agreeably surpris'd with the Prospect already mentioned. Having arrived at *Blarney*, I was received by Mr. *Jeffreys* in as kind a Manner as I could wish, who would not suffer me to lodge out of his own House while I remained there, and offered me Horses to carry me to *Cork*, and round the Country, where my Curiosity would lead me; he is one of the best tempered Gentlemen in the World, which has gain'd him the Love and Esteem of every body, and has rendered singular Services to the *Swedes* at *Bender* and *Demotica*. *Blarney* is an old Castle, with a large strong Tower; the Apartments of the House are very neat; the Lodgings for Servants, Out-Houses, Stables, &c. are very commodious. It is situated on an Eminence, and has a River of the same Name, that runs through a Valley, on the West Side of it; the Court is pretty large, and the Garden full of good Fruit; the Neighbouring Villages, Fields and Meadows add very much to the Beauty of this Seat, and has the Privilege of a yearly Fair, which is kept every Month of *October* in the Valley, where there is a good Bridge over the River *Blarney*, with a few good Houses. The Lord of the Manor gives a Hat at that Time to be won at Cudgel-playing, and a Smock to be run for by Country-Lasses. This Castle formerly belonged to the Earl of *Clamarty*, of whom I have made mention in the beginning of the second Chapter, and was confiscated, together with the rest of his Estate, at the Revolution. The late Sir *James Jeffreys* purchased this Seat of the Crown: Whilst my Lord fought for King *James* at *Lymrick*, his Brother made a stout Defence at *Blarney*, nor did he surrender till the Enemies Cannon compelled him to it.

Having remained five Weeks at *Blarney*, where Mr. *Jeffreys* procur'd me all the Diversion the Country could afford, I set out for *Dublin*, in ~~Company with three~~ Students, who were on their Return to the University. We travelled to *Kilkenny*, where the Country is very fine, and abounds in Corn and Pasturage; yet the common People, the most Part whereof are *Roman Catholicks*, are miserably poor, almost naked, live in Huts, worse than those of the *Laplanders*, feed on Potatoes and Butter-Milk, and are as great Slaves to the *Irish* Lords and Gentry, as the *Russians* are to their Boyars. I have not seen one of them but what walked bare-footed in Winter as well as Summer, and cannot afford to eat Bread twice in a Year, as I have been assured by my Fellow-Travellers. Such of them as have a Potatoe-Garden and two Cows of their own, think themselves very happy. Notwithstanding this hard Manner of living, they enjoy good Health, are strong in Body, well-featured, and breed like Rabbits; there is nothing more common than to see five or six young Children in a Hut. The Gentlemen of the Country accuse them of being extremely slothful and lazy. Some Parts of this Country are full of Heaths, Bogs, and Marshes, as dangerous as those of *Ingria*, particularly towards the N. West,

West, as I have been assured. Though *Ireland* abounded in Woods and Forests before King *Henry the Second* had conquered it, yet there are but very few now remaining, but what have been cut down and sold, in order to reduce the Rebels and Highway-men, who constantly retreated to them. The other Places worth Notice on this Journey, are, *Rathnioc*, *Formoy*, *Clonmell*, *Kells*, *Gowran*, *Catherlagh* and *Blessing-Town*, tho' considerable for nothing, but sending two Members to the *Irish* Parliament. *Rathnioc* is about thirteen Miles from *Cork*, situated in a very fertile Plain, full of Trees and fine Country-Seats; Colonel *Barry*, who is Member of Parliament for that Borough, has an exceeding good one near it. *Formoy* is situated on the *Black-Water*, five Miles distant from the said Borough; the Water of the River so called, and which abounds in Fish, is not blacker than that of the *Black-Sea*. The Parish-Church, which formerly belonged to S. *Augustin's* Canon-Regulars, is a good *Gothick* Building. We crossed the River here on a good Bridge. *Clonmell* is situated on the *Shure*, fifteen Miles further; it has two Churches, whereof that which belonged formerly to a famous *Benedictine* Monastery, is well built. A third Church, which before the Reformation belonged to a religious House, is now of no Use. The Town-House, which was rebuilding with Marble, is small, but very neat. *Kells* is thirteen Miles further, situated on the *Neure*, and has a good Church, which formerly belonged to a religious Community, and the only Thing that deserves any Notice there, though nothing can be more pleasant, than the neighbouring Fields and Meadows, and the fine Country-Seats we met with all along from this Town to *Gowran*, which is seven or eight Miles distant from the latter. My Fellow-Travellers told me, that *Kilkenny*, *Gowran*, and all that fine Country, belonged to the Duke of *Ormond* before his Retreat, which, if managed now by Men of Integrity and Justice, would be worth sixty thousand Pounds *per Annum*. The Earl of *Arran*, his Brother, purchased this Estate from the Crown, but takes no Care of the Palaces or Country-Seats which run to Ruin. Near *Gowran*, in a fine green Field, I observed an artificial Mount, like those mentioned in my second Volume, which are as common in *Ireland*, as *Sweden* and *Denmark*; it is the common Opinion here, that they were built by the *Danes*, neither are they rare in *England*, particularly in *Cornwall*, *Devonshire*, and *Wiltshire*; this was the finest and most regular that I did see in *Ireland*. *Gowran*, by the Ruins of its Walls, Castles, Gates and Forts, seems to have been a strong and considerable Town. *Kilkenny* is still a large fine City, and Capital of that County, very regularly built; the Streets are paved with Marble, whereof several Quarries are in the Neighbourhood; all the Churches are *Gothick*; the Cathedral, which is the finest, is situated on a rising Ground, near which stands a high Tower, like to that marked Number

ber six in the ninth Print, which are very common in *Ireland*, and thought to be *Danish* Work, of which they have left none in *England*, though invaded by them. Various are the Conjectures of Men, with Relation to the Use of those Towers; some think, they were Watch-Towers, to observe the Approaches of the Enemy, and give the Alarm. Others say, that they were only Steeples, being commonly situated near old Churches; some of them are one hundred Foot high, ten or twelve Diameter, and the Wall but three Foot thick; there are no Marks of Stairs or Steps to ascend them, either Inside or Outside; which is done now by the Help of a Ladder; the Entrance is a square Window, about ten or twelve Feet from the Ground. That of *Cland-Alkin*, four Miles from *Dublin*, is very like this; it is 84 Feet high, and about 200 Paces distant from the Church. That of *Swords*, six Miles from *Dublin*, is covered, as represented Number 6, and is 72 Feet high. Near the Cathedral of *Kilkenny* stand the Remains of a Monastery which has been turned into Barracks and Stables; the Tower whereof is still entire. This City has been one of those that had the greatest Number of religious Houses; and, according to the Records, no Kingdom had more (in Proportion to its Extent) than *Ireland*. The Canon Regulars of *S. Augustin* were the most numerous, which had more Houses than all the other Orders together. The Chapters of Cathedrals and Collegiate Churches were for the most part composed of them; and they sent two Abbots and eight Priors to sit in the House of Lords every Parliament. *Cross-Market*, so called because of the Marble Cross that stands in the middle thereof, is a large Street, composed of several fine Houses, and a Town-House that surpasses them all, which, though ~~small, is very~~ neat. The Cross is elevated on a Pedestal ~~six~~ Steps high, the Top whereof is adorned with Figures in *Basso Relievo*, though its Arms have been broke off. The chief Ornament of the City is the Duke of *Ormond's* Palace, which belonged to his Ancestours, and was formerly very strong. The Duke, a little before his Retreat, had it rebuilt according to the modern Taste without any Fortifications; it is now so much neglected, that the Rain comes in almost at every Corner of it, though Slates be very plenty thereabouts. The Gardener and his Family, that inhabit it, have little or no Care of the Appartment they lodge in, no more than of the Gardens, where there is nothing worthy of Notice but a few Fruit-Trees, the rest being for the most part Waste. This Palace is very pleasantly situated on an Eminence, near which runs the River *Neure*, after having bathed the Park from North to South, and the Town on the other Side. The Waters of this rapid River are so clear, as to be reckoned one of the three Prodigies which *Kilkenny* produces, *viz.* Water without Mud,

F f f f

Air

*The Travels of A. de la MOTRAYE.*

Air without Fogs, and Fire without Smoak. The Air is undoubtedly very clear and pure, and their Coal-Fires\* free from Smoak.

*Catherlagh* is the Capital of a County 14 Miles distant from *Kilkenny*, but more neglected and less populous than the latter. The Ruins of its Walls and Castle shew that it has been a strong Place. The River *Barrow* on which it is situated, and the fertile Country full of Gardens and Trees that surrounds it, is its greatest Beauty. I have nothing advantageous to say of *Blessington*, which is situated on the *Liffy* about 18 Miles further. *Dublin* which is situated on the same River, about 13 Miles distant from the latter, is the Metropolis of the Kingdom, and one of the finest and largest Cities of *Europe*, and daily improved. The old *Gothick* Churches are not so exquisite, all the Edifices built since King *Charles the Second's* Reign are very good. The Streets are large, strait, and well paved. *Christ-Church*, which is very antient, was formerly a Cathedral, with a Chapter of *Augustin* Regular Canons, but now a Collegiate and Parish-Church. That of *S. Patrick* (n), in the Print IX, which was then but an old Parish-Church, about 1190 was rebuilt, made a Collegiate, and erected into a Metropolis in 1213. Its Chapter was secularized by King *Henry the Eighth* a little before the Reformation. The learned Dr. *Swift* is now Dean thereof, 'tis larger, but not of so good *Gothick* as the latter; one of its Chappels has been made a Parish-Church. The *French* Refugees, who have conformed to the Church of *England*, perform Divine Service in another of its Chappels (c), wherein Archbishop *Michael Trigury's* Tomb-Stone was found; he was carved thereon in Pontificatibus giving the Benediction, and attended by an Angel, all in curious Relievo and well preserved except his Nose. He was a Native of *Cornwall* and succeeded *Richard Talbot* who died in 1449, whose Tomb is in the Choir, whereon he is represented as the former, but in Brass Figures, and not so well kept as the other. Their Epitaphs which are in bad *Latin*, are legible. The Monuments, of the Earls of *Cork*, of the *Burlington* Family, and of *Rancelad*, which are of more modern Date, and in the Choir also, are very sumptuous; the Figures are of Marble, and as large as the Life. That of the late Archbishop, who died 1713, is of fine Marble (under a Canopy supported by eight Pillars) in the Isle of the Church, with a Patriarchal Mitre on a Cushion. The Churches lately well rebuilt and repaired, are *S. Ann's*, *S. Warbur's*, *S. Miaken's*, and *S. Mary's*. The *Presbyterians* have here the finest Meeting-House that I have seen. The Castle (B), and Trinity Colledge (G), the Library, and the Theatre for Anatomy

\* In most of the Sea-Ports of *Ireland* they burn Coals, which they have from *Wales* and *Scotland*, and Turf in the other Parts. By cutting the Forests all the Elks were extirpated; I call them Elks from the Form of their Horns, marked 7 in Print IX, which are found in the Bogs, where the Turf is cut; and sometimes the whole Carcass. I saw the Horns Number 7, which were 11 Feet long; and have been assured, that another Pair were found in the County of *Down* 15 or 16 Feet long.

Anatomy are magnificent Structures, as in the Royal-Hospital for *Invalids* at *Kilmainham* (t), which was formerly the Residence of the *Knights Templars*, who were very powerful in this Kingdom, and took their Seats with the Lords in Parliament. The new Parliament-House will be a stately Edifice when finished. The Barracks (l) can lodge five or six Regiments, and are the finest and largest in the World. The Linnen-Hall and Corn-Market well deserve to be mentioned among the good Buildings of this City. The Earl of *Kildare's* House, the Lord Mayor's (E), Dr. *Swift's*, S. *Patrick's* Library (s), S. *Stephen's* Hospital (p), Counsellour *Swift's*, Dr. *Molyneux's* (a), Mr. *Connolly's*, late Speaker to the House of Commons, and the Preme's, are stately Buildings. The old Quais begin at *Bloody-Bridge* (5), and run to *Ar-rans-Bridge* (4), *Old Bridge* (3), *Ormond's Bridge* (2), and *Essex* \* *Bridge* (1), and take their different Names from them. Near this last Bridge are the City-Quai and *Alton's* Quai; this latter runs to (D) *Rogerson's* Quai, which continues to *Ringend*, a fine Village situated in the Bay of that Name, and about two Miles from *Essex-Bridge*. Where the two latter Quais stand was, not many Years ago, a Marsh, as well as that where the North Quai stands; but, being drained, and the Water conveyed into the Canal (F), they have been since adorned with several fine Houses, and other Embellishments. The Space (a) has been drained, as has that between A and C, where *Strand-Street* has been already built (B). The River has been made navigable to the Custom-House, which is near *Essex-Bridge*, where Vessels of 200 Tons may anchor, which before were obliged to stay at *Ringend*. This City is so considerably increased, that the Hospital of the Invalids (t), which not long since was a Quarter of a Mile distant from it, is now contiguous to it. This Hospital is built on a rising Ground, and overlooks great Part of the Town, together with S. *Stephen's* Hospital on its N. E. and the Infirmary (s) to the West, the Barracks and the Park; to the N. E. *Oxmantown-Green*, and its curious Buildings, with the *Blue-Boys-Hospital*, which was formerly a *Benedictine Abbey*. The Poor-House (r) is S. E. and pretty near the Hospital; it is a good large Building. The City-Bason (q) is close to the Poor-House, and supplies great Part of the City with Water. The Improvements on the S. E. Side are very good also; *Stephen's Green* is one of the finest Squares that I have seen, and the Buildings about it are magnificent. Several Houses have been lately built in the Archbishop's Liberty (m). The Country-Seats near *Dublin*, as that of my Lord *Roscommon* to the N. E. of *Ringend-Bay*, which formerly belonged to the *Knights Templars*, and that of the Lord *Heath*, situated beyond *Clontarf*, are very

\* An Equestrian Statue was erected for K. *George the First* on the West Side of this Bridge in 1720; another was erected in 1701 for K. *William the Third*, in the Square near the new Parliament-House,

ry fine, as is the Lord *Allen's* at *Stillergon*, whose Park is remarkable for the new Obelisk (8) 107 Feet high, erected on a vaulted Grotto, which can contain 20 Persons. There are four double Pair of Stairs from 11 to 13 Steps to ascend the Obelisk, and so large, that four may mount at a Time; the Park abounds in Game and Deer, as does the Lord *Merian's* at a small Distance from it. On the S. W. of the City I saw the Country-Seat called *Phenix*, and another on the N. E. at *Island-Bridge*, where there is a good Stone-Bridge. On the N. W. towards *Castletown*, distant nine Miles from *Dublin*, I saw the Royal House at *Chappel-Bridge*, so called, because of the good Stone-Bridge there. The late Colonel *Luttrell's* Country-Seat is at some Distance from the River, with a good Park and fine Gardens. *Palm-Town* is a Country-Seat near the River; Mr. *White's* and my Lord *Moncasbel's*, well deserve to be mentioned, as does Mr. *Connolly's* at *Castle-Town*, who spared nothing to render them both magnificent and agreeable; he laid 15000 Pounds upon it; but Death summoned him in *October*, 1729, and prevented his seeing it finished.

On the ninth of *November* I embarked at *Rogerson's* Quai for *Bristol*, and came to anchor at *Ringsend*, from whence we sailed on the 10<sup>th</sup> with a favourable Wind, which did not last any Time; a Storm ensued, and on the 11<sup>th</sup> we were forced to return into the Bay. On the 14<sup>th</sup> we sailed again with a N. W. Gale, which on the 15<sup>th</sup> became full North, and carried us beyond *S. David's* Cape, where we traversed till the 18<sup>th</sup>, when blowing N. N. E. we reached *Minhead* in *Somersetshire*, the Port whereof and *Male* are very good; the Church is antient, and the Steeple adorned with Figures of the *Trinity* in large *Relievo*. On the 22<sup>d</sup> we arrived at *Bristol*, which is situated on the *Avon*, very populous and of great Trade; it has 17 Parishes, and two Stone-Bridges, with Houses built on them, like that of *London*. *S. Mary-Ratcliff* exceeds the Cathedral in Largeness and Beauty; there is a fine Cross in its Church-Yard, adorned with Columns, and another in *Temple-Street*. There are two more in the City, adorned with fine Statues of Marble; the highest is in the Market, and more curiously wrought than the other, which is in *Peter-Street*. I took Coach here for the *Bath*, and found it very much embellished on my Arrival, as well as *Bristol*, since I had first seen them, and the Streets very well paved. Here is a Cathedral, a Parish-Church, and a magnificent Chappel lately built. The Hot-Baths, or *Aquæ solis* of the *Romans*, are as much frequented as they are famous. Having staid here two Days, I took Coach for *London*, which is upwards of 90 Miles distant from *Bath*; and there put an End to the Account of my Travels for the present, and this Volume.

Clariss. D. Elizabethæ Eliot de Port Eliot.



*Hanc tabulam humillime inscribit  
A. De la Motte*

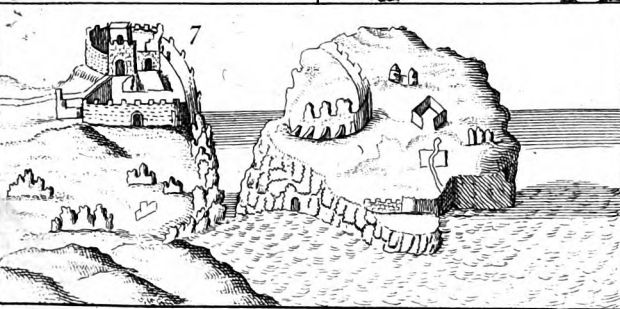
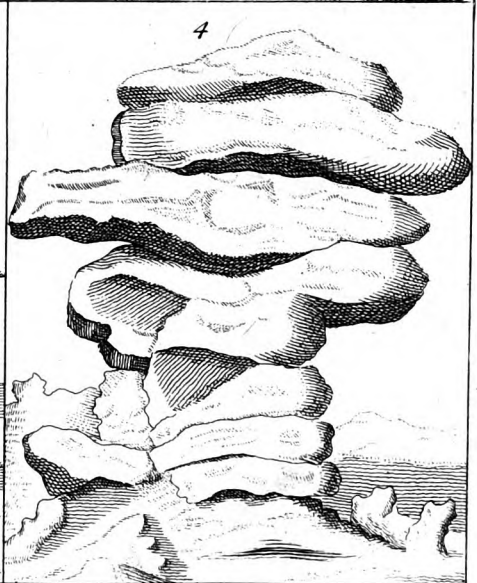
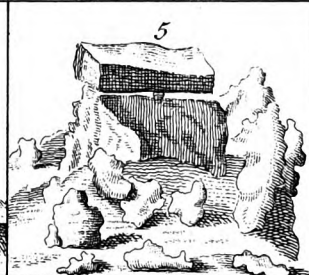
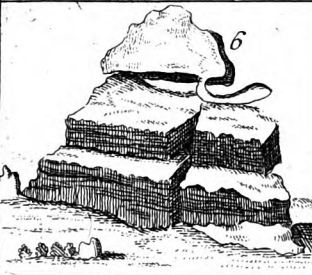
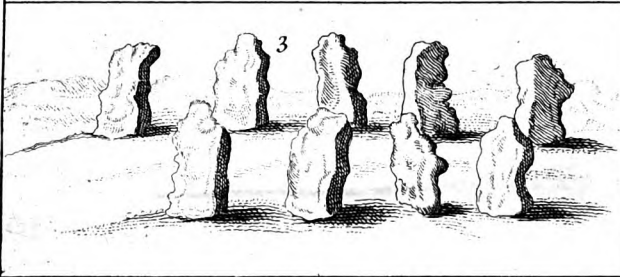


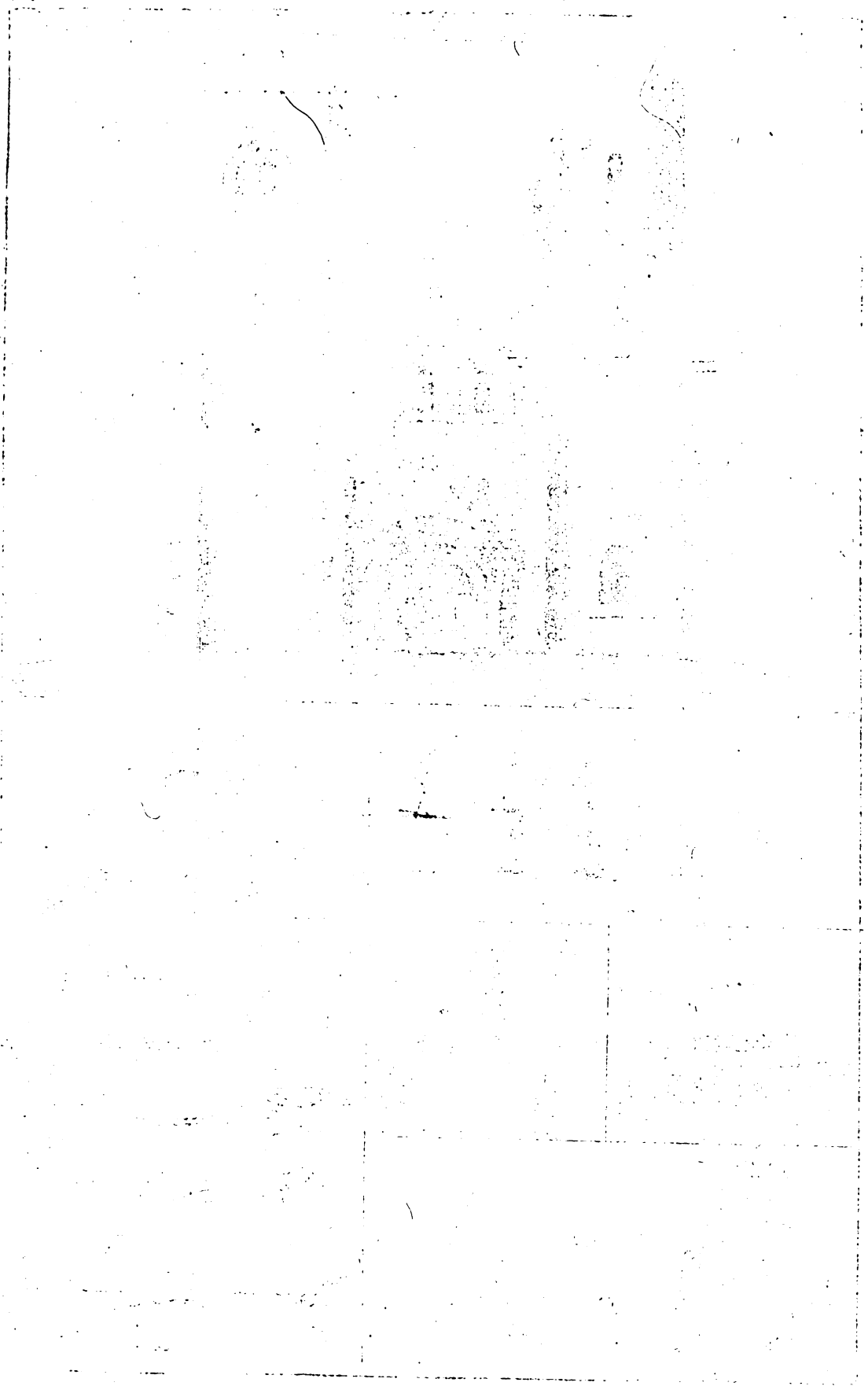
ΑΝΤΙΕΡΤ:  
ΠΟΖΑΥΙΤ:  
ΡΜΟ ΑΠΙΜΑ  
ΒΥΔ 11 11 13 11..

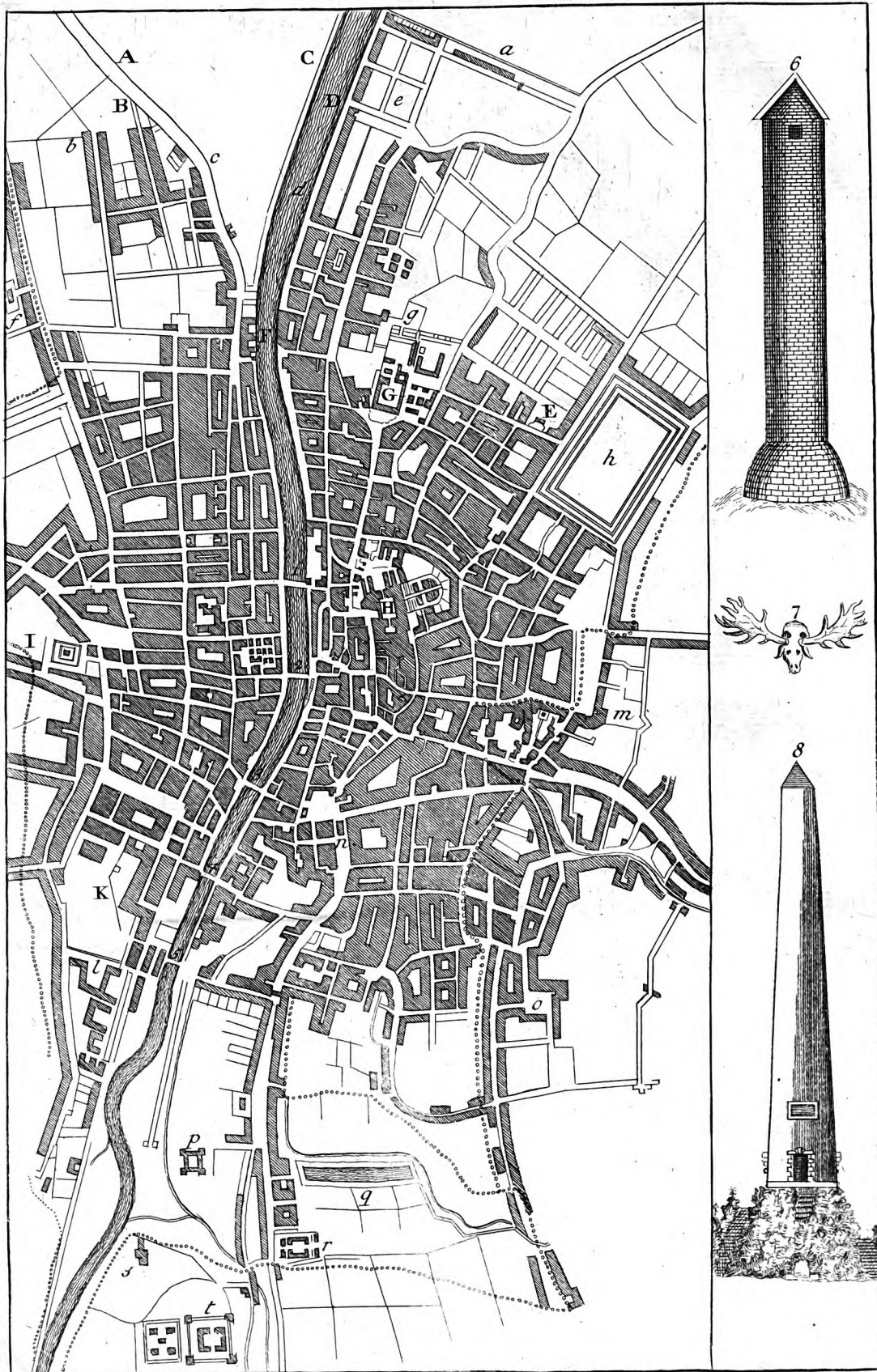
Rame H.





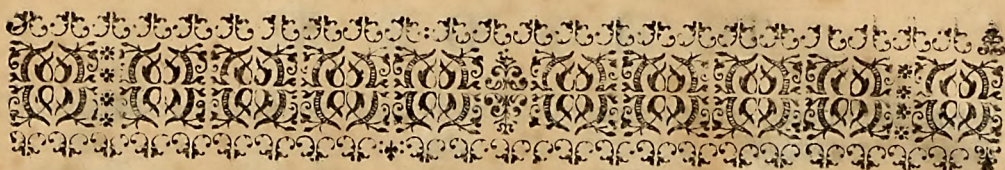












## THE

## INDEX.

## A.

- A**BBEVILLE describ'd, Page 286.  
Academy of *Wasilostroff*, 175.  
*Acres*, the Siege of, 25.  
Admiralty-Island, 163.  
Admiralty at *Petersbourg*, 164.  
*Alexander III.* Penance on, *Henry II.* 14. Articles of his Absolution, 19.  
*Alexander VII.* Pope, 39.  
*Alice of France*, demanded for *Richard*, Prince of *Wales*, 20.  
King *Henry* falls in love with her, *ibid.*  
*Allaincourt* describ'd, 269.  
*Alresford* in *Hampshire*, 281.  
*Alt Ranstadt*, the Treaty of, 107.  
*Almeri de Padua*, Governour of *Calais*, corrupted by *Montmorency*, 32, &c.  
*Amber*, what it is, abounds in *Prussia*, 89. Curiously wrought at *Popenfee*, 90.  
*Ambrosius*, Monarch of all *Great Britain*, 10.  
*Anathemas* against marry'd Priests, 262.  
*Great Andeli* describ'd, 264.  
*Andronicus Paleologus*, Greek Emperour, 25.  
St. *Andrew*, the Order of, instituted by *Acajus*, King of *Scotland*, 40.  
St. *Andrew*, the Order of, in *Russia*, 47.  
*Antioch*, the History of, 25.  
*Apraxin*, Count, Admiral of *Russia*, 118.  
*Aras* describ'd, 272.  
*Arezo*, a Knight, install'd there, 6, 7.  
King *Arthur*, founder of the *Round-Table*, his Character, 9, & seq. Goes to *Jerusalem*, 10.  
*Ascalon*, taken, 29.  
*Athelstans*, 2 of that Name, not defeated, 40.  
*Athens*, Duke of, kill'd, 35.  
*Augustus I.* succeeds *Sobieski* in *Poland*, 214.  
*Augustus II.* succeeds him, *ibid.* Institutes the Order of the *White-Eagle*, 50.  
*Avanches*, *Henry II.* absolv'd there, 15, 17.  
*Austria*, Duke of, 29.

## B.

- B**Aden-Hill, near *Bath*, p. 10.  
*Baldwin* beaten, 25.  
*Balisko* describ'd, 217.  
*Baltimore*, Lord, his Seat and Character, 280.  
Bannerets instituted, 13.  
*Banstead-Downs*, 280.  
*Basil*, St. Island describ'd, 172.  
Baronnets instituted, 41.  
*Basilowitz*, *John*, Czar, takes *Novogrod*; his Cruelty to the Archbishop, 135.  
*Bath*, the City of, improv'd, 296.  
Order of *Bath*, 1, 2, 3.  
*Baths* at *Petersburgh* describ'd, 153.  
Batchelors Knights instituted, 10.  
*Baudwin I.* King of *Jerusalem*, 13.  
*Baur*, Lieutenant General, takes *Mariembourg*; takes the Czarina



# The I N D E X.

- rina* Prisoner, resigns her to Prince *Menzikoff*, 129.  
 Bears that have brought up Infants, 203.  
*Beauvais* describ'd, 268.  
*Belsazar*, supposed the Founder of Knighthood, 2.  
*Berengualle*, Princess of *Navar*, goes to the Holy War with King *Richard*, 27.  
*Berico*, K. of *Sweden*, subdues *Livonia*, 96.  
*Berlin* describ'd, 223.  
*Berri*, put under Contribution by the Prince of *Wales*, 34.  
*Berwick*, yielded to *Henry II.* 18. Surpris'd again by the *Scots*, 34.  
*Bestahole* describ'd, 197.  
*Blackheath* describ'd, 228.  
 Black Prince's Victory, 31.  
*Blarney-Castle* and River describ'd, 291.  
*Bouillon Godfroy*, 13.  
*Boulogne* describ'd, 266.  
*Bourbon*, Duke of, kill'd, 35.  
*Breslaw* describ'd, 221.  
*Bristol* describ'd, 296.  
*Britany*, Duke of, refuses the Col-  
 lar of St. *Michael*, 51.  
*Brownsberg* describ'd, 87.  
*Brudges* describ'd, 273.  
*Brussels* describ'd, 274.  
*Burgundy*, Duke of, his Cabals, 29.  
*Butzembourg* describ'd, 57.
- C.
- C** *Adbury*, a Battle fought there, p. 10.  
*Cæsarea* taken, 29.  
*Calais*, vid. *Kalais*.  
*Camaldolines*'s noble Monastery describ'd, 200, &c.  
*Cambray* describ'd, 272.  
*Cantacusen*, *John*, created some Knights of St. *George* in *Candia*, 38.  
*Canterbury*, an Order of Knights instituted there, 13. King of *France* has an Interview with the King of *England* there. 19.  
 Cascade of the River *Narva*, 183.  
*Catherlagh*, in *Ireland*, describ'd, 294.  
*Cazimir* elected King of *Poland*, 212. Abdicates, and retires into *France*, *ibid*.  
*Chardford* Battle in *Hampshire*, 10.  
*Charles VI.* King of *France*, creates two Knights of the *Bath* at St. *Denis*, 8.  
*Charles VII.* of *France*; the Order of the Star despis'd in his Reign, 51.  
*Charles XII.* King of *Sweden*, his Victories against *Poland*, 50.  
*Charleton* describ'd, 228.  
*Charney's* Treachery at *Calais*, 33.  
*Chartres* describ'd, 252.  
*Chatham* describ'd, 230.  
*Chevreau's* Judgment of *Constantine the Great*, 3.  
*Chesterfield*, the Earl of, Knight of the Garter, 37.  
 St. *Clair's* Miracles, and Town of, 253.  
*Clancarty's* Island, 55.  
*Cleves*, the Dutchy of, 2.  
*Comene*, *Isaac Angel*, his Treachery, 3, 27. Put in Silver Fetters, and sent to *Tripoli* in *Siria*, *ibid*.  
*Compiègne* describ'd, 271.  
*Constantine's* Vision and Conversion, 2, 3.  
*Cornwall* describ'd, 287.  
*Cork* describ'd, 289.  
*Coufique*, a *Muscovite* Coin, 182.  
*Courland*; the Dutchy, Dukes, Limits, &c. of it, 192, & seq. Amber and Bread of ditto, 89.  
*Crags*, Secretary, his Monument, 228.  
*Cressy*, *Crecy*, Town of, 267. Battle of ditto, 30 and 267.  
*Cronstadt* Harbour describ'd, 169.  
*Crossen* described, 222.  
*Culm* describ'd, 78.  
 Curiosities in the Imperial Library in *Russia*, 158, & seq.  
*Cyprus*, sold to the Knights-Templars, 28.

Cza-



# The I N D E X.

Czarina *Katherine*, her mean Extraction, her Education by Mr. *Gluck*, 128. Marry'd to a Sergeant, 129. An Account of him, 130, & seq. She becomes the Czar's favourite, 131. Her Marriage, and Gratitude to Mr. *Gluck*, 132. Is proclaimed Empress, 149.

## D.

**D** *Alecarlians*, their Bread made of the Bark of Pine-Trees, p. 90.  
*Dampmartin*, Count of, taken Prisoner, 35.  
*Daniel*, knighted by *Belshazar*, 2.  
*Dantzick* describ'd, 73.  
*Darmenouille*, Monsieur, his Character, 256.  
Dead Bodies how preserv'd, 186.  
*St. Denis* Abbey describ'd, 270.  
Knights of *Bath* install'd there, 8.  
*Derben*, some rich Coffins buried there, 92.  
*Diaman*, a learned *Lutheran*, his Works, 56.  
Dictionary of a silent Language, 189.  
*Dieppe* describ'd, 238.  
Diet of *Poland* elects *Henry*, 208.  
—— called to make a new Election, 209.  
—— 3 Factions in it, 210.  
—— Elects *Sigismund*; his Death, 211.  
—— *Casimir* elected, 212.  
The Palace describ'd, 215.  
*Dog*, the Order of, 2.  
*Dorchester* describ'd, 282.  
*Dorpt* describ'd, 172.  
*Douglas*, General, takes *Mittaw* by a Stratagem, 184.  
*Doulden* describ'd, 33.  
*Dreux* describ'd, 251.  
Dragon under the *George*, signifies the *Turks* and *Arians*, 39.  
*Duna-River* describ'd, 95.  
*Dunamuden Skantz*, or Fort describ'd, 102.

Taken by the *Swedes*, *ibid.*  
*Du Bourgay*, Brigadier, *British* Envoy at *Berlin*, 223.  
*Dublin* describ'd, 294, & seq.  
*Dunkirk* demolished, 273.  
*Durham*, Bishop of, made Regent by King *Richard I.* 26.

## E.

**E** Lack-Eagle, the Order of, p. 47.  
White-Eagle, ditto, 50.  
*Edenburgh* Castle yielded to *Henry II.* 18.  
*Edward III.* his Round Table at *Windsor*, 9. The Order of the Garter attributed to him, 30. His Cruelty at the taking of *Calais*, 32.  
*Elbing* describ'd, 85.  
*Eleanora* repudiated by *Lewis* King of *France*, and marry'd to *Henry II.* 16.  
*Eliot-Port* describ'd, 284.  
*Ella*, King of the *Saxons*, 10.  
*Ephraim*, Mount of, in *Kent*, 233.  
*Epsom* Town and Waters, 280.  
Equestrian Order at *Rome*, 11.  
*Estampes* describ'd, 251.  
*Estaples* decreed, 267.  
*Eu*, Count of, taken Prisoner, 35.  
*Eustace* of *S. Pierre*, offers himself to be hanged at *Calais*, and is saved by the Queen of *England*, 32.  
*Exeter* describ'd, 283.  
Extravagants, the Order of, 2.

## F.

**F** *Arkinson*, Engineer to the Czar, p. 163.  
*Ferdinand*, Duke of *Courland*, hated by his Subjects, 91. His Behaviour to *St. Maurice*, *ib.*  
Mr. *Finch*, *British* Envoy, why shun'd by all foreign Ministers, 205.  
Fire-Engine at *London* describ'd, 226.  
Fish, a strange Kind of it, 159.  
*Flanders*,



# The I N D E X.

*Flanders*, the Earls of, take the Green-Cross, 23.  
*Florence* 2 Knights install'd there, 8.  
*Le Fort*, *Russian* General, his Character 106; and noble Burial, 108.  
*Foundaries and Forges at Peterf-bourg*, 163.  
*Fontainebleau* describ'd; its Palace, Chapel, &c. 148.  
 The Ceremony of the *French* King's Marriage there, 149, & seq.  
*Frankford*, upon *Oder*, describ'd, 223.  
*Frauberg* Castle describ'd, 93.  
*Fravenberg* describ'd, 86.  
*Frederick*, King of *Prussia*, Founder of the Order of the Black-Eagle, 47.  
*Frederick II.* Emperor, creates two Knights at *Florence*, 7.  
*French* Complaisance, an Instance of it, 248.  
*Froissair's* Account of the Order of Bath, 6.  
*Frothon*, King of *Denmark*, conquers *Livonia*, 96.  
 Beaten and taken Prisoner by the King of *Sweden's* Sister, and kill'd in a second Fight, 97.

## G.

**G** *Allitzin*, Velt-Marshal, gives the finishing Stroke to *Pr. Menzikoff's* Disgrace, p. 155, & seq.  
*Phylick-Garden* at *Petersbourg*, 153.  
*Garter*, the Order of, 24, &c.  
 — the Knights of, 25.  
*Garter*, King at Arms, his Office, 37.  
*Gaunt* describ'd, 273.  
*Gelasius*, Pope, confirms the Order of Knights Templars, *ibid.*  
*Prince Geoffray's* Death at *Paris*, 21.  
 King *George I.* revives the Order of Bath, 1. Creates Sir *Robert Walpole* Knight of the Garter, 37. An Account of his Death, 277.

*S. George of Cappadocia*, his Order and Exploits, 38.  
*George*, Bishop of *Austria*, Patron of *England*, 39.  
*S. Germain en Laye* Describ'd, 244.  
 Holy Ghost, the Order of, reviv'd by *Henry III.* of *France*, 53.  
*Giustiniani*, Abbot, his Account of some Orders, 2, 13.  
*Gisors*, a Treaty sign'd there, 22. Town and Castle describ'd, 257.  
 A Conference between the Kings of *England* and *France* held there, 261. Its famous Elm, 262.  
 Globe, a large one at *Gotorp*, 174.  
 Mr. *Gluck*, a *Lutheran* Minister, educates the Czarina as his own Daughter, 129. A Pension settled upon him by her, 132.  
*Godfrey*, of *Bullen*, King of *Jerusalem*, 42.  
 Gold of *Siberia* very fine, 155.  
 Gold-Dust found about the *Caspian* Sea, 162.  
*Gowran-Mount* describ'd, 292.  
*Gravelines* describ'd, 273.  
*Greenwich* describ'd, 128.  
*Grodno*, the Diet of, 191, 205, & seq.  
*Guilbert-Crew* describ'd, 95.  
*Guy de Lusignan* taken Prisoner, 22.

## H.

**H** *Arem*, what, 17.  
*Harfleur* describ'd, 241.  
*Hastings* describ'd; Battle of ditto, 236.  
 Heathen Authors, their Character of *Constantine* the Great, 3.  
*Heligenpeli* describ'd, 87.  
*Helien*, a Village in *Prussia*, describ'd, 68.  
*Helsingland Starketer*, a Giant, his Exploits, 97.  
*Henry I.* knights *Godfrey*, 6.  
*Henry II.* his Voyage into the *Holly Land*, 13.  
 His War with King *Stephen*, 16. Knighted

# The I N D E X.

Knighthood by *David*, King of *Scotland*, *ib.* his 3 Sons plot against him, 20.  
*Henry*, one of his Sons, his Voyage to *Guienne*, to cause a Revolt, 21; dies of Grief at *Chanon*, 23.  
*Henry IV.* an Order of Knighthood ascribed to him, 3, 5, 6, 12.  
*Henry VIII.* styl'd Defender of the Faith, 40.  
*Henry de Valois*, Candidate for the Crown of *Poland*, in Favour with the Pope for the Massacre of *S. Bartholomew*, 207; elected by the Diet and proclaimed, 208; returns to *France* privately, 209.  
*Heracius*, Patr. of *Jerusalem*, his Arrival in *England*, 21.  
*Heteroclites*, the Order of, 2.  
*Hieronimus*, a cunning Greek Prelate, his Resignation of his Patriarchate of *Constantinople* to the *Russian* Clergy, 141.  
*Holstein*, the Duke of, his Marriage with Princess *Anne* of *Russia*, 49.  
*Honfleur* describ'd, 242.  
Horn-Fair, its Origine, 229.  
*Howel*, King of *Arceleute*, 10.  
*Hugues*, Duke of *Anjou*, King of *Jerusalem*, 6.  
*Hungus*, King of the *Picts*, his Vision, 40.

## I.

**J** Agonzinski, Knight of *S. Andrew* in *Russia*, p. 48.  
*James I.* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, supposed the Founder of the Order of *S. Sepulchre*, 13.  
*James I.* King of *England*, institutes the Order of Baronets, 41.  
*Janussus*-Castle describ'd, 198.  
*Jerusalem*, the Kingdom of, disputed between *Conrard* and *Lusignan*, 28.  
*Jesse*, the Tree of, at *Gisors* describ'd, 259.  
*Jesuits* Colledge at *Petersbourg*, 157.  
Infants brought up by Bears, 203.

*Ingello*, King of *Poland*, Enemy to the Teutonick Knights, 45.  
*Joan* of Ark, her Feats at the Siege of *Orleans*, 25.  
*John I.* of *France*, Founder of the Order of the Star, 51.  
King *John's* Bravery and Gallantry, 34, & seq. loses a Battle, and enters *London*, 36.  
*John*, Czar of *Muscovy*, a weak Prince, 110.  
*Joppa* taken by the *Christians*, 29.  
*Joseph* supposed to be knighted by *Pharoah*, 2.  
*S. Josse* Abbey describ'd, 267.  
*Ireland* erected into a Kingdom in favour of Prince *John*, 18.  
Prince *John* sent thither only as Governour, 21.  
*Ireland* describ'd in part, 289, & seq.  
*Ivan Wasilowitz*, his horrid Cruelties, 187, &c.  
*Ivanogrod* describ'd, and its Castle built by him, taken by the *Swedes*, 184.

## K.

**K** Abakes, or Imperial Taverns in *Russia*, p. 144, 156.  
*Kalais* or *Catais*, the Siege of, 30; surrend'rd upon hard Conditions, 31; prevented from being betray'd by *Almeri*, by King *Richard*, 33.  
*Beauchamp*, made Governour of it, *ibid.*  
*S. Katherine*, the Order of, 48.  
*Katherine*, Empress of *Russia*, Founder of the Order of *S. Alexander*, *ibid.*  
*Kennet II.* King of *Scotland*, restorer of that Monarchy, 41.  
*Kent*, part of, describ'd, 232.  
*Kettler Gottard the First*, Duke of *Courland*, embraces the Reformation, 192; his Progeny, the Limits of his Dutchy, 193.  
*Keydani*, its fine Church and Tombs describ'd, 197, &c.  
*Kilkenny* describ'd, 291, &c.  
Knighthood, the Origine of, 1, 2, 3.  
Knights

H h h h

# The I N D E X.

Knights Bannerets, 13.  
 ——— Baronets, 41.  
 ——— Batchelors, 10.  
 ——— of the Bath, 1, 2, 3.  
 ——— Black Eagle, 47.  
 ——— White Eagle, 50.  
 ——— Garter, 53.  
 ——— H. Ghost, *ibid.*  
 ——— Golden Spur, *vid.*  
     Batchelor.  
 ——— *Livonia*, 46, 98.  
 ——— *Rhodes*, 52.  
 ——— Round Table, 9.  
 ——— of S. *Alexander Newsky*,  
     48.  
 ——— *Andrew* in *Scotland*,  
     40.  
 ——— *Andrew* in *Russia*,  
     47.  
 ——— *Katherine*, 48.  
 ——— *Lazarus*, 52.  
 ——— *Lewis*, 53.  
 ——— *Michael*, 51.  
 ——— *Sepulchre*, 13.  
 ——— of the *Star*, 51.  
 ——— *Templars*, 42.  
 ——— *Teutonic*, 44.  
*Knout*, a *Russian* Punishment, 121.  
*Kokenhausen*, taken and put to the  
     Sword, 187.  
*Kolberon*, over-against *Riga*, de-  
     scrib'd, 95.  
*Koningsberg* describ'd, 68.  
*Koributh*, *Michael Wisnowieski*,  
     elected King of *Poland*, 213.  
*Kowno* describ'd, 199.

## L.

**L** *Adoga* describ'd; fortify'd by  
*Peter I.* p. 143. The Canal  
     of it describ'd, 144. The Lake  
     of it, 145.  
*Lamb*, *Scythian*, an animal Plant,  
     160.  
*S. Lazarus*, the Order of, incor-  
     porated with that of *Rhodes*, 52.  
*Languedoc*, invaded by the Prince  
     of *Wales*, 34.  
*Leopold*, Duke of *Austria* his Af-  
     front to *Richard I.* 28.  
*Leschard* describ'd, 283.  
*Lesley*, Bishop of *Ross*, his Account  
     of the Order of S. *Andrew*, 40.  
*Lestwithiel* describ'd, 287.

*Lewis II.* King of *Sicily*, knighted  
     at S. *Denis*, 8.  
*Lewis VII.* King of *France*, sup-  
     ports some Ringleaders against  
     the King of *England*, 14.  
*Lewis XI.* institutes the Order of  
     S. *Michael*, 51.  
*Lewis XIV.* Founder of the Or-  
     der of S. *Lewis*, 53.  
*Lewis* of *Anjou*, King of *Naples*,  
     Founder of the Order of the  
     Holy Ghost, 53.  
*Libaw* describ'd, 91.  
*Imperial Library* at *Petersbourg*  
     describ'd, 158, & seq.  
*Lillebonne* describ'd, 241.  
*Limosin* and *Perigord* plunder'd, 34.  
*Lipkas*, what, 199.  
*Livonia*, an Account of that Pro-  
     vince, conquer'd by the *Swedes*,  
     96; by the *Goths*, 97; Christi-  
     anity planted there by the *Ger-*  
     *mans*, 98.  
 The *Livonians* give themselves up  
     to the *Poles*, 99.  
*Livonian* Order founded by *Albert*.  
     III. Bishop of *Livonia*, 45, & seq.  
     the Knights of it call'd *Porte-*  
     *glaiue Ensisferi*, or Sword-Bear-  
     ers, *ibid.* & 98.  
*London* describ'd, 226, 278.  
 Architecture of *London* compar'd  
     with that of *Paris*, 245, & seq.  
*London-Stone*, 226.  
 Knights' Sepulchres instituted at  
     *London*, 14.  
*Longue Ville*, Earl of, made Pri-  
     soner, 35.  
*Lugha-River* describ'd, 183.  
*Lydia*, the King of, his Daughter  
     deliver'd from a Dragon, 24.

## M.

**M** Admen, the Order of, p. 2.  
*Mahomet* enjoyns bathing  
     to his Followers, 9.  
*Maidstone* describ'd, 231.  
 Manufactures of Linnen, Silk,  
     Cloth, &c. establis'd in *Russia*,  
     155.  
*March*, Earl of, his Title to the  
     Crown, 8.  
*Margaret*, Daughter of *Fr.* mar-  
     ry'd to *Hen. II.* eldest Son, 17.  
*Mariembourg* describ'd, 85. *Mar-*

# The I N D E X.

*Marli*, the Palace of, describ'd, 167.  
 Market-Place at *Petersbourg*, 156.  
*Maurice*, Count, his Election oppos'd by Prince *Menzikoff*, 191; he is excluded from it by the King of *Poland*, *ibid*.  
*Maximillian*, Emperour, his Victory over the *Turks*, institutes the Order of S. *George* in Memory of it, 39.  
*Maznadar Conrard*, install'd Knt. at *Rome*, 7.  
 Medals of Gold, &c. struck in *Russia*, 155.  
*Medway*-River and Bridge, 231.  
*Melun* describ'd, 247.  
*Menzikoff, Alexander*, Prince, his mean Extraction, 123; his Rise and shameful Steps, 112, &c. his Daughter marry'd to the Czar, 115; obtains a Declaration from his Czarish Majesty, *ibid*. his Character, 105; he is refused to see the Fortifications of *Riga*, 104; made first Knight of the Order of S. *Andrew* in *Russia*, 48.  
 S. *Michael*, the Order of, 51.  
*Mines*, the Colledge of, in *Russia*, 155.  
*Minhead*-Port, 296.  
*Mittaw* describ'd, ravag'd by the *Swedes*, 74.

## N.

**N** *Arva*, the Battle of, p. 107;  
 Town of describ'd, 185; River and Cascade, 183.  
*Nassau*, the Earl of, taken Prisoner, 35.  
*Nathalia*, Princess, treated by *Menzikoff*, 117.  
 S. *Neot*, prodigious Stones there, 283.  
*Nesse, Marechal*, kill'd, 35.  
*Newenden* describ'd, 233.  
*Newskey, S. Alexander*, his Exploits against the *Pagans*, &c. 49; the Order of, *vid*. Knights.  
*Nicephorus, Gregor*. 24.  
*Nieman*-River describ'd, 203.  
 Nobility of *Russia* oblig'd by the

Czar to build Palaces about *Petersbourg*, 156.  
*Nonfuch*-Palace describ'd, 279.  
*Notebourg* taken by the *Russians*, and call'd *Slutelbourg*, 145; — describ'd, 146.  
*Novogrod* describ'd, taken and plunder'd by *John Basflowitz*, 135.  
 S. *Antony* of, his Miracles, 139.  
*Numa Pomp.* Roman History, 25.  
 Nunnery, a *Lutheran* one at *Eydergrop*, 57.

## O.

**O**bservatory at *Wasilostroff*, 174.  
 ——— *Greenwich*, 228.  
*Olwa*, the Monastery of, describ'd, 77.  
*Ophilia* describ'd, 181.  
*Orangyboon, Menzikoff's* Pleasure-House, describ'd, 156, & seq.  
 Orders, *vid*. Knights.  
*Orleans*, Duke of, Grand Master of the Order of S. *Lazarus*, 52.  
*Ormond's* Palace at *Kilkenny*, 293.  
*Oza* describ'd, 204.

## P.

**P**agan Authors Character of *Constantine*, p. 3.  
 Palaces about *Petersbourg*, 157, 176.  
*Panciatici, John and Wanter*, install'd at *Florence*, 8.  
*Paris*, a Treaty of Peace concluded there, 16; much improv'd of late, 245; its Architecture found Fault with, and compar'd with that of *London*, 146.  
*Parnes-Village* describ'd, 254.  
*Pascentius*, a *British* Prince, 10.  
 Patriarchate introduced in *Russia*, 140.  
 S. *Paul's* Conversion, 3.  
*Paul III.* Pope, Founder of an Order of Knights, 39.  
*Peipus-Lake* describ'd, 133.  
*Penemuden*, its brave Defence against the *Prussians*, 67.  
*Pernaw* describ'd, 189.  
*Peter I.* Czar of *Moscovy*, institutes the Order of S. *Andrew*, 47; that of S. *Katherine* for the

# The I N D E X.

- the *Russian Ladies*, 48; strips and reforms the *Russian Church*, 137; presides over a Council, and abolishes superstitious Abuses, 138; some of his Conquests, 186; his Ferocity disarm'd by M. *Le Fort*, 121; polishes the *Russians*, 142; his last Sickness and death, 148, &c. seq.
- Peter II.* marries *Menzikoff's* Daughter, his Character, 116.
- S. Peter's Church at Rome*, a Knt. install'd there, 7.
- Petersbourg* describ'd, 147; in Danger of being overflow'd; 145; its Market-Place and Printing-House describ'd, 156.
- Pharoah* suppos'd the Founder of Knighthood, 2.
- Philip of France* falls out with *Henry II.* 21, &c. takes the red Cross, and *Henry the White*, 22; his Behaviour during the Holy War, 28, &c. seizes *Evreux*, from King *Richard*, 30.
- Philip the Fair* destroys the Knights-Templars, 43.
- Picard, Henry*, Lord Mayor of *London*, 36.
- Pisa*, an old M. S. about Knighthood found there, 6.
- Pissarëw, Gregor.* his Sentence, 116.
- Pleskow* and its Plain describ'd, 133; lost its Liberty under *Basilus*, 134.
- Plymouth* describ'd, 286.
- Poissy-Castle*, &c. describ'd, 244.
- Poix* describ'd, 268.
- Polangen*, the last Town of *Prussia*, 89.
- Ponder-Stone* in *Cornwall*, 284.
- Ponthieu*, Earl of, made Prisoner, 35.
- Pontoise* describ'd, 270.
- Pontefract-Prison*, 6.
- Popenfee*, its curious Artists in *Amber*, 90.
- Potelamy* describ'd, 216.
- Prag* describ'd, 219.
- Pruth*, the Peace and Treaty of, 103.
- Ptolomais*, the Siege of, 24.
- Q.
- Q* *Uilbeuf* describ'd, p. 242.
- R.
- R* *Adswillitski* describ'd, p. 196.
- Rebels* try'd in *Moscow*, 116.
- Retzka-River* and Mills along the Banks, 146.
- Revel* describ'd, 187; its Harbour, 188.
- Ribreg's River*, a Battle fought near it, 10.
- Richard I.* institutes the Order of the Garter, 24; goes to the Holy War, 26; taken Prisoner by the Emperor, 30.
- Richard II.* murther'd by *Henry IV.* 6.
- Prince *Richard's* Behaviour towards his Father, 21; his Battle with *Geofray*, *ibid.* is crown'd King of *England*, 23.
- Ridolphinus*, installs a Knight at *Rome*, 6, 7.
- Riga*, who built by, 98; given up to the King of *Poland*, 99; the Battle of, 103; besieg'd and taken by the *Swedes*, 100.
- Ribaumont's Treachery*, 33.
- S. Riquier* describ'd, 268.
- Riva* describ'd, 220.
- Roan, D. Godfrey* install'd there, 6; a Dragon led thither by *S. Romain*, 25; the City describ'd, 243.
- Robert*, the Devil's Castle, 242.
- King *Robert of France*, institutes the Order of the Star, 51.
- La Roche*, Earl of, made Prisoner, 35.
- Rocheſter* describ'd, 230.
- Rome*, an Installation there, 7.
- Rop*, a Port-Town, describ'd, 124.
- Rosamond* poisoned, 18.
- Rother-River* in *Kent*, 334.
- Round Table, the Original of, 9.
- Roxborough-Castle* yielded to *Henry II.* 18.
- Russian Treats*, and hard Drinking, 122.
- Russian Orders*, *vid.* Knights.
- Ruf*



# The I N D E X.

*Russians* polish'd by *Peter I.* 142.  
*Rye* describ'd, 234.

## S.

**S** *Aladin* beaten by *K. Richard*,  
 p. 29; makes a Truce with  
 him, 30.  
*Salbruck*, Count of, made Prisoner,  
 35.  
*Old Salisbury*, or *Sarum*, describ'd,  
 282.  
*Bishops of Salisbury*, Chancellors  
 of the Garter, 38.  
*Countess of Salisbury* drops her  
 Garter, 30.  
*Samogithia* describ'd, 194, & *seq.*  
 its Amber, 89.  
*Sapieha*, Count, some Particulars  
 of him, 173.  
*Saracens* take *Jerusalem*, 22.  
*Saxony*, Count of, his Character,  
 190.  
*Scaliger's* Judgment of *Constantine*,  
 3.  
*Scotland*, the King of, pays Ho-  
 mage to *Henry II.* 18.  
*Selden's* Account of the Order of  
 the *Bath*, 3.  
*Senlis* describ'd, 271.  
*Sens*, Archbishop of, taken Prisoner,  
 35.  
*S. Sepulchre*, Order of, *vid.* Knts.  
*Shafferoth*, Baron of, his Character,  
 ruin'd by *Menzikoff*, and  
 restor'd, 151.  
*Shoverbourg-Castle*, 92.  
*Shrevesbury*, the Battle of, 6.  
*Shumaker*, Imperial Library Keeper  
 in *Russia*, his Character, 158.  
*Sion-Nount* in *Kent*, 233.  
*Sobieski, John*, elected King of *Po-*  
*land* his Character, 213.  
*Sodomy*, a *Dutch* Minister sus-  
 pended for it, 276.  
*Southwark* describ'd, 227.  
 Golden Spur, Knights of, *vid.* Bat-  
 chelor.  
*Stade*, a Duty paid there by Ships,  
 56.  
*Stanhope*, Earl of, Knight of the  
 Garter, 37.  
 Star, Order of, *vid.* Knights.  
 King *Stephen* adopts *Henry II.* 16.

*Sterling-Castle* yielded to him, 18.  
*Stetin* describ'd, 59.  
*Stonebeck's* Account of the Order  
 of *S. Sepulchre*, 12.  
*Stow*, the Seat of, describ'd, 288.  
*Strelitz*, the Czar's Life-guard,  
 111; disciplin'd by General *Le*  
*Fort*, 112.  
*Strella-muse*, a Palace began by  
*Peter I.* 166.  
*Surry* describ'd in part, 281.  
*Sweden*, the late King of, his Cha-  
 racter, 102; his Battles of *Riga*  
 and *Bender*, 103.  
*Sigismund*, Emperor, institutes the  
 Dragon under the *George*, 39.

## T.

**T** *Ankred's* Treaty with *Ri-*  
*chard I.* p. 26.  
*Taverns*, Imperial, in *Russia*, 141.  
*Templar-Knights* had their Dwel-  
 ling near the Temple of *Jeru-*  
*salem*, 41; Rule of *S. Augustine*  
 given to them by the Pope, 42;  
 their Riches and total Destruc-  
 tion, 43.  
*Teutonic Order*, *vid.* Knights.  
*Theodore Ivanowitz*, his Extortions  
 and Covetousness, 141.  
*Theoma-River* and its Mills, 196.  
*Thistle*, the Order and Motto of,  
 41.  
*Thomas Becket's* Tomb visited by  
*Henry II.* 14; his Dispute with  
 that Prince, 17, &c.  
*Thorn* describ'd, 79; the late Tu-  
 mult there, 80, & *seq.* some fur-  
 ther Particulars about it, 205.  
*Tintagel-Castle* describ'd, 288.  
*Tolstoy*, Count, made High Chan-  
 cellour, 152.  
*Torquati Rom.* Knights, why so  
 call'd, 11.  
*Danish-Towers* in *Ireland*, 293.  
*Trinity-Island*, call'd *Petersbourg*,  
 describ'd, 149; great Rejoycings  
 made there by *Peter I.* 150.  
*Trithevie*, the large Stones of, 283.  
*Turks* signify'd by the Dragon un-  
 der the *George*, 39; their Ad-  
 ministration of Justice imitated  
 in *Muscovy*, 148.

I i i i

Tun-



# The I N D E X.

*Tunbridge* and its Wells describ'd, 232. *Venden* butcher'd by Czar Ivan, 188.

## U.

**V** *Alenciennes* describ'd, p. 272. *Valois, Philip de*, beaten, 30. *Vaudancourt* describ'd, 254; its Bridge, 255. *S. Vaudrille* Abbey describ'd, 242. Vegetables describ'd by *Merian*, 159. *Vendosme*, Earl of, made Prisoner, 35. *Venice*, the Rep. of, presents *Henry III.* of *France* with the Charter of the Holy Ghost, 53. *Vernon* describ'd, 244. *Viane* and its old Palace describ'd, 275; the *Dutch* Minister suspended there for Sodomy, 276. *Vilna*, the Palatine of, *Chr. Radziwill* embraces the Popish Religion, 197. *Uladislaus* elected King of *Poland*, 211; his Death, *ibid.* *Usden*, the Island of, 65.

## W.

**W** *Ales*, the Prince of, invested with *Guienne* by King *Richard*, p. 34. *Walpole*, Sir *Robert*, Knight of the Garter, 37. *Walport*, *Henry*, first Grand Master of the Teutonick Order, 45. *Warsaw* describ'd, 219. *Wasilostroff*, *al.* Island of *S. Basil*, describ'd, 172. *Water-Works* of *London*, 226; at *Sisterbeck* for Copper, Iron, &c. 171. *Wengratz* describ'd, 219. *Wesenberg* describ'd, 186. *William the Good*, his Legacy to King *Henry*, 26. Prince *William*, Knight of the Garter, 37. *Windana-River* and its Stone-Bridge, 93. *Winchelsea* and its Canal describ'd, 235. *Winchester* describ'd, 281; Bishop of, Prelate of the Garter, 38. *Windsor*, *Edward III.*'s Round Table set up there, 3, 9; Chappel dedicated, 31; Tournaments celebrated there, 36; Dean of, Register of the Garter, 38. *Witstock* describ'd, 58. *Woladimer*, Pr. propagates Christianity in *Muscovy*, 127. *Wolgast* describ'd, 66. *Wolmar* describ'd, 125; the Drefs of the Women, *ibid.* the Battle fought near it, 126. *Wolkga* River describ'd, 142. *Woolsey*, Cardinal, his Compassion for the Knights Templar in *England*, 44. *Worthsy*, the Lake of, describ'd, 127. *Woolwich*, its Dock, Foundry, &c. describ'd, 230. *Wratz*, King *George I.* taken ill there, 275. *Wrest*, a third Part of a Mile, 182.

## Y.

**Y** *Ankey*, a great Village, describ'd, p. 181.

# F I N I S.



## BOOKS printed for, and sold by

*E. SIMON, over-against the Royal-Exchange in Cornhill.*

**A** Voyage to Arabia Fœlix, through the Eastern Ocean, and the Streights of the Red-Sea, being the first made by the French in the Years 1708, 1709, and 1710. Together with a particular Account of a Journey from Mocha to Muab, or Mowahib, the Court of the King of Yaman, in their second Expedition, in the Years 1711, 1712, and 1713. Also a Narrative concerning the Tree and Fruit of Coffee, collected from the Observations of those who made the last Voyage; and an historical Treatise of the Original and Progress of Coffee, both in Asia and Europe; with curious Draughts, of several Parts of the Coffee-Tree, on Copper-Plates; 1. Of the Tree in full Proportion; 2. Of its Branch with its Flowers and Fruit; 3. Of its Leaves; all drawn in Arabia according to Nature. Translated from the French. To which is added, an Account of the Captivity of Sir *Henry Middleton* at Mokha, by the Turks, in the Year 1612; and his Journey from thence to Zenah, or Sanaa, the Capital of the Kingdom of Yaman, with some Additions, particularly relating to that Country and the Red-Sea.

*J. NEWTON, at the Rose-Tree, in Little Britain.*

**T**HE Laws and Customs of the Stannaries in the Counties of Cornwall and Devon 2 Parts. Folio.

*Medicina Statica*: Being the Aphorisms of Sanctorius, translated by Dr. Quincy.

Dr. Carr's Medicinal Epistles, being a Supplement to Sanctorius's Aphorisms, translated by the same Author.

Bishop Leighton's Exposition of the Creed, Lord's Prayer, and ten Commandments.

*Cymbalum Mundi*: Or satyrical Dialogues, on various Subjects.

*Marchetti Observat. Medicæ-Chirurgicæ.*

Moequet's Travels and Voyages into Africa, Asia, and America.

Ciceronis Lib. Tres de Officiis, Notis ad Modum Minellii.

Travels thro' Germany, Bohemia, Swisserland, Holland, and other Parts of Europe, by Charles Patin, M. D.

*J. OSWALD, at the Rose and Crown in the Poultry, near Stocks-Market.*

**V**ITRUVIUS Britannicus; or, The British Architect, containing the Plans, Elevations, and Sections of the regular Buildings, both publick and private, in Great Britain; with Variety of new Designs, in 300 large Folio Plates, engraven by the best Hands, and drawn either from the Buildings themselves, or the original Designs of the Architects. In 3 Volumes. By Colins Campbell, Esq;

An Abridgment of Dr. Cudworth's true intellectual System of the Universe. In which all the Arguments for and against Atheism are clearly stated and examined. To which is prefix'd, An Examination of what that learned Person advanc'd touching the Doctrine of a Trinity in Unity, and the Resurrection of the Body. In two Volumes.

The Works of Mons. *Boileau*, made English from the last *Paris* Edition, by several Hands. To which is prefixed his Life, written to *Joseph Addison*, Esq; by Mr. *Des Maiseaux*; and some Account of this Translation, by *Nath. Rowe*, Esq; in two Vol. with Cuts.



BOOKS printed for, and sold by

*L. GILLIVER, at Homer's-Head, over-against S. Dunstan's Church, Fleet-street.*

**T**HE History of the Council of Constance. Written in French by James Lenfant. Done into English from the last Edition, printed at Amsterdam, 1727. Adorned with twenty Copper-Plates, curiously engraven by the best Hands. 2 Vols. 4to.

A Translation of Arrian's History of Alexander's Expedition, with Copper Plates, 2 Vols. 8vo.

Vidæ Opera Omnia Poetica ex recensione R. Ruffel, A. M. 2 Tomæ, 12mo.

Thomæ Benneti, S. T. P. Grammatica Hebræa cum Uberrima Praxi in usum Tironum, qui Linguam Hebræam absque Preceptoris viva voce (idque in brevissimo temporis compendio) ediscere cupiunt. Accedit Consilium de studio præcipuarum Linguarum Orientalium, Hebrææ, scil. Chaldææ, Syræ, Samaritanæ, & Arabicæ, instituendo & perficiendo. Editio Tertia.

*Imported and sold by J. NOURSE, at the Lamb without Temple-Bar.*

**B**OERHAVEN Elementa Chemiæ quæ Anniversario Labore docuit in Publicis, Privatisque, Scholis, cum Tabulis Æneis, 4to. 2 Vols. Lug. Bat. 1732.

Clericus in Pentateuchum, fol.

—— in Libros Historicos Veteris Test. fol.

—— in Libros Hagiographos Veteris Test. ac Prophetas, fol. } 4 Vols.

Thucydides de Bello Peloponesiaco Græc. & Lat. cum Notis integris H. Stephani & Hudsoni, ex Recensione Wasse & Animad. Versionibus Dukeri cum Variis MSS. Collationibus & Indicibus novis locupletissimis, fol. 1731.

*N. B.* At the same Shop may be had great Variety of Books in the several Languages; those Gentlemen that take a Number of French Books, or Latin Classics, 24<sup>o</sup>. for the Use of Schools, will have a reasonable Abatement.

*T. PATNE, at the Crown in Pater-Noster-Row.*

**T**HE Art of knowing Women; or the female Sex dissected, in a faithful Representation of their Virtues and Vices, under 20 different Heads. Second Edition, Price bound 2 s. 6 d.

The Cases of Polygamy, Concubinage, Adultery, Divorce, &c. seriously and learnedly discussed, by the most eminent Hands. Price bound 2 s. 6 d.

The Brothers or Treachery punished, in several Novels. Price bound 2 s.

An Universal History, or the present State of all Nations, No. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6. To be continued, Price 3 s. 6 d. each Number.

*Historia Literaria*; or an exact and early Account of the most valuable Books published in the several Parts of *Europe*, with the State of Learning in each Kingdom. No. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17. To be continued. Price 1 s. each Number.

The ten thousand Torments of a Ternagant, translated from *Libanius*. Price 6 d.

The blazing Comet, or mad Lovers, a Comedy, Pr. 1 s.

The Gentleman's Pocket Companion, or Horseman's Tutor. Pr. 6 d.









הספריה הלאומית  
S 2= 76 C 5831  
La Mottraye, Aubry de,  
The voyages and travels of A. De La



2935077-10





